2396. I. G. 6.

A CHART OF THE SOUTHERN HEMISPHE

according to the lateſt Diſcoveries: with the Tracks of the Reſolution, Cap.n Cook; and the Adventure, Cap.n Furneaux; from

BY *GEORGE* *FORSTER*, F.R.S.

among the

Explanation of References,

1. *Whitsunday Island*
2. *Queen Charlotte's Island*
3. *Egmont Island*
4. *Gloucester Island*
5. *Cumberland Island*
6. *Pr. Will.m Henry's Island*

} Seen by Captain Wallis.

C. *Carlshof I.d* ..... ſeen by Roggewein.

W. *Waterland* ..... ſeen by Le Maire.

Poſitions aſsumed,

AMERICA, *from D'Anville, compared with Spaniſh Charts & the Reſolution's diſcoveries.*

AFRICA, *from M.r Dalrymple's Chart of the Southern Ocean, & the New Edition of M. D'Après Neptune Oriental.*

NEW HOLLAND, *according to the latest Charts, & the Endeavour's Diſcoveries.*

Eaſtern Iſles of ASIA, *from M.r Dalrymple's Chart of the China Sea, & the Neptune Oriental.*

Engraved by William Whitchurch.

Published according to Act of Parliament, March 10th 1777.

HEMISPHERE,

Adventure, Capn. Furneaux; from 1772, to 1775.

ORSTER, F.R.S.

among the Low Islands.

R. *Resolution's Island.*

D. *Doubtful Island.*

F. *Furneaux's Island.*

A. *Adventure's Island.*

P. *Palliser's Is.ds or Roggewein's Pernicious Is.ds*

G. *Byron's King George's Islands.*

Thefe were feen in the Refolution.

in this Chart.

Ladrones, Caroline Iſles, & Peſcadores, *according to Capn. Wallis's Observations at Tinian, &c.*

NEW GUINEA & New Britain, *from Dampier, Carteret, & D'Anville, compared with Des-Broſſes, & Dalrymple.*

ISLANDS in the Pacifick Ocean, *from the latest Discoveries in the Resolution (1773 & 1774) carefully collated with all former Navigators.*

A

VOYAGE

ROUND THE

WORLD,

IN

His BRITANNIC MAJESTY'S Sloop, RESOLUTION,

commanded by Capt. JAMES COOK, during the Years 1772, 3, 4, and 5.

By GEORGE FORSTER, F.R.S.

Member of the Royal Academy of MADRID, and of the Society for promoting Natural Knowledge at BERLIN.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

K K LYCEAL BIBLIOTHEK ZU LAIBACH

On ne repouſſe point la verité ſans bruit,
Et de quelque façon qu'on l'arrête au paſſage.
On verra tôt-ou-tard que c'etoit un outrage,
Dont il falloit qu'au moins la *honte* fut le fruit. DE MISSY.

LONDON,

Printed for B. WHITE, Fleet-Street; J. ROBSON, Bond Street; P. ELMSLY, Strand; and G. ROBINSON, Pater-noſter Row.

MDCCLXXVII.

PREFACE.

HISTORY does not offer an example of ſuch diſintereſted efforts, towards the enlargement of human knowledge, as have been made by the Britiſh nation, ſince the acceſſion of his preſent Majeſty to the Throne. America, with all its riches, might long have remained undiſcovered, if the unequalled perſeverance and the glorious enthuſiaſm of Columbus had not providentially ſurmounted every difficulty, and, in ſpite of ignorance and envy, forced their way to Ferdinand and Iſabella. That immortal navigator was protected at laſt, only becauſe he opened a new and evident ſource of gain. But a friendſhip between Plutus and the Muſes was too ſingular to be ſincere; it only laſted whilſt they, with no better ſucceſs than the Danaids, poured heaps of gold into his treaſury.

The triumph of ſcience was reſerved to later periods of time. Three voyages of diſcovery, from the moſt liberal motives, had already been performed, when a fourth was undertaken by order of an enlightened monarch, upon a more enlarged and majeſtic plan than ever was put in

execution before. The greateſt navigator of his time, two able aſtronomers, a man of ſcience to ſtudy nature in all her receſſes, and a painter to copy ſome of her moſt curious productions, were ſelected at the expence of the nation. After completing their voyage, they have prepared to give an account of their reſpective diſcoveries, which cannot fail of crowning, their employers at leaſt, with immortal honour.

The Britiſh legiſlature did not ſend out and liberally ſupport my father as a naturaliſt, who was merely to bring home a collection of butterflies and dried plants. That ſuperior wiſdom which guides the counſels of this nation, induced many perſons of conſiderable diſtinction to act on this occaſion with unexampled greatneſs. So far from preſcribing rules for his conduct, they conceived that the man whom they had choſen, prompted by his natural love of ſcience, would endeavour to derive the greateſt poſſible advantages to learning from his voyage. He was only therefore directed to exerciſe all his talents, and to extend his obſervations to every remarkable object. From him they expected a philoſophical hiſtory of the voyage, free from prejudice and vulgar error, where human nature ſhould be repreſented without any adherence to fallacious ſyſtems, and upon the principles of general philanthropy; in ſhort, an account written upon a plan which the learned world had not hitherto ſeen executed.

My

My father performed the voyage, and collected his obſervations agreeably to the ideas which had thus been entertained of him. Fully reſolved to complete the purpoſe of his miſſion, and to communicate his diſcoveries to the public, and not allowing himſelf any time to reſt from the fatigues which he had undergone, he inſcribed and preſented the firſt ſpecimen of his labours to his majeſty within four months after his return *. The hiſtory of the voyage, the principal performance which was demanded at his hands, next engroſſed his whole attention. It was at firſt propoſed, that from his own and captain Cook's journals a ſingle narrative ſhould be compoſed, in which the important obſervations of each ſhould be inſerted, and referred to their proper authors by different marks. My father received a part of captain Cook's journal, and drew up ſeveral ſheets as a ſpecimen; however, as it was ſoon after thought more expedient to ſeparate the two journals, this plan was not proſecuted. The Right Hon. the Lords Commiſſioners of the Admiralty, being deſirous of ornamenting the account of the late diſcoveries with a number of plates, engraved after the drawing of the artiſt who went on the voyage, generouſly granted the whole expence of the engraving †.

* Characteres Generum Plantarum quas in Inſulis maris auſtralis colleg. &c. Joannes Reinoldus Forſter, LL. D. & Georgius Forſter. 4to. Lond. 1776.

† This expence amounts to upwards of 2000 *l.* all the plates being executed by the ableſt artiſts.

in equal ſhares to captain Cook and my father. An agreement was drawn up on the 13th of April, 1776, between captain Cook and my father, in the preſence, and with the ſignature of the earl of Sandwich, ſpecifying the particular parts of the account which were to be prepared for the preſs by each of the parties ſeparately, and confirming to them both jointly the generous gift of the plates from the Board of Admiralty. In conſequence of this, my father preſented a ſecond ſpecimen of his narrative for the peruſal of the earl of Sandwich, and was much ſurpriſed at firſt that this ſecond eſſay was entirely diſapproved; but after ſome time he was convinced, that as the word "narrative" was omitted in the agreement, he had no right to compoſe a connected account of the voyage. He was told that if he meant to preſerve his claim to half the profit ariſing from the plates which the Board of Admiralty provided, he muſt conform to the letter of the agreement; and though he had always conſidered himſelf as ſent out chiefly with a view to write the hiſtory of the voyage, he acquieſced for the benefit of his family, and ſtrictly confined himſelf to the publication of his unconnected philoſophical obſervations made in the courſe of the voyage.

I muſt confeſs, it hurt me much, to ſee the chief intent of my father's miſſion defeated, and the public diſappointed in their expectations of a philoſophical recital of facts.

However,

However, as I had been appointed his aſſiſtant in the courſe of this expedition, I thought it incumbent upon me, at leaſt to attempt to write ſuch a narrative. Every conſideration prompted me to undertake the taſk, which it was no longer in his power to perform. It was a duty we owed to the public; I had collected ſufficient materials during the voyage, and I had as much good will to begin with, as any traveller that ever wrote, or any compiler that was ever bribed to mutilate a narrative. I was bound by no agreement whatſoever, and that to which my father had ſigned, did not make him anſwerable for my actions, nor in the moſt diſtant manner preclude his giving me aſſiſtance. Therefore in every important circumſtance, I had leave to conſult his journals, and have been enabled to draw up my narrative with the moſt ſcrupulous attention to hiſtorical truth.

Two anonymous publications on the ſubject of our voyage have already appeared; but the preſent age is too enlightened to credit marvellous hiſtories, which would have diſguſted even the romantic diſpoſition of our anceſtors. The incidents of our voyage are various, and deeply intereſting, without the aſſiſtance of fiction. Our courſe has been by turns fertile, and barren of events; but as the induſtry of the labourer reaps ſome advantage from the moſt ungrateful ſoil, ſo the moſt dreary ſolitudes have yielded inſtruction to the inquiſitive mind.

Another

Another narrative of this circumnavigation, is ſaid to have been written by captain JAMES COOK of His Majeſty's Royal Navy, under whoſe command it was performed. That account will be ornamented with a great variety of plates, repreſenting views of the countries which we viſited, portraits of the natives, figures of their boats, arms, and utenſils, together with a number of particular charts of the new diſcoveries; and all theſe plates, engraved at the expence of the Board of Admiralty, are the joint property of captain Cook and my father.

At firſt ſight it may ſeem ſuperfluous to offer two relations of this voyage to the world; but when we conſider them as narratives of intereſting facts, it muſt be allowed that the latter will be placed in a ſtronger light, by being related by different perſons. Our occupations when in harbour were widely different; whilſt captain Cook was employed in victualling or refitting the ſhip, I went in queſt of the manifold objects which Nature had ſcattered throughout the land. Nothing is therefore more obvious, than that each of us may have caught many diſtinct incidents, and that our obſervations will frequently be foreign to each other. But above all, it is to be obſerved, that the ſame objects may have been ſeen in different points of view, and that the ſame fact may often have given riſe to different ideas. Many circumſtances familiar to the navigator, who has been bred on the rough element, ſtrike

the

the landman with novelty, and furniſh entertainment to his readers. The ſeaman views many objects on ſhore with a retroſpect to maritime affairs, whilſt the other attends to their œconomical uſes. In ſhort, the different branches of ſcience which we have ſtudied, our turns of mind, our heads and hearts have made a difference in our ſenſations, reflections, and expreſſions. This diſparity may have been rendered ſtill more evident, as I have ſlightly paſſed over all regulations relative to the interior œconomy of the ſhip and the crew: I have ſtudiouſly avoided nautical details both at ſea and in harbour, nor ventured to determine, how often we reefed, or ſplit a ſail in a ſtorm, how many times we tacked to weather a point, and how often our refractory bark diſobeyed her Palinurus, and miſſed ſtays. The bearings and diſtances of projecting capes, of peaks, hills, and hummocks, of bays, harbours, ports, and coves, at different hours of the day, have likewiſe been in general omitted. Theſe inſtructive particulars thrive in the proper field of the navigator. The hiſtory of captain Cook's firſt Voyage Round the World *, was eagerly read by all European nations, but incurred univerſal cenſure, I had almoſt ſaid contempt. It was the fate of that Hiſtory, to be compiled by a perſon who had not been on the voyage; and

* In the Endeavour, from 1768, to 1771, drawn up by Dr. John Hawkeſworth.

to the frivolous obſervations, the unintereſting digreſſions, and ſophiſtical principles of this writer, the ill-ſucceſs of the work has been attributed; though few are able to determine, with what degree of juſtice the blame is thrown upon the compiler. The active life of captain Cook, and his indefatigable purſuits after diſcoveries, have made it impoſſible for him to ſuperintend the printing of his own Journals; and the public, I am much afraid, muſt again converſe with him by means of an interpreter. His preſent performance will, in all probability, have another circumſtance in common with the former, where many important obſervations, thought obnoxious, have been ſuppreſſed, as is cuſtomary in France. The ſame authority which blew off M. de Bougainville from the iſland of Juan Fernandez, could huſh to ſilence the Britiſh guns, whilſt the Endeavour cannonaded the Portugueſe fort at Madeira *. Without entering farther into this ſubject, I ſhall only obſerve, that the above remark will give an adequate idea of the authenticity of a performance, which is ſubmitted

* The two circumſtances here alluded to, are well known facts, though ſuppreſſed in the publiſhed narratives. M. de Bougainville ſpent ſome time at Juan Fernandez, and completely refreſhed his crew there, though he wiſhes to have it underſtood, that contrary winds prevented his touching at that iſland. Captain Cook in the Endeavour, battered the Loo-fort at Madeira, in conjunction with an Engliſh frigate, thus reſenting an affront which had been offered to the Britiſh flag.

to cenſure and mutilation, before it is offered to the public.

The philoſophers of the preſent age, to obviate the ſeeming contradictions in the accounts of different travellers, have been at the trouble to ſelect certain authors in whom they have placed confidence, and rejected as fabulous the aſſertions of all the reſt. Without being competent judges of the ſubject, they have aſſumed a few circumſtances as facts; and wreſting even thoſe to ſuit their own ſyſtems, have built a ſuperſtructure which pleaſes at a diſtance, but upon nearer examination partakes of the illuſive nature of a dream. The learned, at laſt grown tired of being deceived by the powers of rhetoric, and by ſophiſtical arguments, raiſed a general cry after a ſimple collection of *facts*. They had their wiſh; facts were collected in all parts of the world, and yet knowledge was not increaſed. They received a confuſed heap of disjointed limbs, which no art could reunite into a whole; and the rage of hunting after facts ſoon rendered them incapable of forming and reſolving a ſingle propoſition; like thoſe minute enquirers, whoſe life is wholly ſpent in the anatomical diſſection of flies, from whence they never draw a ſingle concluſion for the uſe of mankind, or even of brutes. Beſides this, two travellers ſeldom ſaw the ſame object in the ſame manner, and each reported the fact differently, according to his ſenſa-

tions, and his peculiar mode of thinking. It was therefore neceſſary to be acquainted with the obſerver, before any uſe could be made of his obſervations. The traveller was no longer to truſt to chance for a variety of occurrences, but to make uſe of his firſt diſcovery, as the thread of Ariadne, by the help of which he might guide his ſteps through the labyrinth of human knowledge. It was therefore requiſite that he ſhould have penetration ſufficient to combine different facts, and to form general views from thence, which might in ſome meaſure guide him to new diſcoveries, and point out the proper objects of farther inveſtigation. This was the idea with which I embarked on the late voyage round the world, and agreeably to which I have collected materials for the preſent publication, as far as the time, my ſituation and abilities, would permit. I have always endeavoured in this narrative to connect the ideas ariſing from different occurrences, in order, if poſſible, to throw more light upon the nature of the human mind, and to lift the ſoul into that exalted ſtation, from whence the extenſive view muſt "juſtify the ways of God to man." Whether I have ſucceeded or failed in the attempt, remains to be decided; but the rectitude of the intention cannot, I truſt, be miſconſtrued. I have ſometimes obeyed the powerful dictates of my heart, and given voice to my feelings; for, as I do not pretend to be free from the weakneſſes com-

mon

mon to my fellow-creatures, it was neceſſary for every reader to know the colour of the glaſs through which I looked. Of this at leaſt I am certain, that a gloomy livid tinge hath never clouded my ſight. Accuſtomed to look on all the various tribes of men, as entitled to an equal ſhare of my good will, and conſcious, at the ſame time, of the rights which I poſſeſs in common with every individual among them, I have endeavoured to make my remarks with a retroſpect to our general improvement and welfare; and neither attachment nor averſion to particular nations have influenced my praiſe or cenſure.

The degree of pleaſure which may reſult from the peruſal of a work, depends not only upon the variety of the ſubject, but likewiſe upon the purity and the graces of ſtyle. We muſt reſign all pretenſions to taſte and ſentiment, if we did not prefer a well-told tale to a lame and tedious narration. Of late, however, the juſt eſteem in which an elegant diction is held, has been ſo far abuſed, that authors, relying on the fluency of their language, have paid no attention to the matter which they propoſed, but deceived the public with a dry and uninſtructive performance. Such writers may poſſibly acquire the approbation of ſome individuals,

"Who haunt Parnaſſus but to pleaſe their ear;"

But I am convinced the generality of readers are always juſt enough to overlook, in ſome meaſure, the defects of ſtyle, in

in favour of the novelty or uſefulneſs of the ſubject. Without attempting to be curiouſly elegant, I have aimed at perſpicuity; and having paid the ſtricteſt attention to this particular, I hope to meet with indulgence, if ſome errors of leſs moment have eſcaped my notice. It was owing to the repeated corrections of ſome valuable friends, to which I ſubmitted my manuſcript, that I ſent it late to the preſs; but from the unexampled activity of the printer, I am enabled to lay my work before the public even ſooner than I expected. The Chart, on which our line of circumnavigation is delineated, has been engraved by the ableſt artiſt in that branch*, and I conſtructed it with the moſt minute attention from the beſt authorities, which are mentioned in its margin. After ſpecifying the above particulars, of which I thought it my duty to apprize the reader, it only remains to diſcharge a promiſe made in the courſe of the work, reſpecting an account of the education and equipment of O-Maï in this country†. (See vol. I. p. 389.) In the narrow limits of a Preface I can only comprehend in a few lines the ſubſtance of what might furniſh an entertaining volume. O-Maï has been conſidered either as remarkably

* Mr. W. Whitchurch, Pleaſant-row, Iſlington.

† The native of the Society Iſlands brought over by captain Furneaux in the Adventure, and vulgarly called Omiah.

ſtupid,

ſtupid, or very intelligent, according to the different allowances which were made by thoſe who judged of his abilities. His language, which is deſtitute of every harſh conſonant, and where every word ends in a vowel, had ſo little exerciſed his organs of ſpeech, that they were wholly unfit to pronounce the more complicated Engliſh ſounds; and this phyſical, or rather habitual defect, has too often been miſconſtrued. Upon his arrival in England, he was immediately introduced into genteel company, led to the moſt ſplendid entertainments of this great and luxurious metropolis, and preſented at court amidſt a brilliant circle of the firſt nobility. He naturally imitated that eaſy and elegant politeneſs which is ſo prevalent in all thoſe places, and which is one of the ornaments of civilized ſociety; he adopted the manners, the occupations, and amuſements of his companions, and gave many proofs of a quick perception and lively fancy. Among the inſtances of his intelligence, I need only mention his knowledge of the game of cheſs, in which he had made an amazing proficiency. The multiplicity of objects which crouded upon him, prevented his paying due attention to thoſe particulars which would have been beneficial to himſelf and to his countrymen at his return. He was not able to form a general comprehenſive view of our whole civilized ſyſtem, and to abſtract from thence what appeared moſt ſtrikingly uſeful and applicable to the improvement of his country. His

ſenſes

ſenſes were charmed by beauty, ſymmetry, harmony, and magnificence; they called aloud for gratification, and he was accuſtomed to obey their voice. The continued round of enjoyments left him no time to think of his future life; and being deſtitute of the genius of Tupaïa, whoſe ſuperior abilities would have enabled him to form a plan for his own conduct, his underſtanding remained unimproved. It can hardly be ſuppoſed that he never formed a wiſh to obtain ſome knowledge of our agriculture, arts, and manufactures; but no friendly Mentor ever attempted to cheriſh and to gratify this wiſh, much leſs to improve his moral character, to teach him our exalted ideas of virtue, and the ſublime principles of revealed religion. After having ſpent near two years in England, and happily undergone inoculation for the ſmall pox *, he embarked with captain Cook in the Reſolution, which ſailed from Plymouth in July 1776. The various ſcenes of debauchery, which are almoſt unavoidable in the civilized world, had not corrupted the natural good qualities of his heart. At parting from his friends his tears flowed plentifully, and his ſilence and outward behaviour proved him deeply affected. He carried with him an infinite variety of dreſſes, ornaments, and other trifles, which are daily invented in order to ſupply our

* This diſeaſe proved fatal to Aotourou, the native of O-Taheitee, whom M. de Bougainville brought to France, and who received nearly the ſame education as O-Maï.

artificial

artificial wants. His judgment was in its infant ſtate, and therefore, like a child, he coveted almoſt every thing he ſaw, and particularly that which had amuſed him by ſome unexpected effect. To gratify his childiſh inclinations, as it ſhould ſeem, rather than from any other motive, he was indulged with a portable organ, an electrical machine, a coat of mail, and a ſuit of armour. Perhaps my readers expect to be told of his taking on board ſome articles of real uſe to his country; I expected it likewiſe, but was diſappointed. However, though his country will not receive a citizen from us much improved, or fraught with valuable acquiſitions, which might have made him the benefactor, and perhaps the lawgiver of his people, ſtill I am happy to reflect, that the ſhips which are once more ſent out upon diſcovery, are deſtined to carry the harmleſs natives of Taheitee a preſent of new domeſtic animals. The introduction of black cattle and ſheep on that fertile iſland, will doubtleſs increaſe the happineſs of its inhabitants; and this gift may hereafter be conducive, by many intermediate cauſes, to the improvement of their intellectual faculties. And here I cannot but obſerve, that conſidering the ſmall expence at which voyages of diſcovery are carried on*, the nation which favours theſe enterprizes is amply repaid by the benefit derived to our fellow-creatures. I cannot help thinking that our late voy-

* The whole expence of the voyage in which I embarked did not exceed the ſum of 25000 *l.* including all extraordinary diſburſements.

age would reflect immortal honour on our employers, if it had no other merit than ſtocking Taheitee with goats, the Friendly Iſles and New Hebrides with dogs, and New Zeeland and New Caledonia with hogs. It is therefore ſincerely to be wiſhed, that voyages of diſcovery, upon a diſintereſted plan, may ſtill be proſecuted with vigour, as much remains to be done, even in the South Sea; unleſs it ſhould be in the power of illiberal men to defeat the great and generous views of a monarch, who is juſtly called the patron of ſcience. A ſingle remark, which may be of extenſive uſe to poſterity; a ſingle circumſtance, which may make happy our fellow-creatures in thoſe remote parts of the world, repays the toils of the navigation, and beſtows that great reward, the conſciouſneſs of good and noble actions.

London,
March 1, 1777.

G. FORSTER.

CONTENTS.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I. *Departure.—Paſſage from Plymouth to Madeira.—Deſcription of that Iſland,* p. 1

CHAP. II. *The Paſſage from Madeira to the Cape Verd Iſlands, and from thence to the Cape of Good Hope,* 28

CHAP. III. *Stay at the Cape of Good Hope.—Account of that Settlement,* 58

CHAP. IV. *Run from the Cape to the Antarctic Circle; firſt Seaſon ſpent in high Southern Latitudes.—Arrival on the Coaſt of New Zeeland,* 86

CHAP. V. *Stay at Duſky Bay; Deſcription of it, and Account of our Tranſactions there,* 123

CHAP. VI. *Paſſage from Duſky Bay to Queen Charlotte's Sound.—Junction with the Adventure.—Tranſactions during our Stay there,* 189

CHAP. VII. *Run from New Zeeland to O-Taheitee,* 232

CHAP. VIII. *Anchorage in O-Aitepeha Harbour, on the leſſer Peninſula of O-Taheitee.—Account of our Stay there.—Removal to Matavaï Bay,* 253

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. IX. *Account of our Tranſactions at Matavaï Bay,* 323

CHAP. X. *Account of our Tranſactions at the Society Iſlands,* 369

BOOK II.

CHAP. I. *Run from the Society Iſles to the Friendly Iſles, with an Account of our Tranſactions there,* 418

CHAP. II. *Courſe from the Friendly Iſles to New Zeeland.—Separation from the Adventure.—Second Stay in Queen Charlotte's Sound,* 482

CHAP. III. *The ſecond Courſe towards the high Southern Latitudes; from New Zeeland to Eaſter Iſland,* 527

CHAP. IV. *An Account of Eaſter Iſland, and our Stay there,* 556

A

VOYAGE
ROUND THE
WORLD.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Departure—Paſſage from Plymouth to Madeira—Deſcription of that Iſland.

Ubi animus ex multis miſeriis atque periculis requievit,—ſtatui res geſtas—perſcribere; tamen *(hoc)* imprimis arduum videtur,—quia plerique, quæ delicta reprehenderis, malivolentia et invidia putant; ubi de magna virtute et gloria bonorum memores, quæ ſibi quiſque facilia factu putat, æquo animo accipit; ſupra ea, veluti ficta, pro falſis ducit. SALLUST.

1772. JUNE. Thurſday 11.

A VOYAGE to explore the high ſouthern latitudes of our globe was reſolved upon, ſoon after the return of the Endeavour in 1771. Two ſtout veſſels, the *Reſolution* and the *Adventure*, were fitted as King's ſloops for that purpoſe, and the command of them given to Capt. JAMES COOK and Capt. TOBIAS FURNEAUX. On the 11th of June, 1772, my father and myſelf were appointed to embark in this expedition, in order to collect, deſcribe, and draw

1772. JUNE. the objects of natural history which we might expect to meet with during our course. We prepared with the utmost alacrity for this arduous undertaking, and in the
Saturday 20. space of nine days sent all our baggage on board the Resolution, then at Sheerness, but which sailed from thence
Monday 22. for Plymouth on the 22d of June.

We left London on the 26th, and in two Days reached Plymouth, where the Resolution was not yet arrived. The 1st of July, we went on board the *Augusta Yacht*, and waited on the Earl of Sandwich, then First Lord Commissioner for executing the office of High Admiral. His Lordship expecting the Resolution to come into Plymouth Sound that day, desired us to be on board of her, between the hours of five and six in the evening. However, to our great disappointment, she did not appear, and his Lordship left Plymouth the next morning.

JULY.
Friday 3. The 3d of July early, we saw the Resolution lying in the Sound, where she had arrived the night before. Captain Cook purposed to stay here eight or ten days, and gave orders, that some necessary shelves should be fixed up in our cabins previous to our reception on board. The desire of letting pass no opportunity for the improvement of science, and for our own instruction, prompted us to pass these leisure hours in visiting the tin mines in Cornwall. Having satisfied our curiosity, and being both highly en-
Wednesday 8. tertained and much instructed by the sight of the rich extensive

tenſive works at Poldyce and Kenwyn, we returned to Plymouth on the 8th of July. 1772. JULY.

On Saturday the 11th, we went on board the Reſolution ſloop, which was now to ſail with the firſt fair wind. The next day it blew a freſh gale; and my father, walking on the quarter-deck, obſerved our veſſel to alter her poſition conſiderably in regard to the Adventure (which was to accompany us on our voyage) and to a maſt-ſhip, both at anchor in the Sound; at the ſame time taking notice that ſhe approached the rocks under the caſtle. He immediately communicated his apprehenſions to Mr. Gilbert, the maſter, who happened to be upon deck with him. The maſter found, that the veſſel having been moored to one of the tranſport buoys in the Sound, the buoy, not intended to ſupport ſuch a violent ſtrain, had broke from its ground tackle, and was adrift together with the ſloop. In an inſtant all hands were on deck, the ſails ſpread, and the cables cleared. We ſhot paſt the Adventure and maſt-ſhip, and came to an anchor, after eſcaping the moſt imminent danger of being daſhed againſt the rocks under the fort. Our ſeamen looked upon this fortunate event, as an omen favourable to the ſucceſs of the voyage, while we could not avoid reflecting on the tutelar guidance of DIVINE PROVIDENCE, which had thus manifeſted itſelf in a critical moment, that might eaſily have put an effectual Saturday 11. Sunday 12.

1772. JULY. ſtop to our projects *. We ſhall, in the courſe of this hiſtory, find frequent inſtances of impending deſtruction, where all human help would have been ineffectual, if our better fortune had not prevailed under the ſuperior direction of HIM, without whoſe knowledge not a ſingle hair falls from our heads. We are ever ready to give due applauſe and do full juſtice to the great ſkill and good conduct of our able circumnavigators, but we cannot avoid attributing every thing to its proper ſource, and that eſpecially to a higher power, which human art, though aided by effrontery and irreligion, dares not vindicate to itſelf.

Monday 13. Early on Monday the 13th, we ſet ſail from Plymouth Sound, in company with the Adventure. I turned a parting look on the fertile hills of England, and gave way to the natural emotions of affection which that proſpect awakened; till the beauty of the morning, and the novelty of gliding through the ſmooth water attracted my attention, and diſperſed the gloomineſs of former ideas. We ſoon paſſed by *Eddiſtone* lighthouſe, a lofty and well-contrived tower, which is of the greateſt advantage to navigation and commerce. It was impoſſible to look at it, without ſhuddering with apprehenſions for the lonely

* That it is not uncommon for ſhips, under the ſame circumſtances as the Reſolution ſloop, to take conſiderable damage, appears from what happened to the Aldborough, May 19, 1776, which broke from the buoys in the ſame manner, but drove aſhore on Drake's iſland, and was bulged to pieces.

keepers,

keepers, who are often obliged to paſs three months there, deprived of all communication with the main-land. The fate of *Winſtanley*, who was really cruſhed by the downfall of a former ſtructure, which he himſelf had built on this rock, and the vibrations of the preſent tower, when winds and waves aſſail it, muſt give them ſtrong fears of a dreadful and ſudden end. 1772. JULY.

In proportion as we ſtood off ſhore, the wind encreaſed, the billows roſe higher, and the veſſel rolled violently from ſide to ſide. Thoſe who were not uſed to the ſea, nay ſome of the oldeſt mariners, were affected by the ſea-ſickneſs, in various degrees of violence. It was of different duration with different perſons, and after it had continued three days amongſt us, we found the greateſt relief from red port wine mulled, with ſpices and ſugar.

On the 20th, we fell in with Cape *Ortegal*, on the coaſt of *Gallicia* in Spain; the natives call it *Ortiguera*, and it was probably the *Promontorium Trileucum* of the ancients. The country hereabouts is hilly; where the naked rock appears it is white, and the tops of the mountains are covered with wood. I alſo obſerved ſome corn-fields almoſt ripe, and ſome ſpots which ſeemed to be covered with heath. The eagerneſs with which every body gazed at this land, powerfully perſuaded me, that mankind were not meant to be amphibious animals, and that of courſe our preſent ſituation Monday 20.

1772. JULY. tion was an unnatural one; an idea that ſeems to have occurred to Horace, when he ſays,

Necquicquam Deus abſcidit
Prudens oceano diſſociabili
Terras; ſi tamen impiæ
Non tangenda rates tranſiliunt vada. HOR.

In vain did Nature's wiſe command
Divide the waters from the land,
If daring ſhips and men profane,
Invade th' inviolable main. DRYDEN.

Wedneſday 22. On the 22d, we ſaw the lighthouſe near *Corunna*, or, as our ſailors abſurdly call it, the *Groyn*. It was perfectly calm, the water ſmooth as a mirror, and the hilly proſpect very agreeably varied by corn-fields, incloſures, ſmall hamlets, and gentlemen's ſeats, every thing conſpiring to baniſh the remains of the ſea-ſickneſs entirely from amongſt us, and to bring back that chearfulneſs which could not well keep company with empty ſtomachs and a tempeſtuous ſea. In the evening we were near a ſmall tartan, which we took to be a fiſhing veſſel from the Spaniſh coaſt; and in that perſuaſion, a boat was hoiſted out and ſent towards her, in order, if poſſible, to purchaſe ſome freſh fiſh. In going thither we obſerved the whole ſurface of the ſea every where covered with myriads of little crabs, not above an inch in diameter, which we found

found were of the ſpecies called *cancer depurator* by Linnæus. The little veſſel proved to be a French tartan from Marſeilles, of about 100 tons burden, freighted with flour for *Ferrol* and *Corunna*. The people in her begged for a ſmall ſupply of freſh water, having been driven far from their courſe by contrary winds during two months, by which means this neceſſary article had been exhauſted above a fortnight ago, and they were reduced to live upon bread and a little wine. Whilſt they continued in this diſtreſsful ſituation, they had met with ſeveral ſhips at ſea, and eſpecially with ſeveral Spaniſh men of war, though none had been humane enough to alleviate their ſufferings. When the officer who commanded our boat heard this account, he ſent their empty barrels on board our veſſel to be filled with freſh water, and their eyes ſparkled with the livelieſt expreſſion of joy when they received it. They thanked Heaven and us, and rejoiced that they ſhould now be able to light their fire again, and be comforted with ſome boiled proviſions, after their long abſtinence. So true is it, that a man with a feeling humane heart, may often, at a very cheap rate, indulge the inclination to aſſiſt his fellow-creatures. 1772. JULY.

The next afternoon, three Spaniſh men of war paſſed us, ſtanding in for *Ferrol*. One of them ſeemed to be a 74 gun ſhip, and the two others carried about 60 guns each. The ſternmoſt firſt hoiſted Engliſh colours, but when Thurſday 23.

1772. JULY. when we ſhewed ours, ſhe hauled them down, fired a gun to leeward, and hoiſted the Spaniſh enſign. Soon after ſhe fired a ſhot at the Adventure; but as we kept ſtanding on, the Spaniard put about, and fired another ſhot juſt a-head of her. In conſequence of this, our veſſel brought to, and the Adventure now *ſeemed only to follow our example.* The Spaniard then hailed the Adventure in Engliſh, and aſked "what *frigate* that was a-head," (meaning our ſloop); and having been ſatisfied in that particular, he would not anſwer a queſtion of the ſame nature, which was put to him, but always replied, "*I wiſh you a good voyage.*" We continued our courſe, after a ſcene ſo humiliating to the maſters of the ſea, and paſſed Cape *Finiſterre* during night.

Several porpeſſes paſſed us on the 25th, all ſwimming againſt the wind, which had been north-eaſterly ever ſince we had left Cape Finiſterre. At night the ſea appeared luminous, particularly the tops of the waves and part of the ſhip's wake, which were illuminated by a maſs of pure light: but, independent of that, there appeared numerous little ſparks infinitely brighter than any other part of this phænomenon.

Tueſday 28. On the 28th, at ſix of the clock in the morning, we diſcovered PORTO-SANTO, which is about five or ſix leagues long, barren and thinly inhabited. It has only one *Villa* or town, of the ſame name, ſituated on the eaſtern ſide, in a valley which is entirely cultivated, and appeared to have

have a fine verdure from the numerous vineyards it contains. This little iſland is under the orders of the governor of Madeira, and the number of its inhabitants amounts to about ſeven hundred. 1772. JULY.

Soon after we made MADEIRA and the ILHAS DESERTAS, corruptly called the *Deſerters* by our ſeamen. The town of *Santa Cruz* in Madeira was abreaſt of us at ſix in the afternoon. The mountains are here interſected by numerous deep glens and vallies. On the ſloping ground we obſerved ſeveral country-houſes pleaſantly ſituated amidſt ſurrounding vineyards and lofty cypreſſes, which give the country altogether a romantic appearance. We were towed to the road of *Funchal* in a perfect calm, and came to an anchor in the dark.

Early on the 29th, we were agreeably ſurpriſed with the picturesque appearance of the city of FUNCHAL, which is built round the bay, on the gentle aſcent of the firſt hills, in form of an amphitheatre. All its public and private buildings are by this means ſet off to advantage. They are in general entirely white, many of them two ſtories high, and covered with low roofs, from whence they derive that elegant eaſtern ſtile, and that ſimplicity, of which our narrow buildings with ſteep roofs, and numerous ſtacks of chimnies are utterly deſtitute. On the ſea ſide are ſeveral batteries and platforms with cannon. An old caſtle, which commands the road, is ſituated on the Wedneſday 29.

1772. JULY. top of a ſteep black rock, ſurrounded by the ſea at high-water, and called by the Engliſh *Loo-rock.* On a neighbouring eminence above the town there is another, called *San Joao do Pico*, or St. John's caſtle. The hills beyond the town ſerve to complete the beauty of the landſcape, being covered with vineyards, incloſures, plantations, and groves, interſperſed with country-houſes and ſeveral churches. The whole ſeemed to raiſe the idea of a fairy-garden, and enabled us to form ſome conception of the hanging gardens of queen *Semiramis.*

About ſeven o'clock a boat came off to us called the *Pratique-boat*, having on board a *Capitan do Sal*, who is one of the two *Guarda-Mores* of the board of health, appointed to regulate the quarantine of ſuch ſhips as come from the coaſt of Barbary, the Arches, and other parts ſuſpected of infectious diſtempers. This gentleman enquired into the ſtate of health of our ſhip's company, and the place we came from, and returned on ſhore with ſatisfactory information on this ſubject.

After breakfaſt we landed, and went with the captains to the houſe of Mr. Loughnan, a Britiſh merchant, who ſupplied the king's ſhips, as contractor, with all the neceſſaries. The conſul, Mr. Murray, lately appointed, was not yet arrived, but Mr. Loughnan received us with ſuch hoſpitality and elegance, as do honour to himſelf and to the nation in general.

The

1771. JULY.

The city is far from anſwering the expectations which may be formed from its appearance towards the road. Its ſtreets are narrow, ill-paved, and dirty; the houſes are built of freeſtone, or of brick, but they are dark, and only a few of the beſt, belonging to Engliſh merchants or principal inhabitants, are provided with glaſs-windows; all the others have a kind of lattice work in their ſtead, which hangs on hinges and may be lifted up occaſionally. The ground floors are moſtly appropriated for the uſe of ſervants, for ſhops, and ſtore-houſes.

The churches and monaſteries are very plain buildings, without any diſplay of the architectonic art: their inſide exhibits a ſtriking want of taſte; the little light which is admitted into them, ſerving only to diſplay heaps of tinſel ornaments, arranged in a manner which is truely Gothic. The convent of Franciſcan friars is clean and ſpacious, but their gardens ſeemed not to be kept in the beſt order. The nuns of *Santa Clara* politely received us at their grate, but afterwards deputed ſome old women, to offer the artificial flowers of their manufacture for ſale.

We walked with Mr. Loughnan to his country-ſeat, which is ſituated on the hills, about a mile from the city. We there met an agreeable company of the principal Britiſh merchants eſtabliſhed at Madeira. The captains returned on board in the evening, but we accepted of Mr. Loughnan's obliging offer of his houſe during our ſhort ſtay.

1772. JULY. Friday 31. Our excurſions began the next morning, and were continued on the following day. At five o'clock in the morning we went upwards along the courſe of a ſtream, to the interior hilly part of the country. About one o'clock in the afternoon we came to a cheſnut grove, ſomewhat below the higheſt ſummit of the iſland, having walked about ſix miles from Mr. Loughnan's houſe. The air was here remarkably cooler than below, and a fine breeze contributed to its temperature. We now engaged a negro to become our conductor, and after a walk of at leaſt an hour and a half, we returned to our hoſpitable manſion.

AUGUST. Saturday 1. The next day we prepared for our departure. It was with regret that I left this delightful ſpot, and ſuch generous friends, who know how to enjoy the unſpeakable pleaſure of communicating happineſs to their fellow-citizens of the world. My heart ſtill preſerves thoſe ſentiments of gratitude and eſteem, which made me loth to part from hence, and to reſign myſelf to the common fate of travellers. I was however, pleaſed to find Britiſh hoſpitality exiſting *abroad*, which Smollet could no longer trace in England *.

Before I leave this iſland, I ſhall offer ſuch remarks, as I had an opportunity of collecting during my ſtay; and I am induced to believe they will prove acceptable,

* Vide Humphry Clinker, vol. I. page 102.

as

as they were communicated by ſenſible Engliſhmen, who had been inhabitants of Madeira for many years, and are therefore of the beſt authority. I am aware indeed, that an account of Madeira may by ſome be looked upon as a ſuperfluous work; but if, upon a candid peruſal, it is found to contain ſuch obſervations as have not yet appeared in the numerous journals of navigators, I hope I ſhall not need a farther apology. It is very natural to overlook that which is near home, and as it were within our reach, eſpecially when the mind looks forward, on diſcoveries which it reckons more important, in proportion as they are more remote. 1772. AUGUST.

The iſland of Madeira is about 55 Engliſh miles long, and ten miles broad, and was firſt diſcovered on the 2d of July, in the year 1419, by *Joao Gonzales Zarco*, there being no hiſtorical foundation for the fabulous report of its diſcovery by one *Machin* an Engliſhman. It is divided into two *capitanias*, named *Funchal* and *Maxico*, from the towns of thoſe names. The former contains two judicatures, viz. *Funchal* and *Calhetta*, the latter being a town with the title of a county, belonging to the family of *Caſtello Melhor*. The ſecond *capitania* likewiſe comprehends two judicatures, viz. *Maxico* (read Maſhico) and *San Vicente*.

Funchal is the only *cidade* or city in this iſland, which has alſo ſeven *villas* or towns; of which there are four, *Calhetta*, *Camara de Lobos*, *Ribiera braba*, and *Ponta de Sol* in the capitania

1772. AUGUST. capitania of Funchal, which is divided into twenty-ſix pariſhes. The other three are in the capitania of Maxico, which conſiſt of ſeventeen pariſhes; theſe towns are called *Maxico*, *San Vicente*, and *Santa Cruz*.

The governor is at the head of all the civil and military departments of this iſland, of Porto-Santo, the *Salvages*, and the *Ilhas Deſertas*, which laſt only contain the temporary huts of ſome fiſhermen, who reſort thither in purſuit of their buſineſs. At the time when I was at Madeira, the governor was *Don Joao Antonio de Saa Pereira*. He was eſteemed a man of good ſenſe and temper, but rather reſerved and cautious.

The law department is under the corregidor, who is appointed by the king of Portugal, commonly ſent from Liſbon, and holds his place during the king's pleaſure. All cauſes come to him from inferior courts by appeal. Each judicature has a ſenate, and a *Juiz* or judge, whom they chooſe, preſides over them. At *Funchal* he is called, *Juiz da Fora*, and in the abſence, or after the death of the corregidor, acts as his deputy. The foreign merchants elect their own judge, called the *Providor*, who is at the ſame time, collector of the king's cuſtoms and revenues, which amount in all to about one hundred and twenty thouſand pounds ſterling. Far the greateſt part of this ſum is applied towards the ſalaries of civil and military officers, the pay of troops, and the maintenance of public buildings.

buildings. This revenue ariſes, firſt from the tenth of all the produce of this iſland belonging to the king, by virtue of his office as grand maſter of the order of Chriſt; ſecondly, from ten per cent. duties laid on all imports, proviſions excepted; and laſtly, from the eleven per cent. charged on all exports. 1772. AUGUST.

The iſland has but one company of regular ſoldiers of a hundred men: the reſt of the military force is a militia conſiſting of three thouſand men, divided into companies, each commanded by a captain, who has one lieutenant under him, and one enſign. There is no pay given to either the private men, or the officers of this militia, and yet their places are much ſought after, on account of the rank which they communicate. Theſe troops are embodied once a year, and exerciſed during one month. All the military are commanded by the *Serjeante Mór*. The governor has two *Capitanos de Sal* about him, who do duty as aides-de-camp.

The ſecular prieſts on the iſland are about twelve hundred, many of whom are employed as private tutors. Since the expulſion of the Jeſuits, no regular public ſchool is to be found here, unleſs we except a ſeminary where a prieſt, appointed for that purpoſe, inſtructs and educates ten ſtudents at the king's expence. Theſe wear a red cloak over the uſual black gown, worn by ordinary ſtudents. All thoſe who intend to go into orders, are obliged to qualify them-

1772. AUGUST. themſelves by ſtudying in the univerſity of *Coimbra*, lately re-eſtabliſhed in Portugal. There is alſo a dean and chapter at Madeira, with a biſhop at their head, whoſe income is conſiderably greater than the governor's; it conſiſts of one hundred and ten pipes of wine, and of forty *muys* of wheat, each containing twenty-four buſhels; which amounts in common years to three thouſand pounds ſterling. Here are likewiſe ſixty or ſeventy Franciſcan friars, in four monaſteries, one of which is at Funchal. About three hundred nuns live on the iſland, in four convents, of the orders of *Merci*, *Sta. Clara*, *Incarnaçao*, and *Bom Jeſus*. Thoſe of the laſt-mentioned inſtitution may marry whenever they chooſe, and leave their monaſtery.

In the year 1768, the inhabitants living in the forty-three pariſhes of Madeira, amounted to 63,913, of whom there were 31,341 males, and 32,572 females. But in that year 5243 perſons died, and no more than 2198 children were born; ſo that the number of the dead exceeded that of the born by 3045. It is highly probable that ſome epidemical diſtemper carried off ſo diſproportionate a number in that year, as the iſland would ſhortly be entirely depopulated, if the mortality were always equal to this. Another circumſtance concurs to ſtrengthen this ſuppoſition, namely, the excellence of the climate. The weather is in general mild and temperate: In ſummer the heat is very moderate on the higher parts of the iſland, whither

whither the better ſort of people retire for that ſeaſon; and in winter the ſnow remains there for ſeveral days, whilſt it is never known to continue above a day or two in the lower parts. The accuracy of the numbers of dead and born, may however be entirely depended upon, as a complete liſt extracted from the pariſh books was procured for us, from the governor's ſecretary. 1772. AUGUST.

The common people of this iſland are of a tawny colour, and well ſhaped, though they have large feet, owing perhaps to the efforts they are obliged to make in climbing the craggy paths of this mountainous country. Their faces are oblong, their eyes dark; their black hair naturally falls in ringlets, and begins to criſp in ſome individuals, which may perhaps be owing to intermarriages with negroes; in general they are hard featured, but not diſagreeable. Their women are too frequently ill-favoured, and want the florid complexion, which, when united to a pleaſing aſſemblage of regular features, gives our Northern fair ones the ſuperiority over all their ſex. They are ſmall, have prominent cheek-bones, large feet, an ungraceful gait, and the colour of the darkeſt *brunette*. The juſt proportions of their body, the fine form of their hands, and their large, lively eyes, ſeem in ſome meaſure to compenſate for thoſe defects. The labouring men in ſummer, wear linen trowſers, a coarſe ſhirt, a large hat, and boots; ſome had a ſhort jacket

1772. AUGUST. made of cloth, and a long cloak, which they ſometimes carried over their arm. The women wear a petticoat, and a ſhort corſelet or jacket, cloſely fitting their ſhape, which is a ſimple, and often not inelegant dreſs. They have alſo a ſhort, but wide cloak, and thoſe that are unmarried, tie their hair on the crown of their head, on which they wear no covering.

The country people are exceeding ſober and frugal; their diet in general conſiſting of bread and onions, or other roots, and little animal food. However, they avoid eating tripe, or any offals, becauſe it is proverbially ſaid of a very poor man, "*he is reduced to eat tripe.*" Their common drink is water, or an infuſion on the remaining rind or ſkin of the grape (after it has paſſed through the wine-preſs) which when fermented, acquires ſome tartneſs and acidity, but cannot be kept very long. The wine for which the iſland is ſo famous, and which their own hands prepare, ſeldom if ever regales them.

Their principal occupation is the planting and raiſing of vines, but as that branch of agriculture requires little attendance during the greateſt part of the year, they naturally incline to idleneſs. The warmth of the climate, which renders great proviſion againſt the inclemencies of weather unneceſſary, and the eaſe with which the cravings of appetite are ſatisfied, muſt tend to indolence, wherever the regulations of the legiſlature do not coun-

teract

teract it, by endeavouring with the proſpect of encreaſing happineſs, to infuſe the ſpirit of induſtry. It ſeems the Portugueſe government does not purſue the proper methods againſt this dangerous lethargy of the ſtate. They have lately ordered the plantation of olive-trees here, on ſuch ſpots as are too dry and barren to bear vines; but they have not thought of giving temporary aſſiſtance to the labourers, and have offered no premium by which theſe might be induced to conquer their reluctance to innovations, and averſion to labour. 1772. AUGUST.

The vineyards are held only on an annual tenure, and the farmer reaps but four tenths of the produce, ſince four other tenths are paid in kind to the owner of the land, one tenth to the king, and one to the clergy. Such ſmall profits, joined to the thought of toiling merely for the advantage of others, if improvements were attempted, entirely preclude the hopes of a future increaſe. Oppreſſed as they are, they have however preſerved a high degree of chearfulneſs, and contentment; their labours are commonly alleviated with ſongs, and in the evening they aſſemble from different cottages, to dance to the drowſy muſic of a guittar.

The inhabitants of the towns are more ill-favoured than the country people, and often pale and lean. The men wear French cloaths, commonly black, which do not ſeem to fit them, and have been in faſhion in the polite

1772. AUGUST. world about half a century ago. Their ladies are delicate, and have agreeable features; but the characteriſtic jealouſy of the men ſtill locks them up, and deprives them of a happineſs which the country women, amidſt all their diſtreſſes, enjoy. Many of the better people, are a ſort of *petite nobleſſe*, which we would call *gentry*, whoſe genealogical pride makes them unſociable and ignorant, and cauſes a ridiculous affectation of gravity. The landed property is in the hands of a few ancient families, who live at Funchal, and in the various towns on the iſland.

Madeira conſiſts of one large mountain, whoſe branches riſe every where from the ſea towards the centre of the iſle, converging to the ſummit, in the midſt of which, I was told, is a depreſſion or excavation, called the Val by the inhabitants, always covered with a freſh and delicate herbage. The ſtones on the iſle, which we examined, ſeemed to have been in the fire, were full of holes, and of a blackiſh colour; in ſhort, the greater part of them were lava. A few of them were of the kind which the Derbyſhire miners call dunſtone. The ſoil of the whole iſland is a tarras mixed with ſome particles of clay, lime, and ſand, and has much the ſame appearance as ſome earths we ſince found on the iſle of Aſcenſion. From this circumſtance, and from the excavation of the ſummit of the mountain, I am induced to ſuppoſe, that in ſome remote period, a volcano has produced the lava, and the ochreous

ochreous particles, and that the Val was formerly its crater. At firſt ſight of Madeira I was of a different opinion; but the black Loo-rock, the cliff on which St. John's caſtle ſtands, the nature of the ſoil and ſtones, and the ſituation of the Val, convinced me, that the whole had formerly undergone a violent change by fire. 1772. AUGUST.

Many brooks and ſmall rivulets deſcend from the ſummits in deep chaſms or glens, which ſeparate the various parts of the iſle. We could not however perceive any *plains* mentioned by others *, through which the waters would probably have taken their courſe, if any ſuch had exiſted. The beds of the brooks are in ſome places covered with ſtones of all ſizes, carried down from the higher parts by the violence of winter rains or floods of melted ſnow. The water is conducted by wears and channels into the vineyards, where each proprietor has the uſe of it for a certain time; ſome being allowed to keep a conſtant ſupply of it, ſome to uſe it thrice, others twice, and others only once a week. As the heat of the climate renders this ſupply of water to the vineyards abſolutely neceſſary, it is not without great expence that a new vineyard can be planted; for the maintenance of which, the owners muſt purchaſe water at a high price, from thoſe

* See an Account of the Voyages undertaken by the order of his preſent Majeſty, and ſucceſſively performed by the Captains Byron, Wallis, Carteret, and Cook.—Compiled by Dr. Hawkeſworth. Vol. II. p. 7.

who

1772. AUGUST. who are conſtantly ſupplied, and are thus enabled to ſpare ſome of it.

Wherever a level piece of ground can be contrived in the higher hills, the natives make plantations of eddoes (*arum eſculentum*, Linn.) encloſed by a kind of dyke to cauſe a ſtagnation, as that plant ſucceeds beſt in ſwampy ground. Its leaves ſerve as food for hogs, and the country people uſe the roots for their own nouriſhment.

The ſweet potatoe (*convolvulus batatas*) is planted for the ſame purpoſe, and makes a principal article of diet; together with cheſnuts, which grow in extenſive woods, on the higher parts of the iſland, where the vine will not thrive. Wheat and barley are likewiſe ſown, eſpecially in ſpots where the vines are decaying through age, or where they are newly planted. But the crops do not produce above three months proviſions, and the inhabitants are therefore obliged to have recourſe to other food, beſides importing conſiderable quantities of corn from North-America in exchange for wine. The want of manure, and the inactivity of the people, are in ſome meaſure the cauſes of this diſadvantage; but ſuppoſing huſbandry to be carried to its perfection here, I believe they could not raiſe corn ſufficient for their conſumption. They make their threſhing-floors of a circular form, in a corner of the field, which is cleared and beaten ſolid for the purpoſe. The ſheaves are laid round about it, and a ſquare board

ſtuck

ſtuck full of ſharp flints below, is dragged over them by a pair of oxen, the driver getting on it to encreaſe its weight. This machine cuts the ſtraw as if it had been chopped, and frees the grain from the huſk, from which it is afterwards ſeparated. 1772. AUGUST.

The great produce of Madeira is the wine, from which it has acquired fame and ſupport. Where the ſoil, expoſure, and ſupply of water will admit of it, the vine is cultivated. One or more walks, about a yard or two wide, interſect each vineyard, and are included by ſtone-walls two feet high. Along theſe walks, which are arched over with laths about ſeven feet high, they erect wooden pillars at regular diſtances, to ſupport a lattice-work of bamboos, which ſlopes down from both ſides of the walk, till it is only a foot and a half or two feet high, in which elevation it extends over the whole vineyard. The vines are in this manner ſupported from the ground, and the people have room to root out the weeds which ſpring up between them. In the ſeaſon of the vintage they creep under this lattice-work, cut off the grapes, and lay them into baſkets: ſome bunches of theſe grapes I ſaw, which weighed ſix pounds and upwards. This method of keeping the ground clean and moiſt, and ripening the grapes in the ſhade, contributes to give the Madeira wines that excellent flavour and body for which they are remarkable. The owners of vineyards are however obliged to allot a certain

1772. AUGUST. certain ſpot of ground for the growth of bamboos; for the lattice-work cannot be made without them; and I was told ſome vineyards lay quite neglected for want of this uſeful reed.

The wines are not all of equal goodneſs, and conſequently of different prices. The beſt, made of a vine imported from Candia, by order of the Infante of Portugal, Don Henry, is called *Madeira Malmſey*, a pipe of which cannot be bought on the ſpot for leſs than 40 or 42 *l.* ſterling. It is an exceeding rich ſweet wine, and is only made in a ſmall quantity. The next ſort is a dry wine, ſuch as is exported for the London market, at 30 or 31 *l.* ſterling the pipe. Inferior ſorts for the Eaſt India, Weſt India, and North-American markets, ſell at 28, 25, and 20 *l.* ſterling. About thirty thouſand pipes, upon a mean, are made every year, each containing one hundred and ten gallons. About thirteen thouſand pipes of the better ſorts are exported, and all the reſt is made into brandy for the Brazils, converted into vinegar, or conſumed at home.

The encloſures of the vineyards conſiſt of walls, and hedges of prickly pear, pomegranates, myrtles, brambles, and wild roſes. The gardens produce peaches, apricots, quinces, apples, pears, walnuts, cheſnuts, and many other European fruits; together with now and then ſome tropical plants, ſuch as bananas, goavas, and pine-apples.

All

1772. AUGUST.

All the common domeſtic animals of Europe are likewiſe found at Madeira; and their mutton and beef, though ſmall, is very well taſted. Their horſes are ſmall, but ſure-footed; and with great agility climb the difficult paths, which are the only means of communication in the country. They have no wheel-carriages of any kind; but in the town they uſe a ſort of drays or ſledges, formed of two pieces of plank joined by croſs pieces, which make an acute angle before; theſe are drawn by oxen, and are uſed to tranſport caſks of wine, and other heavy goods, to and from the warehouſes.

The animals of the feathered tribe, which live wild here, are more numerous than the wild quadrupeds; there being only the common grey rabbet here, as a repreſentative of the laſt-mentioned claſs. We obſerved the ſparrow-hawk, *(falco niſus)*; ſeveral crows, *(corvus corone)*; magpies, *(corvus pica)*; ſky and wood-larks, *(alauda arvenſis, & arborea)*; ſtarlings, *(ſturnus vulgaris)*; yellow hammers, *(emberiza citrinella)*; common and mountain ſparrows, *(fringilla domeſtica & montana)*; yellow wagtails and robin red-breaſts, *(motacilla flava & rubecula)*; and wild pigeons, of which we could not determine the ſpecies. We likewiſe ſaw the houſe-ſwallow and ſwift, *(hirundo ruſtica & apus)*; and ſome gentlemen of the Britiſh factory aſſured us they had alſo ſeen the martin, *(h. urbica)*. This laſt genus of birds lives here all the winter, and only diſappears for a few

1772. AUGUST. days in very cold weather, retiring to clifts and crevices of the rocks, and returning on the firſt fair ſunny day. The red-legged partridge, *(tetrao rufus)*, is likewiſe common in the interior parts of the iſle, where it is not much diſturbed. In Mr. Loughnan's aviary I ſaw waxbills, *(loxia aſtrild)*, chaffinches, goldfinches, yellowfinches, and canary-birds, *(fringilla coelebs, carduelis, butyracea, & canaria)*; all which had been caught upon this iſland. Tame birds, ſuch as turkies, geeſe, ducks, and hens, are very rare, which is perhaps owing to the ſcarcity of corn.

There are no ſnakes whatſoever in Madeira; but all the houſes, vineyards, and gardens ſwarm with lizards. The friars of one of the convents complained, that theſe vermin deſtroyed the fruit in their garden; they had therefore placed a braſs kettle in the ground to catch them, as they are conſtantly running about in queſt of food. In this manner they daily caught hundreds, which could not get out on account of the ſmooth ſides of the kettle, but were forced to periſh.

The ſhores of Madeira, and of the neighbouring Salvages and Deſertas, are not without fiſh; but as they are not in plenty enough for the rigid obſervance of Lent, pickled herrings are brought from Gothenburg in Engliſh bottoms, and ſalted cod from New-York and other American ports, to ſupply the deficiency.

We

1772. AUGUST.

We found a few inſects here, and might perhaps have collected more, if our ſtay had been of longer duration; thoſe we met with were of known ſorts, and in no great variety. On this occaſion I ſhall mention a general remark, which ought to be applied to all the *iſlands* we have touched at during the courſe of our voyage. Quadrupeds, amphibious reptiles, and inſects, are not numerous in *iſlands*, at ſome diſtance from a continent, and the firſt are not to be met with at all, unleſs they were formerly tranſported thither by men. Fiſhes and birds, which are able to paſs through water or air, are more frequent, and in greater variety. *Continents*, on the other hand, are rich in the above-mentioned claſſes of animals, as well as in thoſe of birds and fiſhes, which are more univerſal. Africa, which we viſited during this voyage, in a few weeks ſupplied us with a great variety of quadrupeds, reptiles, and inſects, whilſt all the other lands where we touched, afforded no new diſcoveries in thoſe claſſes.

CHAP. II.

The Paſſage from Madeira to the Cape Verd Iſlands, and from thence to the Cape of Good Hope.

1772. AUGUST. LATE in the evening on the firſt of Auguſt, we got under ſail, in company with the Adventure. A North-eaſt wind forwarded our courſe ſo well, that we got ſight Tueſday 4. of Palma on the fourth, early in the morning. This iſland is one of the group now called the Canaries, known to the ancients by the name of *Inſulæ Fortunatæ*, one of them being already at that time diſtinguiſhed by the name of *Canaria* *. They were entirely forgotten in Europe, till towards the end of the fourteenth century, when the ſpirit of navigation and diſcovery was revived. Some adventurers then found them again, and the Biſcayans landed on Lanzarota, and carried off one hundred and

* It is probable that not only the Canaries, but likewiſe Madeira, and Porto-Santo were known to the ancients; a circumſtance from which it is poſſible to reconcile their various accounts of the number of theſe iſlands. See Plin. Hiſt. Nat. lib. vi. cap. 37. The deſcription given of them by ancient writers, agree with the modern accounts. See Voſſius in Pompon. Melam. ad cap. x. v. 20. *Ex iiſdem quoque inſulis cinnabaris Romam advehebatur. Sane hodie etiamnum frequens eſt in inſulis fortunatis arbor illa quæ cinnabarin gignit. Vulgo* SANGUINEM DRACONIS *appellant.*—We have Pliny's teſtimony, lib. vi. cap. 36. that Juba, the Mauritanian king, dyed purple in ſome of theſe iſles, oppoſite to the Autololes in Africa.

ſeventy

ſeventy of the natives. Luis de la Cerda, a Spaniſh nobleman of the royal family of Caſtile, in conſequence of a bull from the Pope, in the year 1344, aſſumed the title of Prince of the Fortunate Iſlands, but never went to take poſſeſſion of his eſtates. Laſtly, John, Baron de Bethencourt of Normandy, viſited theſe iſlands again in the year 1402, took poſſeſſion of ſeveral, and called himſelf King of the Canaries. His nephew ceded his claims upon them to Don Henry, Infante of Portugal; but they were afterwards left to the Spaniards, who now poſſeſs them. 1772. AUGUST.

The next day at five o'clock in the morning, we paſſed the iſle of Ferro, remarkable only from this circumſtance, that ſeveral geographers have reckoned their firſt meridian from its weſtermoſt extremity. The ſame day, being in about 27 deg. N. latitude, we obſerved ſeveral flying fiſhes, purſued by bonitos and dolphins, riſing out of the water in order to eſcape from them. They were flying in all directions, and not againſt the wind only, as Mr. Kalm ſeems to think. Neither did they confine themſelves to a ſtrait-lined courſe, but frequently were ſeen to deſcribe a curve. When they met the top of a wave as they ſkimmed along the ſurface of the ocean, they paſſed through, and continued their flight beyond it. From this time, till we left the torrid zone, we were almoſt daily amuſed with the view of immenſe ſhoals of theſe fiſhes, and now and then caught one upon our decks Wedneſday 5.

1772. AUGUST. decks when it had unfortunately taken its flight too far, and was ſpent by its too great elevation above the ſurface of the ſea. In the uniform life which we led between the tropics, where we found weather, wind, and ſea, almoſt conſtantly favourable and agreeable, the mind catched at every little circumſtance that could give the hint to a reflection. When we ſaw the moſt beautiful fiſhes of the ſea, the dolphin and bonito, in purſuit of the flying fiſh, and when theſe forſook their native element to ſeek for ſhelter in air, the application to human nature was obvious. What empire is not like a tumultuous ocean, where the great in all the magnificence and pomp of power, continually perſecute and contrive the deſtruction of the defenceleſs?—Sometimes we ſaw this picture continued ſtill farther, when the poor fugitives met with another ſet of enemies in the air, and became the prey of birds *, by endeavouring to eſcape the jaws of fiſhes.

Saturday 8. On the 8th we obſerved the ſea to be of a whitiſh colour, and tried for ſoundings, but found none with fifty fathoms of line. In the evening we croſſed the tropic of cancer. About this time, the captain ordered the ſhip to be fumigated with gunpowder and vinegar, having taken notice that all our books, and utenſils became co-

* Boobies (*pelecanus piſcator*); men of war birds (*p. aquilus*); and tropic birds (*phaethon æthereus.*)

vered

vered with mould, and all our iron and ſteel though ever ſo little expoſed, began to ruſt. Nothing is more probable than that the vapours, which now filled the air, contained ſome ſaline particles, ſince moiſture alone does not appear to produce ſuch an effect *. If it be aſked how any ſaline particles, generally ſo much heavier than the aqueous, can be raiſed in vapours, I leave it to the philoſophers to determine, whether the numerous animal parts which daily putrefy in the ocean, do not ſupply enough of the volatile alkali, by the aſſiſtance of which the above phænomenon might be explained. The great heat between the tropics ſeems to volatiliſe the marine acid contained in the brine and common ſalt: for it has been obſerved, that on rags dipped in a ſolution of any one of the alkalies, and ſuſpended over one of the pans where brine is evaporated and ſalt is prepared, cryſtals are ſoon formed of a neutral ſalt, compounded of the marine acid and the alkali in which the rags had been immerſed; hence perhaps we may be allowed to infer, that the marine acid is by the heat of the tropical ſun volatiliſed, and in that aërial or vaporous form attacks the ſurface of iron and ſteel; nay, this little quantity of acid may perhaps, imbibed by the lungs, and pores of the ſkin, become ſalutary; in the firſt caſe to people under pulmonary diſeaſes; 1772. AUGUST.

* This opinion is very judiciouſly diſcuſſed by Ellis, in his voyage to Hudſon's Bay.

and

1778. AUGUST. and in the ſecond by gently bracing the habit of bodies relaxed by a tropical heat, and moderating the too violent perſpiration.

The inſpiſſated eſſence of beer, of which we had ſeveral caſks on board, was obſerved to be in motion before we left Madeira, and now began to burſt the caſks and run out. The captain ordering it to be brought on deck, its fermentation was encreaſed by the addition of freſh air, and ſeveral of the caſks had their heads forced out by the fermenting liquor, with an exploſion like that of a fowling-piece. A kind of vapour, like ſmoke, always preceded the eruption. A veſſel, ſtrongly fumigated with ſulphur, was, by my father's advice, filled with this eſſence, by which means the fermentation was ſtopped for a few days, but returned afterwards, eſpecially in caſks expoſed to the free acceſs of air. Some caſks, which had been buried in the ballaſt-ſhingle, were preſerved and prevented from burſting. Perhaps the admixture of double-diſtilled ſpirit, might have hindered the progreſs of fermentation in this eſſence. The beer made of it, by the ſimple addition of warm water, was very good and palatable, though it had a little empyreumatic taſte, cauſed by the inſpiſſation.

Tueſday 11. Auguſt the 11th, we diſcovered Bonaviſta, one of the Cape-Verd iſlands. The next morning, the weather cleared up, after a ſhower of rain, and preſented to our ſight the iſle

iſle of Mayo. About noon we approached the iſle of San Jago, and anchored at three o'clock in the afternoon in Porto-Praya. 1772. AUGUST.

Early the next morning we went on ſhore, and viſited the commandant of the fort, Don Joſeph de Sylva, a good-natured man, who ſpoke the French imperfectly, and introduced us to the governor-general of the Cape-Verd iſlands. This gentleman, whoſe name was Don Joachim Salama Saldanha de Lobos, commonly reſides at St. Jago, the capital of the iſland; but as he was very ſickly, which his complexion witneſſed for him, he had retired hither about two months ago, where the air is reckoned more ſalubrious. He occupied the apartments of the commandant, who was now obliged to dwell in a wretched cottage, and who gave us ſome information relative to theſe iſlands. Thurſday 13.

In 1449, Antonio Nolli, probably by others named Antoniotto, a Genoeſe in the ſervice of Don Henry, Infante of Portugal, diſcovered ſome of the Cape-Verd iſlands, and on the firſt of May landed on one of them, which had its name from thence. St. Jago was ſeen at the ſame time. In 1460, another voyage was undertaken in order to ſettle them; and on this occaſion the remaining iſlands were likewiſe diſcovered. San Jago is the greateſt of them, and about ſeventeen leagues in length. The capital, of the ſame name, lies in the interior parts of the country, and is the ſee of the biſhop of all the Cape-

1772. AUGUST. Verd iſlands. This iſle is divided into eleven pariſhes, and the moſt populous of theſe contains about four thouſand houſes, ſo that it is but very thinly inhabited.

Porto-Praya ſtands on a ſteep rock, to which we climbed by a ſerpentine path. Its fortifications are old decayed walls on the ſea ſide, and fences, ſcarce breaſt-high, made of looſe ſtones, towards the land. A ſmall church is incloſed within theſe walls, towards the ſea; but, beſides it, there are only a few cottages. A tolerable building, at a little diſtance from the fort, belongs to a company of merchants at Liſbon, who have the excluſive right to trade to all the Cape-Verd iſlands, and keep an agent here for that purpoſe. When we made application to this indolent Don, by the Governor's direction, to be ſupplied with live cattle, he indeed promiſed to furniſh as many as we wanted, but we never got more than a ſingle lean bullock. The company perfectly tyrannizes over the inhabitants, and ſells them wretched merchandize at exorbitant prices.

The natives of St. Jago are few in number, of a middle ſtature, ugly, and almoſt perfectly black, with frizzled woolly hair, and thick lips, like the moſt ill-looking kind of negroes. The ingenious and very learned Canon Pauw, at Xanten, in his Recherches Philoſophiques ſur les Americains, vol. I. p. 186. ſeems to take it for granted, that they are the deſcendants of the firſt Portugueſe ſettlers, gradually degenerated through nine generations (three hundred

hundred years) to their preſent hue, which we found darker than he deſcribes it. But whether, according to his and the Abbé de Manet's * opinion, this change of complexion was effected merely by the heat of the torrid zone, or whether they have acquired their ſable colour by intermarriages with negroes from the adjacent coaſt of Africa, is a queſtion which I do not venture to decide, though ſo able and judicious an inveſtigator of nature as Count Buffon, aſſerts, that "the colours of the human ſpecies depend principally on the climate." See Hiſtoire Naturelle, in 12mo, vol. VI. p. 260. At preſent there are very few white people among them, and I believe we did not ſee above five or ſix, including the governor, commandant, and company's agent. In ſome of the iſlands, even the governors and prieſts are taken from among the blacks. The better ſort of them wear ragged European cloaths, which they have obtained by barter from ſhips that touched here, previous to the eſtabliſhment of the monopolizing company. The reſt content themſelves with a few ſeparate articles of dreſs, either a ſhirt, or a waiſtcoat, or a pair of breeches, or a hat; and ſeem to be well pleaſed with their own appearance. The women are ugly, and wear a long ſlip of ſtriped cotton over the ſhoulders, hanging down to the knees before and behind; but children

1772. AUGUST.

* See his Nouvelle Hiſtoire de l'Afrique Françoiſe, enrichie de Cartes, &c. a Paris, 1767, 12mo, vol. II. p. 224.

1772. AUGUST. are perfectly naked till the age of puberty. Deſpotic governors, bigotted prieſts, and indolence on the part of the court of Liſbon, will always keep theſe people in a wretched ſituation, beneath that of any community of negroes in Africa, and prevent them from increaſing their numbers, which are the real wealth of a nation. It is natural for people whoſe ſolids are relaxed in a fervid climate, to incline to ſloth and lazineſs; but they are confirmed in theſe vices, and muſt become indifferent to improvement, when they know the attempt would only make their ſituation more irkſome. With a kind of gloomy inſenſibility they give themſelves up to beggary, the only ſtate which can protect them from the greedy clutches of tyrannical maſters; and they ſhun every labour, which muſt encreaſe the treaſures of others without benefit to themſelves; and which only breaks in upon thoſe hours of reſt, that are now the ſolace of their precarious condition. Such clouded proſpects, that never admit a gleam of happineſs, cannot be incitements to marriage, and the difficulty of ſupporting a wretched exiſtence, is a ſufficient reaſon to decline the cares annexed to the relation of parents. Let us add to this, that the dry ſoil, whoſe fertility depends on the ſtated return of annual rains, is parched up whenever a drought takes place; all vegetation is then deſtroyed, and an inevitable famine ſucceeds. It may be reaſonably ſuppoſed, that the experience

experience of ſuch fatal periods, deters the inhabitants from indulging in the ſweets of conjugal connections, when they muſt apprehend that miſery, and perhaps the horrors of ſlavery, await their unhappy offſpring *. 1772. AUGUST.

The Cape-Verd iſlands in general are mountainous, but their lower hills, which are covered with a fine verdure, have a very gentle declivity, and extenſive vallies run between them. They are ill ſupplied with water, which in many of them is only found in pits or wells. St. Jago has, however, a tolerable river running into the ſea at Ribeira Grande, a town which takes its name from thence. At Porto-Praya there was only a ſingle well ſet round with looſe ſtones, and containing muddy brackiſh water, in ſuch ſmall quantities, that we drew it quite dry twice a day. The valley by the ſide of the fort ſeems to have ſome moiſture, and is planted here and there with cocoa-nut-palms, ſugar-canes, bananas, cotton, goava, and papaw-trees; but the greateſt part of it is over-run with various ſorts of bruſhwood, and another is left for paſtures.

* On our return to the Cape of Good Hope, in 1775, we were told of a general famine which had happened in the Cape-Verd iſlands in 1773 and 1774, and which had riſen to ſuch a height that hundreds of people had periſhed for want. The commander of a Dutch ſhip, which touched at St. Jago during this diſtreſsful ſeaſon, received ſeveral of the natives, with their wives and children, who ſold themſelves to him, in order to eſcape the dreadful conſequences of want. He carried them to the Cape of Good Hope, and ſold them; but when the Government there was informed of it, he was ordered to redeem them at his own expence, to carry them back to their native country, and to bring a certificate from the Portugueſe governor, importing the excution of theſe orders.

We

1772. AUGUST. We may perhaps conclude from hence, that the Cape-Verd iſlands in the hands of an active, enterpriſing, or commercial nation, would become intereſting and uſeful, and might be cultivated to the greateſt advantage. The cochineal-plant, indigo, ſome ſpices, and perhaps coffee, would thrive particularly well in this hot and parched climate; and theſe productions would be ſufficient to ſupply the natives not only with the neceſſaries, but likewiſe with the conveniencies and luxuries of life, under the benign influence of a free and equal government, like that under which we have the happineſs to live in this country. Inſtead of feeding on a ſcanty allowance of roots, we ſhould ſee their board heaped with plenty, and convenient houſes would then ſupply the place of wretched hovels.

Some of the lower hills were dry and barren, ſcarce any plants growing upon them; but others had ſtill ſome verdure on them, though we were now at the end of the dry ſeaſon. They are all covered with abundance of ſtones, which appear to have been burnt, and are a ſpecies of lava. The ſoil, which is fertile enough in the vallies, is a kind of rubbiſh of cinders, and ochreous aſhes; and the rocks on the ſea-ſhore are likewiſe black and burnt. It is therefore probable, that this iſland has undergone a change from volcanic eruptions; and it will not be deemed unreaſonable to form the ſame opinion of all the Cape-

Verd

Verd iſlands, when we conſider that one of them, the iſland of Fuogo, ſtill conſiſts of a burning mountain. The interior mountains of the country are lofty, and ſome of them appear ſteep and craggy, being perhaps of a more ancient date than the volcanic parts which we could examine. 1772. AUGUST.

In the evening we returned on board; but as the ſurf ran conſiderably higher than at our landing, we were obliged to ſtrip in order to wade to our boats, which our beſt ſwimmers had loaded with water-caſks, and ſuch refreſhments as could be purchaſed on ſhore; not without ſome danger of being hurt by ſharks, which are numerous in the harbour. The captains, aſtronomers, and maſters, had ſpent this day in making aſtronomical obſervations upon the little iſlet in the harbour, named *Ilha dos Codornizes*, or Quail iſland, from the birds which are in great plenty upon it. The commandant of the fort informed us, that the officers of a French frigate had likewiſe made aſtronomical obſervations on this identical ſpot ſome time ago, having ſeveral watches of a new conſtruction on board *.

The next day captain Cook invited the governor-general, and the commandant to dinner, and we ſtaid on board, in order to act as interpreters on this occaſion. The cap- Friday 14.

* This was the Iſis frigate, commanded by M. de Fleurieu, on board of which was M. Pingré, with ſeveral time keepers. A journal of the voyage and obſervations made in that ſhip, has ſince been publiſhed in 2 vols. quarto.

tain

1772. AUGUST. tain ſent them his own boat; but when it came on ſhore, the governor begged to be excuſed, becauſe he was always affected with ſickneſs on board any veſſel, whether at ſea or in harbour. The commandant promiſed to come, but having at firſt neglected to aſk the governor's leave, the latter retired to take his *ſieſta* (or afternoon's repoſe) and no one ventured to diſturb him.

The extreme ſcarcity of refreſhments made our ſtay at Porto-Praya very ſhort. We were therefore obliged to content ourſelves with a few caſks of brackiſh water, a ſingle bullock, a few long-legged goats, with ſtrait horns and pendulous ears, ſome lean hogs, turkies, and fowls, and a few hundreds of unripe oranges, and indifferent bananas. The reſearches we had made the preceding day, furniſhed us with a few tropical plants, moſtly of known ſpecies, with ſome new kinds of inſects and of fiſh. We alſo obſerved ſeveral ſorts of birds, and among them guinea-hens, which ſeldom fly, but run very ſwiftly, and which, when old, are very tough and dry eating. Quails and red-legged partridges are likewiſe common, according to the report of the natives, though we did not ſee any; but the moſt remarkable bird we found is a ſpecies of Kingfiſher *, becauſe it feeds on large land-crabs of a blue

* The ſame ſpecies is found in Arabia Felix; vide Forſkal Fauna Arabica; as alſo in Abyſſinia, as appears from the elegant and valuable drawings of James Bruce, Eſq.

and

and red colour, whoſe numerous habitations are round and deep holes in the dry and parched ſoil. Our ſailors, who catch at every thing that may afford them diverſion, purchaſed about fifteen or twenty monkies, known by the name of St. Jago, or green monkies *(ſimia ſabæa)*; which were a little bigger than cats, and of a greeniſh-brown colour, with black faces and paws. On each ſide of their mouth, they had a kind of pouch (like many others of the monkey tribe) which the Engliſh in the Weſt-Indian colonies, call by their Spaniſh name *alforjes.* The antic tricks of theſe little monkies were amuſing for ſome days, while their novelty laſted; but they ſoon became inſipid companions, were neglected, ſometimes cruelly bandied about the veſſel, and ſtarved to death for want of freſh food, ſo that only three of them reached the Cape of Good Hope. A harmleſs race of animals, dragged from the happy receſs of native ſhades, to wear out the reſt of their lives in continual anguiſh and torment, deſerve a pitying remembrance, though humanity would fain have drawn the veil over all acts of iron-hearted inſenſibility, and wanton barbariſm. 1772. AUGUST.

We got under ſail in the evening and ſteered to the ſouthward, having mild weather with frequent ſhowers of rain on the following days, and the wind blowing from N. E. by N. to N. N. E. On the 16th, at eight o'clock in the evening, we ſaw a luminous fiery meteor, of an ob- Sunday 16.

August. 1772. long ſhape and blueiſh colour, and having a very quick deſcending motion: its courſe was N. W. and it diſappeared in the horizon after a momentary duration. Our diſtance from St. Jago was fifty-five leagues at noon, notwithſtanding which, we ſaw a ſwallow following our veſſel, and making numberleſs circles round it. The neceſſary manœuvres of trimming the ſails, in the evening diſturbed it from its rooſt on one of the gun-ports, upon which it took ſhelter in the carved work of the ſtern. The two following days it continued to attend the ſhip on her courſe. During this time we obſerved many bonitos in the ſea around us, which frequently ſhot paſt us with great velocity; but notwithſtanding our endeavours to catch them with hooks, and ſtrike them with harpoons, we could not take a ſingle one. The crew were more ſucceſsful in hooking a ſhark of about five feet in length. Its common attendants, the pilot-fiſh (*gaſteroſteus ductor*) and ſucking-fiſh *(echeneis remora)*, likewiſe appeared with it; but with this difference, that the former carefully avoided being caught, and ſwam about very nimbly; but the latter ſtuck ſo faſt to the ſhark's body, that four of them were hauled on deck with it. We dined on part of the ſhark the next day, and found it a tolerable food when fried, but rather of difficult digeſtion on account of its fat.

Tueſday 18.

Two

Two days after, Henry Smock, one of the carpenter's crew, being employed on the ſides of the ſhip, was ſuddenly miſſed, and probably had fallen over-board and was drowned. His good-natured character, and a kind of ſerious turn of mind cauſed him to be regretted *even* among his ſhipmates, and muſt embitter his loſs to thoſe, whom the tender ties of parental or conjugal affection had united to him. Humanity ſtole a tear from each feeling traveller, the tribute due to a rational fellow creature of a gentle and amiable diſpoſition. 1772. AUGUST. Thurſday 20.

We had frequent ſhowers after leaving St. Jago, and experienced a remarkable heavy fall of rain on the 21ſt, during which we caught up ſeven puncheons of freſh water in our ſpread awnings. This ſupply, though we were not diſtreſſed for want of it, was however very ſeaſonable, inaſmuch as we were now enabled to give large allowance of this neceſſary element to the crew. Captain Cook's remark deduced from long experience, that abundance of freſh water contributes to the preſervation of health in long voyages, is extremely judicious, and ſeems to be founded on the known principles of phyſiology. If ſeamen have plenty of water to drink, and ſome to waſh themſelves and their linen, this eſſential precaution will in a great meaſure prevent the ſea-ſcurvy from gaining ground among them. Their blood is diluted, and the waſte of fluids cauſed by profuſe perſpiration in hot cli- Friday 21.

1772. AUGUST. mates, is reſtored by plentiful drinking, and the inſenſible perſpiration likewiſe goes on without a check, when the people frequently ſhift their linen, and waſh off any uncleanlineſs that may obſtruct the pores. It is evident that the greateſt danger of putrid diſtempers is thus precluded; ſince the reimbibing of perſpired matter, and the violence of perſpiration without a freſh ſupply to temper and dilute the ſaline and cauſtic quality of the remaining fluids, (which are often ſuppoſed to be the cauſes of inflammatory fevers) are both in a great meaſure prevented.

The heavy rains of this morning, entirely ſoaked the plumage of the poor ſwallow, which had accompanied us for ſeveral days paſt; it was obliged therefore to ſettle on the railing of the quarter-deck, and ſuffered itſelf to be caught. I dried it, and when it was recovered, let it fly about in the ſteerage, where, far from repining at its confinement, it immediately began to feed upon the flies, which were numerous there. At dinner we opened the windows, and the ſwallow retook its liberty; but about ſix in the evening, it returned into the ſteerage and cabin, being ſenſible that we intended it no harm. Having taken another repaſt of flies, it went out again, and rooſted that night ſomewhere on the outſide of the veſſel. Early the next morning our ſwallow returned into the cabin once more, and took its breakfaſt of flies. Emboldened by

by the ſhelter which we afforded it, and the little diſturbance it ſuffered from us, the poor little bird now ventured to enter the ſhip at every port and ſcuttle which was open; ſome part of the morning it paſſed very happily in Mr. Wales's cabin; but after having left that it entirely diſappeared. It is more than probable that it came into the birth of ſome unfeeling perſon, who caught it in order to provide a meal for a favourite cat. 1772. AUGUST.

From the hiſtory of this bird, which was of the common ſpecies, or a houſe-ſwallow *(hirundo ruſtica* Lin.) we may deduce the circumſtances that bring ſolitary land-birds a great way out to ſea. It ſeems to be probable, that they begin with following a ſhip, from the time ſhe leaves the land; that they are ſoon loſt in the great ocean, and are thus obliged to continue cloſe to the ſhip, as the only ſolid maſs in this immenſe fluid expanſe. If two or more ſhips are in company, it is alſo eaſy to account for the expreſſion of *meeting with* land-birds at a great diſtance from land; becauſe they may happen to follow ſome other ſhip from the ſhore, than that which carries the obſerver; thus they may eſcape obſervation for a day or two, or perhaps longer, and when noticed, are ſuppoſed to be *met with* at ſea. However, great ſtorms are ſometimes known to have driven ſingle birds, nay vaſt flocks out to ſea, which are obliged to ſeek for reſt on board of

ſhips,

1772. AUGUST. ſhips, at conſiderable diſtances from any land*. I ſhall venture another reflection on this incident. In the long ſolitary hours of an uniform navigation, every little circumſtance becomes intereſting to the paſſenger; it is therefore not to be wondered at, if a ſubject ſo trifling in itſelf as putting to death a harmleſs bird, ſhould affect a heart not yet buffeted into inſenſibility.

Sunday 23. On the 23d, ſeveral cetaceous fiſh, from fifteen to twenty feet long paſſed the ſhip, directing their courſe to the N. and N. W. They were ſuppoſed to be grampuſſes,

Tueſday 25. *(delphinus orca)*. Two days after the ſame kind of fiſh, and a number of leſſer ones of a browniſh colour, called *ſkip-jacks*, from leaping frequently out of the water, were obſerved. The wind for ſeveral days paſt had blown from the N. W. and obliged us to take a S. E. courſe, ſo that we were now got to the ſouthward of the coaſt of Guinea. Several of our navigators, who had frequently croſſed the Atlantic, looked upon this as a ſingular circumſtance; and indeed it fairly proves, that though nature in the torrid zone commonly produces regular and conſtant winds, nevertheleſs it ſometimes deviates even there from general

* Captain Cook very obligingly communicated to me a fact which confirms the above aſſertion. Being on board of a ſhip between Norway and England, he met with a violent ſtorm, during which a flight of ſeveral hundred birds covered the whole rigging of the ſhip. Among numbers of ſmall birds, he obſerved ſeveral hawks, which lived very luxuriouſly by preying on thoſe poor defenceleſs creatures.

rules,

rules, and admits of ſeveral exceptions. In this ſituation we alſo obſerved ſeveral man-of-war birds, (*pelecanus aquilus.*) It is a common belief among ſailors that their appearance denotes a vicinity of land; but we were at preſent above a hundred leagues from any ſhore, ſo that this opinion ſeems to have no better ſupport than many old prejudices. Each eradication of one of theſe is a gain to ſcience; and each vulgar opinion, proved to be erroneous, is an approximation to TRUTH, which *alone* is worthy of being recorded for the uſe of mankind. 1772. SEPTEMBER.

On the firſt of September, ſeveral dolphins, (*coryphæna hippurus,*) were ſeen; and we likewiſe took notice of a large fiſh cloſe to us, perfectly reſembling the figure of a fiſh given in Willoughby's Hiſtor. Piſcium, appendix pag. 5. tab. 9. f. 3. which is taken from John Nieuhoff's account, and which the Dutch call *zee-duyvel*, or ſea-devil. In its external ſhape it was ſimilar to the genus of rays, but ſeems to be a new ſpecies; from whence it is evident, that even in the moſt frequented ſeas, ſuch as the Atlantic, many new diſcoveries in natural hiſtory might be made, if thoſe who can diſtinguiſh unknown from known objects, had always opportunities of enquiring into them. Tueſday 1.

On the third of September great numbers of flying-fiſhes were obſerved, and a bonito (*ſcomber pelamys*) was caught, whoſe meat we found to be dry and leſs palatable than it is generally repreſented. We were lucky enough Thurſday 3.

two

1742. SEPTEMBER. Saturday 5. two days after to take a dolphin, (*coryphæna hippurus*,) which is likewiſe dry meat; but the inimitable brightneſs of its colours, which continually change from one rich hue to another whilſt it is drying, is, in my opinion, one of the moſt admirable appearances which can occur to the voyager's view during a tropical navigation.

> But here deſcription clouds each ſhining ray;
> What terms of art can NATURE's pow'rs diſplay?
>
> FALCONER.

A boat was this day hoiſted out in order to find the direction of the current, and to determine the temperature of the ſea-water at a great depth. We ſounded with 250 fathoms, without finding any bottom. The thermometer in the air ſtood at 75½ deg. dipped under the ſurface of the ſea it ſhewed 74 deg. and after being let down to the depth of 85 fathoms and hauled up again, it was fallen to 66 deg. It ſtaid 30′ under water, and was 27½ in hawling up. Our latitude at noon was 0° 52′ north. The boat being out, we had an opportunity of examining that kind of blubber, or ſea-nettle, which Linnæus has named *meduſa pelagica*; together with another ſubmarine animal called *doris lævis*, and employed ourſelves in making drawings of them, and more minute deſcriptions than have hitherto been publiſhed.

Wedneſday 9. On the 9th, having paſſed the line with a light air, our crew ducked ſuch of their ſhipmates as had never croſſed it before,

before, and did not care to redeem themſelves by paying a certain forfeit of brandy. Thoſe who had been obliged to undergo the briny ſubmerſion, changed their linen and clothes; and as this can never be done too often, eſpecially in warm weather, the ducking proved a ſalutary operation to them. The quantity of ſtrong liquors, ariſing from the forfeits of the reſt, ſerved to heighten the jovial humour, which is the predominant characteriſtic of ſailors. This day we likewiſe obtained a ſoutherly wind, which gradually came round to S. by E. and S. S. E. and ſettled into the uſual trade-wind. 1772. SEPTEMBER.

This day we caught ſeveral dolphins, and a flying-fiſh one foot long fell on the quarter-deck. Ever ſince the 8th we had daily obſerved ſeveral aquatic birds, ſuch as man of war birds, boobies *(pelecanus aquilus & ſula)* petrels, gulls, and tropic-birds *(phaëton æthereus.)* We had alſo at various intervals, found the ſea covered with animals belonging to the claſs of *molluſca*, one of which, of a blue colour, in ſhape like a ſnail, with four arms, divided into many branches, was named *glaucus atlanticus*; another, tranſparent like a cryſtal, and often connected in a long ſtring with individuals of the ſame ſpecies, was referred to the genus named *dagyſa*, mentioned in Lieut. Cook's voyage in the Endeavour *. Two other ſpecies of molluſca, which Monday 14.

* See Hawkeſworth's compilation, vol. II. p. 2.

1772. SEPTEMBER. ſeamen call *ſallee*, and *Portugueſe* men of war, *(meduſa velella & holothuria phyſalis)* likewiſe appeared about our veſſel in great abundance.

Sunday 27. On the 27th we tried the direction of the currents, and the temperature of the ſea again, with nearly the ſame reſult as before. The thermometer, which in open air ſtood at 72 ½ deg. and under the ſurface of the ſea at 70 deg. after being let down 80 fathom, ſunk to 68 deg. It continued 15 min. under water, and was hauled up in 7 min. We likewiſe took up a new ſpecies of the blubber (*meduſa.*) For two days paſt, we had obſerved a bird, which we were this day enabled to examine, when we knew it to be the common ſhear-water (*procellaria puffinus.*) Having now reached the latitude of twenty-five degrees ſouth, we found the wind gradually coming round from E. by S. to E. by N. and to N. E. which enabled us to ſteer to the ſouth-eaſtward. Our bodies, which the heat of the torrid zone had in a great degree relaxed, now began to feel a conſiderable alteration in the climate, and though the thermometer was not above ten degrees different from what it uſed to be near the line, yet I contracted a violent cold, attended with the tooth-ach, ſwelled gums, and cheeks.

OCTOBER. Sunday 4. On the fourth of October, we obſerved great numbers of the common little petrel, of a ſooty brown, with white rumps *(procellaria pelagica)*, and found the air cold and ſharp.

The

The next day the albatroſs, *(diomedea exulans)* and the pintadas *(procellaria capenſis)*, made their firſt appearance. 1772. OCTOBER.

On the 11th it was mild and almoſt calm, after ſeveral days of hazy and ſqually weather, which had probably ſharpened the appetite of the ſea birds, and eſpecially the pintadas; for theſe laſt eagerly ſwallowed hooks baited with pieces of pork or mutton, and no leſs than eight of them were caught in a ſhort time. In the evening we obſerved an eclipſe of the moon, of which the end at a medium happened at 6h. 58′ 45″ p. m. our latitude at noon being 34° 45′ ſouth. Sunday 11.

The next day we tried the current and the temperature of the ſea a third time. We let down the thermometer 100 fathoms, where it continued 20 min. was hauled up in 7 min. more, and then ſhewed 58 deg. At the ſurface it ſtood at 59 deg. and in the air at 60 deg. It being calm, we employed ourſelves in the boat with ſhooting ſea-fowl; among which were a ſmall tern, a ſhear-water, a new ſpecies of albatroſs, and a new petrel: Several animals of the molluſca tribe likewiſe came within our reach, together with the *helix janthina*, a violet-coloured ſhell, remarkable for the extreme thinneſs of its texture, which breaks with the leaſt preſſure, and ſeems therefore entirely calculated to keep the open ſea, or at leaſt to ſhun

1772. OCTOBER. rocky ſhores *, agreeably to the obſervation in Lieutenant Cook's voyage in the Endeavour. Albatroſſes, pintadas, and petrels of all kinds, amongſt which was alſo the fulmar, (*procellaria glacialis*,) were now daily obſerved.

On the 17th, we had an alarm that one of our crew was overboard, upon which we immediately put about, but ſeeing nothing, the names of all perſons on board the veſſel were called over, and none found miſſing, to our great ſatisfaction. Our friends on board the Adventure, whom we viſited a few days after, told us they had indeed ſuſpected by our manœuvre, the accident which we had apprehended, but that looking out on the ſea, Capt. Furneaux had plainly obſerved a ſea-lion, that had been the cauſe of this falſe alarm.

* See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. II. p. 14. We find another remark at the end of that above quoted, which is of very different value, and ſeems to indicate that the ancient authors were not conſulted. Whoever has looked into Pliny, can never have the leaſt idea that the thin ſhell afore-mentioned could be "*the purpura* of the ancients." They had ſeveral kinds of ſhells, which yielded the purple dye, but theſe were all rock-ſhells. *Earum genera plura, pabulo et* SOLO *diſcreta*, lib. ix. cap. 61. *Exquiruntur omnes* SCOPULI *gætuli muricibus ac purpuris*, lib. v. cap. 1. It is equally clear and uncontrovertible that the figure and hardneſs of their purple ſhells were very different from thoſe of the little *helix janthina*. PURPURA *vocatur, cuniculatim procurrente roſtro et cuniculi latere introrſus tubulato qua proferatur lingua*, lib. ix. cap. 61.—*Lingua purpuræ longitudine digitalis quâ paſcitur, perforando reliqua conchylia, tanta* DURITIA *aculeo eſt*, lib. ix. cap. 60.—*Præterea clavatum eſt ad turbinem uſque aculeis in orbem ſeptenis fere*, lib. ix. cap. 61. Don Antonio Ulloa, in his voyage to South-America, book IV. chap. 8. may be conſulted on the ſubject.

On

On the 19th we had a great ſouthern ſwell, and ſaw a large whale, and likewiſe a fiſh of the ſhark genus, of a whitiſh colour, with two dorſal-fins, and its length about eighteen or twenty feet. As we had been a conſiderable time at ſea, the Captain had for ſome weeks paſt ordered ſour-krout (or cabbage ſliced and fermented) to be regularly ſerved to the crew, at a pint per man on meat-days, which was four times a week. The Lords of the Admiralty, attentive to every circumſtance which bids fair to preſerve the health of ſeafaring men, had ordered a very conſiderable quantity of this ſalutary and palatable food to be put on board both of the ſhips, and the event has proved that it is one of the beſt prophylactics againſt the ſea-ſcurvy. 1772. OCTOBER. Monday 19.

On the 24th, the Adventure being a great way aſtern, the captain ordered a boat to be hoiſted out, and ſeveral officers and other gentlemen went a ſhooting, which gave us a freſh opportunity of examining the two ſorts of albatroſſes, and a large black ſpecies of ſhear-water, *(procellaria æquinoctialis.)* Our navigation, which for nine weeks paſt had been out of ſight of any land, began to appear dull and tedious, and ſeemed to be diſtreſſing to many who were not uſed to an uniform recluſe life on board a ſhip, without any refreſhments or variety of ſcenes. We ſhould have found this long paſſage equally diſagreeable, if it had not ſupplied us with employment from time to time, Saturday 24.

1772. OCTOBER. time, and nurſed the hope of making many intereſting diſcoveries relative to the ſcience of nature.

Thurſday 29. On the 29th, early in the morning, we diſcovered the land of the extremity of Africa, covered with clouds and fog; and ſeveral gannets and ſmall diving-petrels, together with ſome wild ducks, came out to ſea from thence. Soon after the land diſappeared entirely, and we could not ſee it again till three o'clock in the afternoon, when its parts were much plainer, though the clouds ſtill involved them. The wind blowing freſh, and the Adventure being a great way a-ſtern, we could not venture to get into the Table bay during night, but ſtood off and on till the next morning, having thick ſqually weather, and heavy ſhowers of rain.

The night was ſcarcely begun, when the water all round us afforded the moſt grand and aſtoniſhing ſight than can be imagined. As far as we could ſee the whole ocean ſeemed to be in a blaze. Every breaking wave had its ſummit illuminated by a light ſimilar to that of phoſphorus, and the ſides of the veſſel, coming in contact with the ſea, were ſtrongly marked by a luminous line. Great bodies of light moved in the water along our ſide, ſometimes ſlower, ſometimes quicker; now in the ſame direction with our courſe, now flying off from it; ſometimes we could clearly diſtinguiſh their ſhape to be that of fiſhes, which when they approached any ſmaller ones, forced

theſe

theſe to haſten away from them. Deſirous of enquiring into the cauſe of this aſtoniſhing phænomenon, we procured a bucket full of the illumined ſea-water. The moſt accurate attention to it proved, that innumerable minute ſparks, of a round ſhape, communicated this luminous appearance to the water, and moved about in it with great briſkneſs and velocity. After the water had been ſtanding for a little while, the number of ſparks ſeemed to decreaſe; but on being ſtirred again, the whole became as luminous as before. Again, as the water gradually ſubſided the ſparks were obſerved to move in directions contrary to the undulations of the water, which they did not before, whilſt the agitation was more violent, and ſeemed to carry them along with its own motions. We ſuſpended the bucket, to prevent its being too much affected by the motion of the ſhip; the bright objects by this means betrayed more and more a voluntary motion, independent of the agitation of the water cauſed by our hands, or by the rolling of the veſſel. The luminous appearance always gradually ſubſided, but on the leaſt agitation of the water, the ſparkling was renewed, in proportion as the motion was encreaſed. As I ſtirred the water with my hand, one of the luminous ſparks adhered to my finger. We examined it by the common magnifier of Mr. Ramſden's improved microſcope, and found it to be globular, tranſparent like a gelatinous ſubſtance, and ſomewhat browniſh: by 1772: OCTOBER.

1772. OCTOBER. by the greateſt magnifier we diſcovered the orifice of a little tube, which entered the body of this little atom, within which were four or five inteſtine bags connected with the tube. Having examined ſeveral of them, which had much the ſame appearance, I endeavoured to catch ſome in water, and bring them under the microſcope in a concave glaſs, where its nature and organs might be better examined: but theſe minute objects were always hurt with our touch before we could place them in the concave glaſs, and when dead only appeared as an indiſtinct maſs of floating filaments. In about two hours time the water had loſt its luminous appearance. We had another bucket full of it drawn before that time, but all our attempts to catch one of the little atoms in the glaſs proved ineffectual. Accordingly we haſtened to draw the appearance of the firſt globule, and to write down our obſervations. The moſt probable conjecture which we could form concerning theſe little atomical animalcules was, that they might be the young fry of ſome ſpecies of meduſa or blubber, though it may likewiſe be poſſible, that they are beings of a diſtinct genus.

There was a ſingularity, and a grandeur in the diſplay of this phænomenon, which could not fail of giving occupation to the mind, and ſtriking it with a reverential awe, due to Omnipotence. The ocean covered to a great extent, with myriads of animalcules; theſe little beings,

or-

organized alive, endowed with locomotive power, a quality of ſhining whenever they pleaſe, of illuminating every body with which they come in contact, and of laying aſide their luminous appearance at pleaſure: all theſe ideas crouded upon us, and bade us admire the Creator, even in his minuteſt works. It is the natural fault of young people to think too well of mankind; but I hope I ſhall not have formed too favourable an opinion of my readers, if I expect that the generality will ſympathize with me in theſe feelings, and that none will be found ignorant or depraved enough to deſpiſe them. 1772. OCTOBER.

Turrigeros elephantorum miramur humeros, taurorumque colla et truces in ſublime jactus, tigrium rapinas, leonum jubas; QUUM RERUM NATURA NUSQUAM MAGIS, QUAM IN MINIMIS TOTA SIT. Quapropter quæſo, ne noſtra legentes, quoniam ex his ſpernent multa, etiam relata faſtidio damnent, quum in contemplatione Naturæ nihil poſſit videri vacaneum. Plin. Hiſt. Nat. lib. xi. cap. 2.

The next morning, after a very rainy night, we ſailed into Table bay. The mountains at the bottom of it, now appeared clear of clouds, and ſurpriſed us with their prodigious craggy, ſteep, and barren appearance. As we advanced farther into the bay, we diſcovered the town at the foot of the black Table-mountain, and ſoon came to an anchor. After ſaluting the fort, and receiving the viſit of ſeveral officers in the ſervice of the Dutch Eaſt-India company, we went on ſhore with captains Cook and Furneaux, being prepared to meet with many new acquiſitions to ſcience, on a continent ſo diſtant from our own, and ſituated in an oppoſite hemiſphere. Friday 30.

1772.
OCTOBER.

CHAP. III.

Stay at the Cape of Good Hope.—Account of that Settlement.

WE were no ſooner landed than we all went to wait upon the governor, baron Joachim van Plettenberg, a man of a very liberal education, and extenſive knowledge, whoſe politeneſs and affability immediately gave us a good opinion of him. From him we proceeded to the other members of the council, and at laſt retired to take up our lodgings at Mr. Brand's, now commander at Falſe bay, whoſe houſe at the Cape town is commonly frequented by the Engliſh captains who happen to touch there. Almoſt every inferior officer of the Dutch Company's government, the members of the council excepted, let their ſupernumerary apartments to the officers and paſſengers in the various Engliſh, French, Daniſh, and Swediſh ſhips, which annually put in here, either on their voyage from or back to Europe.

We were not a little pleaſed with the contraſt between this colony, and the Portugueſe iſland of St. Jago. There

we

we had taken notice of a tropical country, with a tolerable appearance, and capable of improvement, but utterly neglected by its lazy and oppreſſed inhabitants; here, on the contrary, we ſaw a neat well-built town, all white, riſing in the midſt of a deſart, ſurrounded by broken maſſes of black and dreary mountains; or in other words, the picture of ſucceſsful induſtry. Its appearance towards the ſea-ſide, is not quite ſo pictureſque as that of Funchal. The ſtore-houſes of the Dutch Eaſt-India company, are all ſituated neareſt the water, and the private buildings lie beyond them on a gentle aſcent. The fort which commands the road, is on the eaſt ſide of the town, but ſeems not to be of great ſtrength; beſides which, there are ſeveral batteries on both ſides. The ſtreets in the town are broad, and regular; all the principal ones are planted with oaks, and ſome have in their middle a canal of running water, which on account of its ſmall quantity, they are obliged to huſband by ſluices, ſo that parts of it are ſometimes entirely drained, and occaſion no very pleaſant ſmell. The national character of the Dutch ſtrongly manifeſts itſelf in this particular; their ſettlements being always ſupplied with canals, though reaſon and common ſenſe evidently prove their noxious influence on the health of the inhabitants, eſpecially at Batavia.

1772. OCTOBER.

1772. OCTOBER.

Quanto præſtantius eſſet
——viridi ſi margine clauderet undas
Herba, nec ingenuum violarent marmora tophum !

JUVENAL.

The houſes are built of brick, and many of them are white waſhed on the outſide. The rooms are in general lofty and ſpacious, and very airy, which the hot climate requires. There is but one church in the whole town, and that is extremely plain, and ſeems to be rather too ſmall for the congregation. That ſpirit of toleration, which has been ſo beneficial to the Dutch government at home, is not to be met with in their colonies. It is but very lately that they have ſuffered even the Lutherans, to build churches at Batavia, and at this place; and at the preſent time, a clergyman of that perſuaſion is not tolerated at the Cape, but the inhabitants are obliged to content themſelves with the chaplains of Daniſh and Swediſh Eaſt-India-men, who give them a ſermon, and adminſter the ſacrament once or twice a year, and are very handſomely rewarded. The government, and the inhabitants do not give themſelves the trouble to attend to a circumſtance of ſo little conſequence in their eyes, as the religion of their ſlaves, who in general ſeem to have none at all. A few of them follow the Mahommedan rite, and weekly meet in a private houſe belonging to a free Mahomedan, in order to read, or rather chaunt ſeveral prayers, and

and chapters of the Koran. As they have no prieſt among them, they cannot partake of any other acts of worſhip *. 1772. OCTOBER.

The ſlaves belonging to the company, who amount to ſeveral hundreds, are lodged and boarded in a ſpacious houſe erected for that purpoſe, where they are likewiſe kept at work. Another great building ſerves as an hoſpital for the ſailors belonging to the Dutch Eaſt-India ſhips, which touch here, and commonly have prodigious numbers of ſick on board, on their voyage from Europe towards India. The vaſt number of men, ſometimes ſix, ſeven, or eight hundred, which theſe ſhips carry out to ſupply the military in India, the ſmall room to which they are confined, and the ſhort allowance of water and ſalt proviſion, they receive on a long voyage through the torrid zone, generally make conſiderable havock among them: it is therefore no uncommon circumſtance at the Cape, that a ſhip on her paſſage thither from Europe, loſes eighty or a hundred men, and ſends between two

* We would not be underſtood to throw an odium on the Dutch in particular, when it is well known that the negroes, who wear the chains of the Engliſh and French, are equally neglected: it was only intended to awaken a fellow-feeling towards an unhappy race of MEN, among the coloniſts of all nations; and to remind them whilſt they enjoy, or *ſtrive* to enjoy the ineſtimable bleſſing of liberty, to exert themſelves in acts of humanity and kindneſs, towards thoſe from whom they with-hold it, perhaps, without remorſe.

and

1772. OCTOBER. and three hundred others dangerouſly ill to the hoſpital. A fact no leſs deplorable than certain, is, that the ſmall expence and facility with which the *ziel-verkoopers* actually carry on their infamous trade of ſupplying the India company with recruits, makes them leſs attentive to the preſervation of health among theſe poor people. Nothing is more common, in this and other Dutch colonies, than to meet with ſoldiers in the company's ſervice who, upon enquiry, acknowledge they have been kidnapped in Holland. There is an apothecary's ſhop belonging to the hoſpital, where the moſt neceſſary remedies are prepared, but no expenſive drug is to be found in it, and the method of adminiſtering to all the patients indiſcriminately out of two or three huge bottles, full of different preparations, ſuffice to convince us, that the freſh air of the land, and freſh proviſions here, contribute much more to the recovery of the ſick, than the ſkill of their phyſicians. Patients who are able to walk, are ordered to go up and down the ſtreets every fair morning; and all kinds of greens, pot-herbs, ſallads, and antiſcorbutics are raiſed for their uſe in an adjacent garden belonging to the company. Travellers have ſometimes praiſed and ſometimes depreciated this garden, according to the different points of view in which it has been conſidered. It is true, a few regular walks of indifferent oaks, encompaſſed with elm and myrtle hedges, are not objects engaging enough

to

to thoſe who are uſed to admire the perfection of gardening in England, or who contemplate in Holland and France cypreſs, box, and yew trees cut out into vaſes, ſtatues, and pyramids, or *charmilles* turned into pieces of architecture! But conſidering that the trees were planted in the beginning of this century, more for uſe than ornament; that they ſhelter the kitchen-herbs for the hoſpital, againſt the deſtructive violence of ſtorms; and that they form the only ſhady and airy walks, comfortable to voyagers and ſick perſons in this hot climate, I cannot wonder that ſome ſhould extoll as "a delightful ſpot*," what others contemptuouſly call "a friar's garden †." 1772. NOVEMBER.

The day after our arrival, the aſtronomers of both ſhips, Mr. Wales and Mr. Baily, fixed their inſtruments aſhore, within a few yards of the identical ſpot where Meſſrs. Maſon and Dixon had formerly made their aſtronomical obſervations. The ſame day we began our botanical excurſions in the country about the town. The ground gradually riſes on all ſides towards the three mountains which lie round the bottom of the bay, keeping low and level only near the ſea-ſide, and growing ſomewhat marſhy in the iſthmus between the Falſe and Table bays, where a ſalt rivulet falls into the latter. The Saturday 1.

* Commodore (now admiral) BYRON. See Hawkeſworth's compilation, vol I.

† M. de Bougainville. See his Voyage round the World.

marſhy

1772. NOVEMBER. marſhy part has ſome verdure, but is intermixed with a great deal of ſand. The higher grounds, which from the ſea ſide have a parched and dreary appearance, are however covered with an immenſe variety of plants, amongſt which are a prodigious number of ſhrubs, but ſcarce one or two ſpecies that deſerve the name of trees. There are alſo a few ſmall plantations wherever a little run of water moiſtens the ground. Abundance of inſects of every ſort, ſeveral ſpecies of lizards, land-tortoiſes, and ſerpents frequent the dry ſhrubbery, together with a great variety of ſmall birds. We daily brought home ample collections of vegetables and animals, and were much ſurpriſed to find a great number, eſpecially among the latter, entirely unknown to natural hiſtorians, though gathered in fields adjacent to a town, from whence the cabinets and repoſitories of all Europe have been repeatedly ſupplied with numerous and valuable acquiſitions to the ſcience.

One of our excurſions was directed to the Table mountain. The aſcent was very ſteep, fatiguing, and difficult, on account of the number of looſe ſtones which rolled away under our feet. About the middle of the mountain we entered a bold grand chaſm, whoſe walls are perpendicular and often impending rocks, piled up in ſtrata. Small rills of water oozed out of crevices, or fell from precipices in drops, giving life to hundreds of plants and low ſhrubs in the chaſm. Another kind of vegetables, growing

growing on a drier ſoil, that ſeemed to concentrate their juices, ſpread a fine aromatic ſcent, which a gentle breeze wafted towards us from the chaſm. At laſt, after three hours walk, we reached the ſummit of the mountain. It was nearly level, very barren, and bare of ſoil; ſeveral cavities were however replete with rain-water, or contained a little vegetable earth, from whence a few odoriferous plants drew their nouriſhment. Some antelopes, howling baboons, ſolitary vultures, and toads are ſometimes to be met with on the mountain. The view from thence is very extenſive and pictureſque. The bay ſeemed a ſmall pond or baſon, and the ſhips in it dwindled to little boats: the town under our feet, and the regular compartments of its gardens, looked like the work of children. The Lion's Rump now ſeemed an inconſiderable ridge; we looked down on the ſpiry Lion's Head, and only Charles' Mount roſe as it were in competition with the Table. To the northward, Robben iſland, the Blue hills, the Tyger hills, and beyond them a noble chain of mountains, loftier than that on which we ſtood, bounded our view. A group of broken rocky maſſes incloſed Hout baay (Wood bay) to the weſt, and continuing to the ſouthward formed one ſide of the Table bay, and terminated in the famous *ſtormy* cape which king MANOEL of Portugal named the Cape of GOOD HOPE. To the ſouth-eaſt our view extended acroſs the low iſthmus between the two bays; beyond it we

1772. NOVEMBER.

1772. NOVEMBER. diſcerned the colony of Hottentot Holland, and the mountains about Stellenboſch; and on this ſide we were delighted with a number of plantations inſulated by the vaſt heath, and finely contraſting their verdure with the reſt of the country: Among them we diſtinguiſhed Conſtantia, famous in the annals of modern epicures. After a ſtay of two hours, finding the air very cold and ſharp on the mountain, we deſcended, very well pleaſed with our excurſion, and amply rewarded for the toilſome part of it, by the beauty and extent of the proſpect.

The country on the S. E. ſide of the Table mountain attracted our particular attention, on account of the number of plantations on the ſloping grounds, and the variety of plants which that part produced. Its appearance, eſpecially near the hills, is the pleaſanteſt on this ſide of the iſthmus. By the ſide of every little rivulet a plantation is ſituated, conſiſting of vineyards, corn-fields, and gardens, and commonly ſurrounded with oaks from ten to twenty feet high, which enliven the country, and afford ſhelter againſt ſtorms. The late governor Tulbagh, who is looked upon as a father to this colony, rebuilt ſeveral houſes and gardens here, for the uſe of the governors, at Rondeboſch and Nieuw-land. They are plain, and have nothing particular to recommend them, but that they are kept in the beſt order, conſiſt of ſhady walks, and are well ſupplied with water. The company's granges or ſheds are

alſo

alſo erected hereabouts; and a little farther on there is a brewery, belonging to a private man, who has the excluſive privilege of brewing beer for the Cape. In a fine valley, on the ſide of the mountain, lies the plantation called Paradiſe, remarkable for its delightful grove, and for producing ſeveral fruits, eſpecially ſuch as belong to tropical climates, which come to great perfection there. Alphen, the ſeat of Mr. Kerſte, (at that time commander in Falſe bay) was the boundary of our excurſions on this ſide. We were here received with real hoſpitality, which our worthy hoſt had brought from Germany, his native country. During a few days it was the centre of our botanical rambles, which always furniſhed us with an abundant harveſt, and gave us the greateſt apprehenſions that with all our efforts, we alone would be unequal to the taſk of collecting, deſcribing, drawing, and preſerving (all at the ſame time) ſuch multitudes of ſpecies, in countries where every one we gathered would in all probability be a nondeſcript. It was therefore of the utmoſt importance, if we meant not to neglect any branch of natural knowledge, to endeavour to find an aſſiſtant well qualified to go hand and hand with us in our undertakings. We were fortunate enough to meet with a man of ſcience, Dr. Sparrman, at this place, who after ſtudying under the father of botany, the great Sir Charles Linné, had made a voyage to China, and another to the Cape in purſuit of knowledge.

1772. NOVEMBER.

1772. NOVEMBER. The idea of gathering the treaſures of nature in countries hitherto unknown to Europe, filled his mind ſo entirely, that he immediately engaged to accompany us on our circumnavigation; in the courſe of which, I am proud to ſay, we have found him an enthuſiaſt in his ſcience, well verſed in medical knowledge, and endowed with a heart capable of the warmeſt feelings, and worthy of a philoſopher. But far from meeting with ſuch great diſcoveries in natural hiſtory, as had been made in Lieut. Cook's firſt voyage on a new continent *, we were obliged to content ourſelves with the produce of a few ſmall iſlands, which we could imperfectly inveſtigate in the ſhort ſpaces of ſometimes a few hours, or a few days, or to the utmoſt of a few weeks, in unfavourable ſeaſons.

During our ſtay at the Cape, the people on board our ſhip ſet up the rigging, ſcrubbed and payed the ſides, and took in ſtore ſome brandy and other neceſſary articles of proviſion for the crew, together with ſeveral ſheep for the captains and officers. Several rams and ewes were likewiſe brought aboard, intended as preſents to the natives of the South-Sea; but the length of the voyage, and our run to the frozen zone, reduced them ſo much, that this uſeful purpoſe was entirely defeated. In order to purſue our reſearches after natural knowledge, with greater cer-

* New Holland.

tainty

tainty of ſucceſs, we likewiſe bought a water-ſpaniel here, in hopes that this animal would prove uſeful in fetching any game which fell out of our reach. It was with great difficulty we could meet with one, and we were obliged to pay an exhorbitant price for it; though it afterwards proved of little ſervice. It may ſeem ſuperfluous to mention ſo trifling an occurrence as this, but I believe it is hardly imagined, how great a number of little objects are to be attended to among many weightier concerns, by a traveller who means to improve his time to the utmoſt advantage. 1772. NOVEMBER.

On the 22d we brought all our baggage on board, and the ſame day we ſailed from Table bay. Previous to the mention of farther occurrences, I ſhall here endeavour to give a ſuccinct account of the ſtate of this Dutch colony, which it is hoped will afford ſatisfactory inſtruction to my readers.

The ſouthermoſt extremity of Africa, circumnavigated ſo early as the times of the Egyptian king Necho, and again in the reign of Ptolemæus Lathyrus*, was once more

* The proofs of this aſſertion are enumerated in Schmidt Opuſc. diſſ. iv. *de commerc. & navigation. Ægyptior.* p. 160. and more fully in Schlözer Handlungs Geſchichte (or Hiſtory of Commerce) p. 300. Herodotus expreſsly ſays, that Africa is ſurrounded by the ſea, and that this was found out by ſome Phœnician mariners ſent out for that purpoſe by Pharaoh Necho from the Red Sea, who returned by the Mediterranean, lib. iv. cap. 42. Strabo, lib. ii. alſo mentions the expedition of one Eudoxus round Africa, in the reign of Ptolemy Lathyrus; and according to Pliny, the Carthaginians likewiſe have explored the

1772. NOVEMBER. diſcovered in later times, by Bartolomeo Diaz, a Portugueſe navigator, in the year 1487. Vaſco de Gama was the firſt who made a voyage to India round it in 1497, which was looked upon as a kind of prodigy. It remained however uſeleſs to Europeans till the year 1650, when Van-Riebeck, a Dutch ſurgeon, firſt ſaw the advantage that would accrue to the Eaſt-India Company in Holland, from a ſettlement at ſo convenient a diſtance both from home and from India. The colony which he founded, has ever ſince continued in the hands of the Dutch, and increaſed in value for a conſiderable time after his deceaſe.

The governor depends immediately upon the Eaſt-India Company, and has the rank of an *Edele Heer*, the title given to the members of the ſupreme council of Batavia. He preſides here over a council conſiſting of the ſecond, or deputy governor, the fiſcal, the major (who commands the fort), the ſecretary, the treaſurer, the comptroller of proviſions, the comptroller of liquors, and the book-keeper; each of which has a branch of the Company's commerce aſſigned to his care. This council has the whole management of the civil and military departments, but the deputy-governor preſides over another, named the court of

the coaſt of that continent. Hiſt. Nat. lib. ii. cap. 67. *Et Hanno, Carthaginis potentia florente, circumvectus a Gadibus ad finem Arabiæ, navigationem eam prodidit ſcripto.*

juſtice,

juſtice, which tries all offences and crimes, and conſiſts of ſome of the members of the former; but no two relations can ſit and have vote in the ſame council, to prevent the influence of parties. 1772. NOVEMBER.

The income of the governor is very conſiderable, for beſides a fixed appointment, and the uſe of houſes, gardens, proper furniture, and every thing that belongs to his table, he receives about ten dollars for every leagre of wine which the Company buy of the farmer, in order to be exported to Batavia. The company allows the ſum of forty dollars for each leagre, of which the farmer receives but twenty-four; what remains is ſhared between the governor, and ſecond or deputy, the former taking two thirds, which ſometimes are ſaid to amount to 4000 dollars per annum. The ſecond governor has the direction of the company's whole commerce here, and ſigns all orders to the different departments under him, as well as the governor to others. He and the fiſcal have the rank of *upper koopman*. The fiſcal is at the head of the police, and ſees the penal laws put in execution; his income conſiſts of fines, and of the duties laid on certain articles of commerce, but if he be ſtrict in exacting them, he is univerſally deteſted. The found policy of the Dutch have likewiſe found it neceſſary to place the fiſcal as a check, to over-awe the other officers of the company, that they may not counteract the intereſts of their maſters, or infringe the laws

1772. NOVEMBER. laws of the mother country. He is to that end, commonly well verſed in juridical affairs, and depends ſolely upon the mother country. The major (at preſent Mr. Von Prehn, who received us with great politeneſs) has the rank of *koopman* or merchant: this circumſtance ſurpriſes a ſtranger, who in all other European ſtates, is uſed to ſee military honours confer diſtinction and precedence, and appears ſtill more ſingular to one who knows the contraſt in this particular between Holland and Ruſſia, where the idea of military rank is annexed to every place, even that of a profeſſor at the univerſity. The number of regular ſoldiers at this colony amounts to about 700, of which 400 form the garriſon of the fort, near the Cape town. The inhabitants capable of bearing arms form a militia of 4000 men, of whom a conſiderable part may be aſſembled in a few hours, by means of ſignals made from alarm places in different parts of the country. We may from hence make ſome eſtimate of the number of white people in this colony, which is at preſent ſo extenſive, that the diſtant ſettlements are above a month's journey from the Cape; but theſe remote parts lie ſometimes more than a day's journey from each other, are ſurrounded by various nations of Hottentots, and too frequently feel the want of protection from their own government at that diſtance. The ſlaves in the colony are at leaſt in the proportion of five or more, to one white perſon. The principal inhabi-

tants

tants at the Cape have ſometimes from 20 to 30 ſlaves, which are in general treated with great lenity, and ſometimes become favourites with their maſters, who give them very good cloathing, but oblige them to wear neither ſhoes nor ſtockings, reſerving theſe articles to themſelves. The ſlaves are chiefly brought from Madagaſcar, and a little veſſel annually goes from the Cape thither on that trade; there are however, beſides them, a number of Malays and Bengaleſe, and ſome negroes. The coloniſts themſelves are for the greateſt part Germans, with ſome families of Dutch, and ſome of French proteſtants. The character of the inhabitants of the town is mixed. They are induſtrious, but fond of good living, hoſpitable, and ſociable; though accuſtomed to hire their apartments to ſtrangers *, for the time they touch at this ſettlement, and uſed to be complimented with rich preſents of ſtuffs, &c. by the officers of merchant ſhips. They have no great opportunities of acquiring knowledge, there being no public ſchools of note at the Cape; their young men are therefore commonly ſent to Holland for improvement, and their female education is too much neglected. A kind of diſlike to reading, and the want of public amuſements, make their converſation unintereſting and too frequently

1772. NOVEMBER.

* The terms are mentioned in Lieut. Cook's Voyage. See Hawkeſworth's compilation, vol. III. p. 788. The members of the council are an exception in this reſpect.

1772: NOVEMBER.

turn it upon ſcandal, which is commonly carried to a degree of inveteracy peculiar to little towns. The French, Engliſh, Portugueſe, and Malay languages are very commonly ſpoken, and many of the ladies have acquired them. This circumſtance, together with the accompliſhments of ſinging, dancing, and playing a tune on the lute, frequently united in an agreeable perſon, make amends for the want of refined manners and delicacy of ſentiment. There are however among the principal inhabitants, perſons of both ſexes, whoſe whole deportment, extenſive reading, and well-cultivated underſtanding would be admired and diſtinguiſhed even in Europe *. Their circumſtances are in general eaſy, and often very affluent, on account of the cheap rate at which the neceſſaries of life are to be procured; but they ſeldom amaſs ſuch prodigious riches here as at Batavia, and I was told the greateſt private fortune at the Cape did not exceed one

* Among them we cannot in juſtice avoid mentioning the governor, Baron Joachim von Plettenberg, a gentleman whoſe hoſpitality and affability do great honour to him and his nation; Mr. Hemmy, ſecond governor, and his family; Mr. Von Prehn, the major; Mr. Bergh the ſecretary, a man of ſcience, of a noble, philoſophic turn of mind, with a family who diſtinguiſh themſelves in every mental and bodily accompliſhment, above the whole riſing generation of the Cape; Mr. Kerſte, Mr. de Wit, and our worthy hoſt Mr. Chriſtophel Brand, commander of the Poſt at Falſe Bay, with all their families. It is a real ſatisfaction to perpetuate the memory of valuable members of ſociety, and friends to mankind.

hundred

hundred thouſand dollars, or about twenty-two thouſand five hundred pounds ſterling. 1772. NOVEMBER.

The farmers in the country are very plain hoſpitable people; but thoſe who dwell in the remoteſt ſettlements ſeldom come to town, and are ſaid to be very ignorant; this may eaſily be conceived, becauſe they have no better company than Hottentots, their dwellings being often ſeveral days journey aſunder, which muſt in a great meaſure preclude all intercourſe. The vine is cultivated in plantations within the compaſs of a few days journey from the town; which were eſtabliſhed by the firſt coloniſts, and of which the ground was given in perpetual property to them and their heirs. The company at preſent never part with the property of the ground, but let the ſurface to the farmer for an annual rent, which, though extremely moderate, being only twenty-five dollars for ſixty acres *, yet does not give ſufficient encouragement to plant vineyards. The diſtant ſettlements therefore chiefly raiſe corn and rear cattle; nay many of the ſettlers entirely follow the latter branch of ruſtick employment, and ſome have very numerous flocks. We were told there were two farmers who had each fifteen thouſand ſheep, and oxen in proportion; and ſeveral who poſſeſſed

* Each acre of ſix hundred and ſixty-ſix ſquare Rhynland roods, the rood of twelve feet. The proportion of the Rhynland foot to the Engliſh is about one hundred and ſixteen to one hundred and twenty.

1772. NOVEMBER. ſix or eight thouſand ſheep, of which they drive great droves to town every year; but lions and buffaloes, and the fatigue of the journey, deſtroy numbers of their cattle before they can bring them ſo far. They commonly take their families with them in large waggons covered with linen or leather, ſpread over hoops, and drawn by eight, ten, and ſometimes twelve pair of oxen. They bring butter, mutton-tallow, the fleſh and ſkins of ſea-cows (hippopotamus), together with lion and rhinoceros' ſkins, to ſell. They have ſeveral ſlaves, and commonly engage in their ſervice ſeveral Hottentots of the poorer ſort, and (as we were told) of the tribe called Boſchemans or Buſhmen, who have no cattle of their own, but commonly ſubſiſt by hunting or by committing depredations on their neighbours. The opulent farmers ſet up a young beginner by intruſting to his care a flock of four or five hundred ſheep, which he leads to a diſtant ſpot, where he finds plenty of good graſs and water; the one half of all the lambs which are yeaned fall to his ſhare, by which means he ſoon becomes as rich as his benefactor.

Though the Dutch company ſeem evidently to diſcourage all new ſettlers, by granting no lands in private property, yet the products of the country have of late years ſufficed not only to ſupply the Iſles of France and Bourbon with corn, but likewiſe to furniſh the mother country with ſeveral ſhip loads. Theſe exports would certainly be made

at

at an eaſier rate than at preſent, if the ſettlements did not extend ſo far into the country, from whence the products muſt be brought to the Table bay by land carriage, on roads which are almoſt impaſſable. The intermediate ſpaces of uncultivated land between the different ſettlements are very extenſive, and contain many ſpots fit for agriculture; but one of the chief reaſons why the coloniſts are ſo much divided and ſcattered throughout the country, is to be met with in another regulation of the company, which forbids every new ſettler to eſtabliſh himſelf within a mile of another. It is evident that if this ſettlement were in the hands of the commonwealth, it would have attained to a great population, and a degree of opulence and ſplendor, of which it has not the leaſt hopes at preſent: But a private company of Eaſt-India merchants find their account much better in keeping all the landed property to themſelves, and tying down the coloniſt, leſt he ſhould become too great and powerful. 1772. NOVEMBER.

The wines made at the Cape are of the greateſt variety poſſible. The beſt, which is made at M. Vander Spy's plantation of Conſtantia, is ſpoken of in Europe, more by report than from real knowledge; thirty leagres * at the utmoſt are annually raiſed of this kind, and each leagre ſells for about fifty pounds on the ſpot. The vines from which it is made were originally brought from

* A leagre contains about one hundred and eight gallons, or a pipe.

Shiraz:

1772. NOVEMBER. Shiraz in Perſia. Several other ſorts grow in the neighbourhood of that plantation, which produce a ſweet rich wine, that generally paſſes for genuine Conſtantia in Europe. French plants of burgundy, muſcade, and frontignan have likewiſe been tried, and have ſucceeded extremely well, ſometimes producing wines ſuperior to thoſe of the original ſoil. An excellent dry wine, which has a ſlight agreeable tartneſs, is commonly drank in the principal families, and is made of Madeira vines tranſplanted to the Cape. Several low ſorts, not entirely diſagreeable, are raiſed in great plenty, and ſold at a very cheap rate, ſo that the ſailors of the Eaſt-India ſhips commonly indulge themſelves very plentifully in them whenever they come aſhore.

The products of the country ſupply with proviſions the ſhips of all nations which touch at the Cape. Corn, flour, biſcuit, ſalted beef, brandy, and wine are to be had in abundance, and at moderate prices; and their freſh greens, fine fruits *, good mutton and beef, are excellent reſtoratives to ſeamen who have made a long voyage. The climate is likewiſe ſo healthy, that the inhabitants are rarely troubled with complaints, and ſtrangers ſoon recover of the ſcurvy and other diſtempers. The winters at the Cape are ſo mild that they hardly ever have ice about the town: but on the mountains, and eſpecially thoſe far in

* Their grapes and oranges are ſome of the beſt in the world.

the

the country, they have hard froſts with ſnow and hail ſtorms; nay a ſtrong ſouth-eaſterly ſtorm ſometimes brings on a froſt during night even in the month of November, which is their ſpring. The only inconvenience which they frequently ſuffer are colds, brought on by the frequent change of air from ſtrong winds, to which the Cape is ſubject at all ſeaſons. But notwithſtanding the heat, which is ſometimes exceſſive, the inhabitants of Dutch origin ſeem to have preſerved their native habit of body, and both ſexes are remarkably corpulent, to which their good living may greatly contribute. 1772. NOVEMBER.

The Hottentots or aboriginal inhabitants of this country, have retired into the interior parts, and their neareſt *kraal* or village, is about a hundred miles from the Cape town. From thence they ſometimes come down with their own cattle, or attend the Dutch farmers who conduct their flocks to town for ſale. We had no opportunity to make new obſervations upon them, as we only ſaw a few individuals, in whom we could not diſcern any peculiarities but ſuch as have already been deſcribed by Peter Kolben, in his Preſent State of the Cape of Good Hope, &c. The circumſtantial accounts given by this intelligent man, have been confirmed to us by the principal inhabitants of the Cape town. It is true, that he has been miſinformed in regard to ſome circumſtances; and that others, chiefly relative to the colony, have at preſent another appearance

1772. NOVEMBER.

pearance than in his time: but he ſtill remains the beſt author that can be conſulted on the ſubject, and as ſuch we will venture to refer our readers to him.

We have had an occaſion to obſerve ſeveral facts alledged in Kolben, and we likewiſe find them mentioned in Lieutenant Cook's voyage. See Hawkeſworth's compilation Vol. III. p. 789, &c. The Abbé de la Caille, an aſtronomer, in the account of his voyage, which was publiſhed ſoon after his death, has endeavoured to ruin the credit of Kolben's book, without giving us any thing better in its ſtead. We ſhould not have ventured to mention ſo ſuperficial a performance, as that of the Abbé, were it not neceſſary to vindicate from his aſperſions, the character of Kolben, as a faithful and accurate obſerver. The Abbé lived with a family at the Cape, who were of a party directly oppoſite to that which had ſupported Kolben. He daily heard invectives againſt him, and never failed to write them down, in order to give himſelf importance at the expence of the other.

Nul n'aura d'eſprit
Hors nous et nos amis. BOILEAU.

The extremity of Africa towards the ſouth is a maſs of high mountains, of which the outermoſt are black, craggy, and barren, conſiſting of a coarſe granite, which contains no heterogeneous parts, ſuch as petrified ſhells, &c. nor any

any volcanic productions. The cultivated ſpots which we ſaw had a ſtiff clay mixed with a little ſand and ſmall pieces of ſtone; but the plantations towards Falſe bay are almoſt entirely on a ſandy ſoil. The colony of Stellenboſch is ſaid to have the moſt fertile ſoil of all at the Cape, and the different plantations thrive there incomparably better than any where elſe, particularly the European oaks, which are ſaid to have attained a conſiderable height and flouriſhing appearance, whilſt they do not ſeem to ſucceed near the town, where the talleſt we ſaw was not above thirty feet high. The interior mountains are certainly metallic, and contain iron and copper; ſpecimens of ores of both kinds were ſhewn to us by Mr. Hemmy, and ſome tribes of Hottentots melt both theſe metals; from whence we may conclude, that the ores they employ muſt be rich and eaſy of fuſion. Hot ſprings are likewiſe found at ſeveral places in the interior country; and the inhabitants of the Cape Town reſort to one of them at the diſtance of about three days journey, which is famous for curing cutaneous and other diſtempers, and is probably of a ſulphureous nature. 1772. NOVEMBER.

The variety of plants in this country is ſurpriſing. In the little time we ſtaid there, we obſerved ſeveral new ſpecies growing in the environs of the town, where we ſhould leaſt have expected them. And though the collections of former botaniſts from hence are very ample, yet Dr.

1772. NOVEMBER. SPARRMAN and the learned Dr. THUNBERG * have gathered above a thouſand ſpecies entirely unknown before. The animal kingdom is proportionably rich in the variety of its productions. The greateſt quadrupeds, the elephant, the rhinoceros, and the giraffe or camelopard, inhabit this extremity of Africa; the two firſt were formerly found within fifty miles of the Cape, but have been ſo much purſued and hunted, that they are rarely ſeen at preſent within many days journey. The rhinoceros particularly is ſo ſcarce, that the government have iſſued an order to prevent its being entirely extirpated. The hippopotamus, there called a ſea-cow, which formerly uſed to come as far as Saldanha bay, is likewiſe ſo ſeldom ſeen at preſent, that none muſt be killed within a conſiderable diſtance of the Cape. Its meat is eaten here, and reckoned a great dainty: the taſte in my opinion is that of coarſe beef, but the fat rather reſembles marrow. This animal feeds entirely on vegetables, and we were told can only dive a

* An eminent diſciple of Linné, who after arranging and claſſing Dr. Burmann's herbals at Leyden, ſtudied botany during three years at the Cape, and having made immenſe acquiſitions to ſcience, was ſent to Batavia, at the expence of the Dutch Eaſt-India company, in order to proceed to Japan in 1775. The ſame gentleman was ſo obliging, at Dr. Sparrman's requeſt, to take with him, on one of his excurſions, Francis Maſſon, employed in the Royal garden at Kew, who had been ſent to the Cape on board the Reſolution, in order to collect live plants and ſeeds for the botanical garden. Under Dr. Thunberg's kind guidance, who pointed out to him what was worthy of notice, he has made and brought home an ample collection.

ſhort

ſhort ſpace, not exceeding thirty yards. The wild buffalo is another huge quadruped, which now inhabits the more remote ſettlements of the Cape, and is ſaid to have prodigious ſtrength and ferocity. Its horns reſembles thoſe of the American wild ox *(biſon)*, and are repreſented in the ixth vol. of M. de Buffon's Natural Hiſtory. They often attack the farmers travelling in the country, and kill many of their cattle, which they trample upon with their feet. Dr. Thunberg loſt his horſes in one of theſe rencounters, and his fellow-traveller, the Dutch company's gardener, narrowly eſcaped between two trees. A young one, about three years old, belonging to the ſecond governor, was put before a waggon, with ſix tame oxen, but his ſtrength was ſuch that they could not move him out of his place *. Beſides this there is another ſpecies of wild ox, called by the natives *gnoo*, which has ſlender horns, a mane, and bruſhes of hair on the noſe and wattles, and in the ſlender make of its limbs ſeems to reſemble an horſe or an antelope, more than its cogeneric animals. This ſpecies we have drawn and deſcribed, and it has been brought over to the menagerie of the Prince of Orange. Africa has always been known as the country of

1772. NOVMEBER.

* We ſhould have gone into the country to ſee this animal, but we only heard of it the day before our departure. This ſeems to be the animal mentioned by de Manet, Nouvelle Hiſtoire de l'Afrique Françoiſe, tome ii. p. 129.

1772. NOVEMBER. the beautiful genus of gazelles or antelopes *, and the different names which have been improperly given to its ſpecies, have hitherto not a little contributed to obſcure our knowledge of them. A number of the fierceſt beaſts of prey likewiſe infeſt the Cape, and the coloniſts can never be at ſufficient pains to extirpate them. Lions, leopards, tyger-cats, ſtriped and ſpotted hyænas, (Pennant's Syn. of Quadr.) jackals, and ſeveral others, live on the numerous

* We can only except a few ſpecies found in India, and other parts of Aſia, and one in Europe. The different ſpecies at the Cape are remarkable, ſome for the elegance of their ſhape, ſome for their colours, their horns, or their ſize. The Coodoo, or Kolben's *bock ohne namen* (goat without a name), from whence the name of M. de Buffon's Condoma is probably derived, is the ſtrepſiceros of Linné and Pallas, and its height is that of a horſe. Its leaps are ſaid to be of an aſtoniſhing height. The Cape elk of Kolben, Pallas's *antelope oryx*, is about the ſize of a ſtag. The *bonte bock* is the A. ſcripta of Dr. Pallas. The antelope which they improperly call a hart or ſtag at the Cape, is the A. bubalis of Pallas. The Egyptian antelope, Linné's and Pallas's *gazella*, and M. de Buffon's *paſan*, is here called gems-bock or chamois, which it does not in the leaſt reſemble. The blue antelope, (*blauwe bock*) is really of a blueiſh colour, but when killed ſoon loſes the velvet-like appearance of its fur. The *ſpring-bock*, a beautiful ſpecies, named A. pygargus by Pallas, live in vaſt herds in the interior parts of Africa, and travel to the ſouthward in the ſummer ſeaſon, in ſearch of food, attended by many lions, panthers, hyænas, and jackals, which prey upon them. Of this ſpecies we had the honour to preſent one to Her Majeſty alive. Two ſmall ſpecies, with ſeveral varieties not hitherto noticed, ſupply the principal inhabitants with veniſon of a fine flavour. Their ſize is that of a fawn of the fallow-deer. The *duyker*, or diving antelope, ſo called from hiding itſelf among the buſhes when purſued, and only emerging from time to time, is not yet ſufficiently known, and the animal named a roebuck here, likewiſe deſerves the farther attention of travellers.

ſpecies

ſpecies of antelopes, on hares, jerbuas, caviæ, and many leſſer quadrupeds with which the country abounds. The number of birds is likewiſe very great, and among them many are arrayed in the brighteſt colours. I cannot help mentioning, in confirmation of Kolben's accounts, that we have ſeen two ſpecies of ſwallows at the Cape, though the Abbé de la Caille cenſures him for ſpeaking of them, becauſe they did not occur to himſelf. The Abbé alſo commits a miſtake with regard to the knorhan, which is not a gelinote or grous, as he calls it, but the African buſtard. Upon the whole, it would be eaſy to refute almoſt every criticiſm which the Abbé has paſſed on Kolben, if a work of ſo little merit deſerved ſo much attention. Reptiles of all kinds, ſerpents, (among which are many whoſe bite is mortal,) and a variety of inſects ſwarm about the Cape; and its ſhores likewiſe abound in well-taſted fiſhes, many of which are not yet known to the naturaliſt. In ſhort, notwithſtanding the many ſpoils of the vegetable and animal kingdom, which have been brought from Africa, its immenſe interior countries remain almoſt entirely unknown to the preſent time, and ſtill contain great treaſures of natural knowledge, which wait the future inveſtigation of another THUNBERG or another BRUCE.

1772. NOVEMBER.

CHAP.

1772. NOVEMBER.

CHAP. IV.

Run from the Cape to the Antarctic Circle; firſt ſeaſon ſpent in high Southern Latitudes.—Arrival on the Coaſt of New Zeeland.

Sunday 22. WE ſailed from Table bay, about four in the afternoon, on the 22d of November, after having ſaluted the fort. The wind blew in hard ſqualls, which continued all night, and gave us once more a rough reception on the boiſterous element; while the ſame luminous appearance, which we had obſerved before our coming into this bay, was perceived again, though in a much ſlighter degree.

Monday 23. The next day towards eight in the morning, we loſt ſight of the Cape, and directed our courſe to the ſouthward. As we were now entering on an unexampled navigation, not knowing when we might meet with a new place of refreſhment, the captain gave the ſtricteſt orders to prevent the waſte of freſh water; to this end a centry was placed at the ſcuttled-caſk *, and a regular allowance of water was daily ſerved out to the crew, beſides which they were permitted to drink at the caſk, but not to carry any water away. The captain himſelf waſhed with ſalt-water, and

* An open butt placed on the quarter-deck, and daily filled with freſh water out of the hold, for the uſe of the ſhip's company.

all

all our company were obliged to conform to this neceſſary reſtriction. The diſtilling machine improved by Mr. Irving, was likewiſe conſtantly employed, to ſupply at leaſt *ſome* part of the quantity daily conſumed.

On the 24th in the afternoon, the weather being fair and moderate, after a hard gale we caught nine albatroſſes with a line and hook, baited with a bit of ſheep's ſkin. Several of them meaſured above ten feet from tip to tip, between the expanded wings. The younger ones ſeemed to have a great mixture of browniſh feathers, whereas the full-grown were almoſt entirely white except their wings, which were blackiſh, and their ſcapulars which were barred and ſprinkled with dotted lines of black. Tueſday 24.

A large brown fiſh reſembling the ſun fiſh *(tetrodon mola)*, was likewiſe ſeen cloſe to the ſhip for a ſhort ſpace of time.

On the the 29th the wind, which had for three or four days paſt blown a very ſtrong gale, now encreaſed ſo much, that we ran during the laſt twenty-four hours, almoſt under the bare fore-ſail. The ſea at the ſame time ran very high, and frequently broke over the ſloop, in which none of the cabins were prepared for ſuch bad weather, our courſe from England to the Cape having been remarkably free of ſtorms. The people, and eſpecially perſons not brought up to ſea-affairs, were ignorant how to behave in this new ſituation; the prodigious rolling of the veſſel Sunday 29.

therefore

1772. NOVEMBER. therefore daily made great havock among cups, ſaucers, glaſſes, bottles, diſhes, plates, and every thing that was moveable; whilſt the humorous circumſtances ſometimes attending the general confuſion, made us bear theſe irreparable loſſes with greater compoſure than might have been expected. The decks, and the floors of every cabin were however continually wet; and the howl of the ſtorm in the rigging, the roar of the waves, added to the violent agitation of the veſſel, which precluded almoſt every occupation, were new and awful ſcenes, but at the ſame ſeverely felt, and highly diſagreeable. The air was likewiſe unpleaſantly ſharp and cold about this time, our latitude being now about 42° ſouth; and frequent rains contributed to make the ſervice of the ſeamen hard and comfortleſs. To ſecure them in ſome meaſure againſt the inclemencies of the weather, the captain ordered a general diſtribution of clothes to be made, which had been expreſsly provided at the expence of the Admiralty to ſerve this purpoſe. Every perſon whoſe duty expoſed him to the ſeverity of ſouthern climates, from the lieutenant to the ſailor, was provided with a jacket and a pair of trowſers of the thickeſt woollen ſtuff called *fearnought* *, or ſtrong flannel, which kept out the wet for a long time, and had this only fault, in common with every thing the navy pro-

* A diſtribution of the ſame nature was made to Captain Cook's crew in his firſt voyage round the world. See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. II. p. 40.

vides,

vides, viz. that they were ſupplied by contract, and there- 1772. NOVEMBER.
fore generally too ſhort for our people. If we conſider the diſtreſſes to which M. de Bougainville's crew were reduced for want of cloathing, we cannot help reflecting on the better fortune of Engliſh ſeamen, who, under an equitable government, may expect to be treated with peculiar care; and who, on perilous expeditions, are humanely and attentively ſupplied with neceſſaries to face the dangers of the ſea, and ſupport their ſpirits in adverſity. A trying moment frequently occurs, where the deſpondence cauſed by ill-treatment and heavy ſufferings, muſt have the moſt fatal conſequences, ſince its direct oppoſite, an undaunted reſolution is then moſt neceſſary; ſuch a moment we experienced in this night. A petty officer in the forepart of the veſſel, awaking ſuddenly, heard a noiſe of water ſtreaming through his birth, and breaking itſelf againſt his own and his meſs-mates cheſts; he leaped out of his bed, and found himſelf to the middle of the leg in water. He inſtantly acquainted the officer of the quarter-deck with this dreadful circumſtance, and in a few moments almoſt every perſon in the ſhip was in motion; the pumps were employed, and the officers encouraged the ſeamen with an alarming gentleneſs, to perſevere in their work; notwithſtanding which the water ſeemed to gain upon us; every ſoul was filled with terror, encreaſed by the darkneſs of the night.

1772. NOVEMBER.

Ponto nox incubat atra,
Præſentemque viris intentant omnia mortem. VIRGIL.

For what obſcured light the heav'ns did grant,
Did but convey unto *their* fearful minds
A doubtful warrant of immediate death. SHAKESPEARE.

The chain-pumps were now cleared, and our ſailors laboured at them with great alacrity; at laſt one of them luckily diſcovered that the water came in through a ſcuttle (or window) in the boatſwain's ſtore-room, which not having been ſecured againſt the tempeſtuous ſouthern ocean, had been ſtaved in by the force of the waves. It was immediately repaired, and cloſely ſhut up, and we eſcaped for this time with the greateſt part of the clothes and effects of the ſailors and officers thoroughly ſoaked in ſalt water. We ſhould have found it difficult, if not utterly impoſſible, to clear the ſhip of the water, if the midſhipman had not providentially awaked before it had gained too much upon us: the preſence of mind of our officers, and the ſpirit of our ſeamen would have been exerted in vain, and we muſt perhaps have gone down to the bottom, in the midſt of a very dark night and turbulent ocean, which would have effectually prevented our conſort from giving us aſſiſtance. A diſtribution of fiſhing-hooks and lines was made about this time to every perſon on board, as it was uncertain how ſoon we might meet with land, and conſequently with an opportunity of making uſe of them.

The

The ſtormy weather continued, intermixed with frequent rains and fogs, till the fifth of December *, when we ſet the top-gallant ſails for the firſt time, after leaving the Cape of Good Hope, and obſerved the latitude at noon, in 47° 10′ ſouth. In the afternoon, however, the ſhowers returned, and a weſtern ſwell announced a wind from that quarter, which actually came on during night, blowing at about S. W. and chilled the air ſo conſiderably, that the thermometer ſunk from 44° to 38° during the night, and ſome ſnow began to fall the next morning. The wind ſoon encreaſed to a ſtorm again; ſo that on the 7th in the afternoon, we had only a ſingle ſail ſet. A variety of birds of the petrel and tern genus, had attended us in greater or leſſer numbers ever ſince we had left the Cape, and the high ſea and winds ſeemed to have no other influence on them, than that of bringing more of them about us. The principal ſorts were the Cape-petrel, or pintada *(procellaria capenſis)*, and the blue petrel, ſo called from its having a blueiſh-grey colour, and a band of blackiſh feathers acroſs the whole wing. We likewiſe ſaw the two before mentioned ſpecies of albatroſſes † from time to time, together with a third, leſs than the others, which we named the *ſooty*, and our ſailors called the

1772. DECEMBER. Saturday 5.

Monday 7.

* We had loſt ſix large hogs of our live ſtock, and ſome ſheep, during this uncomfortable weather.

† See p. 51.

1772. DECEMBER. quaker bird, from its having a greyiſh-brown colour. Many birds of all theſe different ſpecies ſurrounded us on the 8th of December, the wind ſtill continuing very high,

Tueſday 8. and the ſea very turbulent. We now likewiſe ſaw pinguins * for the firſt time, and ſome bunches of ſea-weed, of the ſpecies called the ſea-bamboo *(fucus buccinalis* Lin.) Theſe appearances greatly favoured the hope of meeting with land, as it had hitherto been held uncontroverted that weeds, eſpecially rockweeds, (ſuch as theſe were) and pinguins were never to be met with at a great diſtance from ſhores; but experience has ſhewn that theſe prognoſtics are not to be relied upon, and probably derive all their credit from ſingle accidental proofs in their favour, ſupported by the name of ſome celebrated mariner. Future obſervations on the nature of floating rock-weeds, and drift-wood, might perhaps lead to ſome more determinate concluſions; for as theſe weeds muſt have been at firſt detached from the rocks on which they grew, it is probable that from the degree of freſhneſs or of putridity which

* Theſe birds, which ſince the time of Sir John Narborough, have been repeatedly mentioned by almoſt every navigator that has viſited the Southern extremities of America, are ſo well known to the Engliſh reader, from the accounts of Anſon, Byron, Bougainville, Pernetty, &c. that it is ſcarce neceſſary to deſcribe them. They are in a manner amphibious creatures, and their wings are unfit for flying, but ſhaped like ſtrong fleſhy membranes, which perform all the functions of fins. There are upwards of ten different ſpecies known to the naturaliſts at preſent.

they

they have when found, the time they have been adrift, and in ſome rare inſtances, the diſtances from land, may be conjectured; but the direction and force of the winds and waves, and other accidental circumſtances, muſt in that caſe be carefully taken into conſideration. 1772. DECEMBER.

The wind abated during night, ſo that we ſet our courſes on the 9th in the morning. The thermometer at eight o'clock was however fallen to 35°, and only roſe one degree at noon, being then in 49° 45′ of ſouth latitude. Towards night it grew colder again, and at half an hour paſt ten, we found the thermometer on deck very near 32°, and the edges of the ſcuttled-caſk, filled with freſh water, were freezing. This great cold preceded the ſight of ice floating in the ſea, which we fell in with on the next morning. The firſt we ſaw, was a lump of conſiderable ſize, ſo cloſe to us, that we were obliged to bear away from it; another of the ſame magnitude a little more a-head, and a large maſs about two leagues on the weather-bow, which had the appearance of a white head-land, or a chalk-cliff. Wedneſday 9. Thurſday 10.

In the afternoon we paſſed another large cubical maſs about 2000 feet long, 400 feet broad, and at leaſt as high again as our main-top-gallant-maſt head, or 200 feet high. According to the experiments of Boyle and Mairan*, the

* See Mairan's Diſſertation ſur la Glace. Paris, 1749, p. 261.

volume

1772. DECEMBER.

volume of ice is to that of ſea-water, nearly as ten to nine: conſequently, by the known rules of hydroſtatics, the volume of ice which riſes above the ſurface of the water, is to that which ſinks below it, as one to nine. Suppoſing the piece which we now ſaw to be entirely of a regular figure, its depth under water muſt have been one thouſand eight hundred feet, and its whole height two thouſand feet, allowing its length as abovementioned two thouſand feet, and its breadth four hundred feet, the whole maſs muſt have contained one thouſand ſix hundred millions cubic feet of ice.

Theſe prodigious pieces of ice, in all probability, drift but very ſlowly and imperceptibly, ſince the greateſt part of them being under water, the power of winds and waves can have but little effect; currents perhaps are the principal agents which give them motion, though I much queſtion, whether their velocity is ever conſiderable enough to carry them two miles in four-and-twenty hours. At the time we met with this firſt ice, all our conjectures about its formation could not amount to more than bare probabilities, and had not ſufficient experience to ſupport them: but after we have made the tour of the globe, without finding the Southern Continent, the exiſtence of which has been ſo univerſally believed in Europe; it ſeems in the higheſt degree reaſonable to ſuppoſe this floating ice to have

have been formed in the ſea *; an idea the more probable, as repeated and deciſive experiments have evinced, that ſalt-water may be frozen. 1772. DECEMBER.

This ice likewiſe ſerved to ſhew us the great difference between the temperature of the northern and ſouthern hemiſphere. We were now in the midſt of December, which anſwers to our June, and the latitude obſerved at noon gave only 51° 5′ ſouth, notwithſtanding which we had already paſſed ſeveral pieces of ice, and the thermometer ſtood at 36°. The want of land in the ſouthern hemiſphere ſeems to account for this circumſtance, ſince the ſea, as a tranſparent fluid, abſorbs the beams of the ſun, inſtead of reflecting them.

On the 11th of December, about three o' clock in the afternoon, we paſſed to leeward of a large piece, or iſland of ice, at leaſt half a mile in length. The thermometer on deck, which had been at 36° about two o'clock, was riſen to 41°, on account of the fair ſunſhine, which continued all the afternoon: when we came abreaſt of the ice, the wind directly blowing from thence, it gradually ſunk Friday 11.

* Mr. Adanſon, on returning from Senegal, brought ſeveral bottles filled with ſea-water with him, taken up in different latitudes, which being brought to Paris from Breſt in the midſt of winter, the water in them froze ſo as to break them; the ice was perfectly freſh, and the reſiduum of brine was run out. See his Voyage au Senegal, p. 190. Mr. Edward Nairne, F. R. S. has made experiments on ſea-water during the hard froſt in 1776, inſerted in the LXVI. volume of the Philoſophical Tranſactions, which put it beyond a doubt, that ſolid and freſh ice may be formed from ſea-water.

to

1772. DECEMBER. to 37½; however we had no ſooner paſſed it, than the mercury regained its former ſtation of 41°. We alſo found that this difference of four degrees, very perceptibly affected our bodies, and concluded that the large maſſes of ice greatly contributed to refrigerate the general temperature of the air in theſe inhoſpitable ſeas. The waves daſhed with great violence againſt the iſland of ice, as againſt a fixed body; ſometimes they broke entirely over it, notwithſtanding its height, which was not much inferior to that of the beforementioned piece, and we frequently ſaw the ſpray riſe very high above it, a phænomenon, which, on account of the fair weather, had a remarkable fine effect. The ſea-water by this means waſhed upon the ice, is probably congealed there, and ſerves to encreaſe the maſs; a circumſtance very materially conducive to aſcertain the hiſtory of its formation.

Notwithſtanding the coldneſs of this climate, our ſloops were ſtill ſurrounded by birds of the petrel genus, albatroſſes and pinguins. We particularly obſerved a petrel, about the ſize of a pigeon, entirely white, with a black bill and blueiſh feet; it conſtantly appeared about the icy maſſes, and may be looked upon as a ſure fore-runner of ice. Its colour induced us to call it the ſnowy-petrel. A grampus and ſeveral whales likewiſe made their appearance among the ice, and in theſe chilling regions ſerved to vary the diſmal

diſmal ſcene, and gave us ſome idea of a ſouthern Green- DECEMBER. 1772.
land.

The number of icy maſſes encreaſed around us every day, Sunday 13.
ſo that we numbered upwards of twenty of a vaſt ſize on the 13th in the afternoon. One of them was full of black ſpots, which were taken for ſeals by ſome, and for aquatic birds by others, though we could not find that they even ſhifted their places: However ſeals being hitherto looked upon as certain ſigns of land, we ſounded in the evening with a line of one hundred and fifty fathoms, but found no bottom. The latitude we were now in, was that in which Captain Lozier Bouvet had placed his pretended diſcovery of Cape Circumciſion, and our longitude was only a few degrees to the eaſtward of it: the general expectation of ſeeing land, was therefore very great, and every little circumſtance like the preceding rouſed all our attention; the clouds a-head were curiouſly examined at every moment, ſince every one was eager to be the firſt to announce the land. We had already had ſeveral falſe alarms from the fallacious conformation of fog-banks, or that of iſlands of ice half hid in ſnow ſtorms, and our conſort the Adventure had repeatedly made the ſignals for ſeeing land, deceived by ſuch appearances: but now, the imagination warmed with the idea of M. Bouvet's diſcovery, one of our lieutenants, after having repeatedly been up to the maſt-head, (about ſix o'clock in the morning on

1772. DECEMBER. Monday 14. the 14th) acquainted the captain that he plainly ſaw the land. This news ſoon brought us all upon deck: We ſaw an immenſe field of flat ice before us, broken into many ſmall pieces on the edges, a vaſt number of iſlands of ice of all ſhapes and ſizes roſe beyond it as far as the eye could reach, and ſome of the moſt diſtant conſiderably raiſed by the hazy vapours which lay on the horizon, had indeed ſome appearance of mountains. Several of our officers perſiſted in the opinion that they had ſeen land here, till Captain Cook, about two years and two months afterwards (in February 1775) on his courſe from Cape Horn towards the Cape of Good Hope, ſailed over the ſame ſpot, where they had ſuppoſed it to lie, and found neither land nor even ice there at that time. Numbers of pinguins, pintadas, fulmars, ſnowy and blue petrels * attended this vaſt extent of ice, and different ſpecies of cetaceous animals ſpouted up the water around us: two of them, ſhorter than other whales, were particularly noticed, in reſpect of their bulk and of a white or rather fleſhy colour. A great degree of cold in theſe icy regions entirely precluded the idea of a ſummer, which we had expected at this time of the year; our thermometer ſtood at 31° in the morning, and did not riſe beyond 33° at noon, though the latitude we obſerved this day was only 54° 55′ ſouth. We paſſed through quantities of broken ice in the

* Aptenodytes antarctica; Procellaria capenſis, glacialis, nivea, & vittata.

afternoon,

afternoon, and ſaw another extenſive ice-field, beyond which ſeveral of our people ſtill perſiſted in, taking fog-banks for land. It ſnowed a good deal during night, and in the morning it was almoſt calm, but very foggy. A boat was hoiſted out to try the direction of the current. Mr. Wales the aſtronomer, and my father, took this opportunity to repeat the experiments on the temperature of the ſea at a certain depth. The fog encreaſed ſo much while they were thus engaged, that they entirely loſt ſight of both the ſhips. Their ſituation in a ſmall four-oared boat, on an immenſe ocean, far from any inhabitable ſhore, ſurrounded with ice, and utterly deſtitute of proviſions, was truly terrifying and horrible in its conſequences. They rowed about for ſome time, making vain efforts to be heard, but all was ſilent about them, and they could not ſee the length of their boat. They were the more unfortunate, as they had neither maſt nor ſail, and only two oars. In this dreadful ſuſpence they determined to lie ſtill, hoping that, provided they preſerved their place, the ſloops would not drive out of ſight, as it was calm. At laſt they heard the jingling of a bell at a diſtance; this ſound was heavenly muſic to their ears; they immediately rowed towards it, and by continual hailing, were at laſt anſwered from the Adventure, and hurried on board, overjoyed to have eſcaped the danger

1772. DECEMBER.

1772. DECEMBER. of periſhing by ſlow degrees, through the inclemencies of weather and through famine. Having been on board ſome time, they fired a gun, and being within hail of the Reſolution, returned on board of that ſloop, to their own damp beds and mouldering cabins, upon which they now ſet a double value, after ſo perilous an expedition. The riſks to which the voyager is expoſed at ſea are very numerous, and danger often ariſes where it is leaſt expected. Neither can we trace the care of Providence more evidently in ſtorms among hidden rocks and ſhoals, and where water or fire threaten deſtruction, than in theſe little circumſtances, which the traveller and the reader are both too apt to forget or paſs lightly over, if they come to a favourable iſſue.

Friday 18. The quantity of impenetrable ice to the ſouth did not permit us to advance towards that quarter; therefore, after ſeveral fruitleſs attempts, we ſtood on to the eaſtward, along it, frequently making way through great ſpots covered with broken ice, which anſwered the deſcription of what the northern navigators call packed ice. Heavy hail ſhowers and frequent falls of ſnow continually obſcured the air, and only gave us the reviving ſight of the ſun during ſhort intervals. Large iſlands of ice were hourly ſeen in all directions around the ſloops, ſo that they were now become as familiar to us as the clouds and the ſea; their

their frequency however ſtill led to new obſervations, which our long acquaintance with them ſerved to confirm. We were certain of meeting with ice in any quarter where we perceived a ſtrong reflexion of white on the ſkirts of the ſky near the horizon. However the ice is not always entirely white, but often tinged, eſpecially near the ſurface of the ſea, with a moſt beautiful ſapphirine or rather berylline blue, evidently reflected from the water; this blue colour ſometimes appeared twenty or thirty feet above the ſurface, and was there probably owing to ſome particles of ſea-water which had been daſhed againſt the maſs in tempeſtuous weather, and had penetrated into its interſtices. We could likewiſe frequently obſerve in great iſlands of ice, different ſhades or caſts of white, lying above each other in ſtrata of ſix inches or one foot high. This appearance ſeems to confirm the opinion concerning the farther encreaſe and accumulation of ſuch huge maſſes by heavy falls of ſnow at different intervals. For ſnow being of various kinds, ſmall grained, large grained, in light feathery locks, &c. the various degrees of its compactneſs account for the different colours of the ſtrata. 1772. DECEMBER.

We did not loſe ſight of our deſtination to explore the ſouthern frigid zone, and no ſooner perceived the ſea more open than before, than we ſtood once more to the ſouthward. We made but ſmall advances at firſt, the wind being very faint, and almoſt falling calm in the morning, Tueſday 22.

on

1772. DECEMBER. Wedneſd. 23. on the 23d. We ſeized this opportunity to hoiſt out a boat, and continue the experiments on the current, and on the temperature of the ſea. The ſpecies of petrels which were numerous about us, were likewiſe examined, deſcribed, and drawn this day, having been ſhot as they hovered with ſeeming curioſity over our little boat.

Thurſday 24. We continued ſtanding ſoutherly, and even made a good deal of weſting, the wind being S. S. E. The next morning the wind blew pretty freſh, and carried us paſt

Friday 25. ſeveral iſlands of ice; ſome whales, and a number of birds appearing about us. Our firſt Chriſtmas day during this voyage, was ſpent with the uſual chearfulneſs among officers and paſſengers; but among the ſailors, notwithſtanding the ſurrounding rocks of ice, with ſavage noiſe and drunkenneſs, to which they ſeem to have particularly

Saturday 26. devoted the day. The next morning we ſailed through a great quantity of packed or broken ice, ſome of which looked dirty or decaying. Iſlands of ice ſtill ſurrounded us, and in the evening, the ſun ſetting juſt behind one of them, tinged its edges with gold, and brought upon the whole maſs a beautiful ſuffuſion of purple. A dead calm which ſucceeded on the 27th, gave us an opportunity of hoiſting the boat out, and going to ſhoot pinguins and petrels. The chace of pinguins proved very unſucceſsful, though it afforded great ſport; the birds dived ſo frequently, continued ſo long under water, and at times

ſkipped

ſkipped continually into and out of the water, making way with ſuch amazing velocity in a ſtrait line, that we were obliged to give over the purſuit. At laſt we came near enough to one, to wound it; but though we followed it cloſely, and fired above ten times with ſmall ſhot, which we could obſerve to hit, yet we were at laſt obliged to kill it with ball. When we took it up, we perceived that its hard, gloſſy plumage, had continually turned the ſhot aſide. This plumage is extremely thick, and conſiſts of long narrow feathers, which lie above each other as cloſely as ſcales, and ſecure theſe amphibious birds againſt the wet, in which they almoſt conſtantly live. Their very thick ſkin and their fat ſeem wiſely appropriated to them by nature, to reſiſt the perpetual winter of theſe unhoſpitable climates; their broad belly, the ſituation of their feet far behind, and their fins, which ſupply the place of wings, are conſtructed with equal wiſdom to facilitate the progreſs of their otherwiſe lumpiſh bodies through the water. The one that we had now ſhot weighed eleven pounds and a half. The blue petrels which are ſeen throughout this immenſe ocean, and which now ſettled in flocks of ſeveral hundreds on the ſmooth ſurface of the water, were not worſe fitted out againſt the cold than the pinguins. Their plumage was amazingly abundant, and increaſed their bulk in a great proportion; and two feathers inſtead of one, proceeded out

1772. DECEMBER.

1772. DECEMBER. out of every root, lying within each other, and formed a very warm covering. As they are almoſt continually in the air, their wings are very ſtrong, and of a great length to ſupport them. On the ocean, between New Zeeland and America, we have found them above ſeven hundred leagues from any land; a diſtance which it would have been impoſſible for them to have paſſed, without an amazing ſtrength in their bones and muſcles, and the aſſiſtance of long wings. Poſſibly theſe birds ſpreading over the whole ocean far from any land, may live a conſiderable time without freſh ſupplies of food; that being the caſe with many animals of prey, both in the claſs of quadrupeds and that of birds. Our experience ſhould ſeem in ſome meaſure to contradict, and in ſome degree to confirm, this ſuppoſition. For whenever we lamed any of them, they diſgorged a quantity of viſcid food, to all appearance recently digeſted, which the reſt immediately ſwallowed up with ſuch avidity as ſeemed to indicate a long faſt. Therefore it may be probable, that ſeveral ſorts of blubbers *(molluſca)* inhabit theſe icy ſeas, which may come to the ſurface in fair weather, and ſupply the weary birds with food. We were glad to meet with ſubjects from whence theſe little reflections could be drawn. They afforded us a momentary relief from that gloomy uniformity with which we ſlowly paſſed dull hours, days, and months in this deſolate part of the world.

world. We were almoſt perpetually wrapt in thick fogs, beaten with ſhowers of rain, ſleet, hail, and ſnow, the temperature of the air being conſtantly about the point of congelation in the height of ſummer; ſurrounded by innumerable iſlands of ice againſt which we daily ran the riſk of being ſhipwrecked, and forced to live upon ſalt proviſions, which concurred with the cold and wet to infect the maſs of our blood. Theſe ſeverities naturally inſpired a general wiſh for a happier change of ſituation and climate, though our ſeamen coming freſh and ſtrong from England, were not yet diſpirited amidſt the numberleſs fatigues and inclemencies to which they were expoſed. The prophylactics, with which we had been ſupplied, and which were regularly ſerved to the crew, namely portable broth, and ſour krout, had a wonderful effect in keeping them free from the ſea-ſcurvy. Two or three men however, of a bad habit of body, could not reſiſt this dreadful diſeaſe; one of them in particular, George Jackſon, a carpenter, fell ill ten days after leaving the Cape; his gums were ulcerous, and his teeth ſo looſe, as to lie ſideways. A marmalade of carrots, which had been much recommended was tried, but without ſucceſs, it having no other effect than that of keeping him open. Our ſurgeon, Mr. Patton, then began the cure with freſh wort, i. e. the infuſion of malt, by which he gradually recovered, and in the ſpace of a few weeks was perfectly cured, his teeth 1772. DECEMBER.

1772. DECEMBER. faſt, and his gums entirely renewed. As the efficient cauſe of his complaint ſtill exiſted, he was obliged to continue the uſe of wort even after his cure, and by that means was kept free from all ſcorbutic ſymptoms. The encomiums on the efficacy of malt cannot be exaggerated, and this uſeful remedy ought never to be forgotten on board of ſhips bound on long voyages; nor can we beſtow too much care to prevent its becoming damp and mouldy, by which means its ſalutary qualities are impaired, as we experienced during the latter part of our voyage.

1773. JANUARY. Friday 1. The new year began with ſnow-ſhowers and freſh cold gales, which carried us to the weſtward, under the meridian, where M. Bouvet placed the diſcovery, which he called Cape Circumciſion. The ſight of ſeals and pinguins once more revived the hopes of ſome of our fellow-voyagers, who bid us look out for land, which by their account could not be far off. Our courſe however ſoon diſappointed their expectations, and only ſerved to invalidate their teſtimonies of the proximity of land.

Sunday 3. The wind ſhifted to the north-weſtward in the night, and we ſtood back again to the eaſt, having firſt proceeded beyond the meridian of M. Bouvet's diſcovery. We paſſed the ſpot where we had met with much ice on the 31ſt of December, and found it drifted away from thence; after which we continued our courſe to the S. E.

On

On the 9th, in the morning, we ſaw a large iſland of ice, ſurrounded with many ſmall broken pieces, and the weather being moderate we brought to, hoiſted out the boats, and ſent them to take up as much of the ſmall ice as they could. We piled up the lumps on the quarter-deck, packed them into caſks, and after dinner melted them in the coppers, and obtained about thirty days water, in the courſe of this day, and in the latitude of 61° 36′ ſouth. Two days afterwards we had another opportunity of ſupplying our ſloops with ice, which our people performed with great alacrity, notwithſtanding the excoriation of their hands, which the cold and the ſharpneſs of the ſea produced. A picturesque view of ſome large maſſes of ice, and of our ſhips and boats employed in watering from ſmall ice, is inſerted in Captain Cook's account of this voyage. Some white whales of a huge ſize, ſeemingly ſixty feet long, were obſerved here, and many pinguins floated paſt us, ſtanding upright on ſmall bits of ice. The water we melted out of this ice was perfectly freſh, and had a purer taſte than any which we had on board. If any fault could be found with it, it was that the fixed air was expelled from it, by which means almoſt every one who uſed it was affected with ſwellings in the glands of the throat. Water melted from ſnow or ice is known always to have this effect, and the conſtant uſe of it in mountainous countries produces thoſe enormous wens

1773. JANUARY. Saturday 9.

1773. JANUARY. *(goîtres)* which are common among Alpine nations, and are become ſo habitual that they are looked upon as ornamental. Several perſons on board, unacquainted with natural philoſophy, were very ſeriouſly afraid that the ice, when it began to melt, would burſt the caſks in which it was packed, not conſidering that its volume muſt be greater in its frozen than in its melted ſtate, ſince it floated on the ſurface. The Captain, to undeceive them, placed a little pot filled with ſtamped ice in a temperate cabin, where it gradually diſſolved, and in that ſtate took up conſiderably leſs ſpace than before. Ocular demonſtration always goes farther than the cleareſt arguments; but reaſoning never has leſs weight than with ſailors.

Sunday 17. On the 17th, in the forenoon, we croſſed the antarctic circle, and advanced into the ſouthern frigid zone, which had hitherto remained impenetrable to all navigators. Some days before this period we had ſeen a new ſpecies of petrel, of a brown colour, with a white belly and rump, and a large white ſpot on the wings, which we now named the antarctic petrel, as we ſaw great flights of twenty or thirty of them hereabouts, of which we ſhot many that unfortunately never fell into the ſhip. About five o'clock in the afternoon, we had ſight of more than thirty large iſlands of ice a-head, and perceived a ſtrong white reflexion from the ſky over the horizon. Soon after we paſſed through vaſt quantities of broken ice, which looked honey-

honey-combed and ſpungy, and of a dirty colour. This continually thickened about us, ſo that the ſea became very ſmooth, though the wind was freſh as before. An immenſe field of ſolid ice extended beyond it to the ſouth, as far as the eye could reach from the maſt-head. Seeing it was impoſſible to advance farther that way, Captain Cook ordered the ſhips to put about, and ſtood north-eaſt by north, after having reached 67° 15′ ſouth latitude, where many whales, ſnowy, grey, and antarctic petrels, appeared in every quarter. 1772. JANUARY.

On the 19th and 20th we ſaw a bird, which a gentleman, who had been at Falkland's iſlands, called a Port-Egmont hen *, and which proved to be the ſkua or great northern gull *(larus catarractes)*, common in the high latitudes of both hemiſpheres. The appearance of this bird, was likewiſe conſtrued into a prognoſtick of land; but our diſappointments had already been ſo frequent in this reſpect, that we were not eaſily led to give credit to bare aſſertions. We ſaw a bird of this ſpecies again on the 27th, when we had a great variety of all kinds of petrels and albatroſſes around us. It always ſoared up to a great height, perpendicularly over our heads, and looked down upon us, as it ſhould ſeem with great attention, turning its head now on one ſide, and now on the other. This Wedneſd. 20.

* This bird is mentioned in Lieutenant Cook's voyage in the Endeavour. See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 283.

was

1773. JANUARY. was a novelty to us, who were uſed to ſee all the other aquatic birds of this climate keep near the ſurface of the ſea. The next evening, and on the 29th, we had ſeveral porpeſſes paſſing by us with amazing ſwiftneſs in all directions. They were pied, and had a large blotch of white on the ſides, which came almoſt up to the back behind the dorſal fin. Their velocity was at leaſt triple that of our veſſels, though we now went at the rate of ſeven knots and a half. In the afternoon we ſaw a ſmall black and white bird, which ſome called an ice-bird, and others a murr, and which ſeldom or never go out of ſight of land; but as we could not come near enough to examine it more accurately, we rather believed that it might be a ſpecies of petrel. We ſtood however off and on this night and the next, finding the ſea very moderate, though the wind blew very freſh. We were the more induced to take this precaution as we had received intelligence at the Cape of Good Hope of a diſcovery of land hereabouts, by the French captains M. de Kerguelen and M. de St. Allouarn, in January 1772.

As the journal of that voyage has been ſuppreſſed in France, I ſhall here inſert ſuch particulars as were communicated to us by ſeveral French officers at the Cape of Good Hope. M. de Kerguelen, a lieutenant in the French navy, commanding the veſſel *(flute)* la Fortune, and having with him a ſmaller veſſel *(gabarre)* le Gros Ventre, commanded

manded by M. de St. Allouarn, ſailed from the Iſle of France or Mauritius, the latter end of 1771. On the 13th of January 1772, he ſaw two iſles, which he called the Iſles of Fortune; and the next morning one more, which from its ſhape they called Iſle Ronde. Almoſt about the ſame time, M. de Kerguelen ſaw land, of a conſiderable extent and height, upon which he ſent one of the officers of his ſhip a-head in the cutter to ſound. But the wind blowing freſh, M. de St. Allouarn in the Gros Ventre ſhot ahead of the boat, and finding a bay, which he called the Gros Ventre's bay, ſent his own yawl to take poſſeſſion of the land which was performed with the utmoſt difficulty. Both the boats then returned aboard the Gros Ventre, and the cutter was cut adrift on account of the bad weather. M. de St. Allouarn then ſpent three days in queſt of M. de Kerguelen, who had been driven ſixty leagues to leeward, on account of his weak maſts, and was returned towards the Iſle of France. M. de St. Allouarn continued to take the bearings of this land, and doubled its northern extremity beyond which it tended to the ſouth-eaſtward. In this direction he coaſted it for the ſpace of twenty leagues, and ſeeing it was very high, inacceſſible, and deſtitute of trees, he left it, ſtanding over to the coaſt of New Holland, from thence to Timor and Batavia, and at laſt back to the Iſle of France, where he died ſoon after his arrival. On M. de Kerguelen's return to Europe, he was immediately

1773. JANUARY.

ſent

1773. JANUARY. ſent out again with a 64 gun ſhip called the Roland, and the frigate l'Oiſeau, captain Roſnevet; but after having juſt ſeen the land, which he had diſcovered in his former voyage, he returned without making farther diſcoveries. The northern coaſt of the land which he diſcovered, is ſituated in about 48 degrees ſouth latitude, and about 82 degrees eaſt longitude from Ferro, or 6 degrees eaſt of the Iſle of France, (i. e. in about 64° 20′ eaſt from Greenwich.)

M. de Marion in his expedition of 1772, in January, fell in with ſmall iſlands in three different places, about the latitude of 46½° and 47½°, and about the longitudes of 37°, 46½°, and 48½° eaſt from Greenwich. Theſe iſlands were all of inconſiderable extent, high, rocky, deſtitute of trees, and almoſt entirely barren. M. de Marion had two ſhips under his command, one the Maſcarin, captain Crozet, the other the Caſtrie, captain Du Cleſmure. They proceeded to the ſouthern extremity of New Holland, or Diemen's land, firſt ſeen by Taſman; and from thence to the bay of iſlands in New Zeeland, where M. de Marion was killed with 28 of his men by the natives, of which more ſhall be ſaid in the ſequel. After this loſs M. de Crozet, on whom the command devolved, paſſed through the weſtern part of the South Sea to the Philippinas, from whence he returned to the Iſle de France. Agreeably to theſe accounts, the diſcoveries of the French voyagers have been laid down in an excel-

lent

lent chart of the ſouthern hemiſphere, by M. de Vaugondy, under the direction of the duke de Croy, and publiſhed in March 1773. 1773. FEBRUARY.

On the 31ſt in the evening, our latitude being nearly that of 50° ſouth, we paſſed by a large iſland of ice, which at that inſtant crumbled to pieces with a tremendous exploſion. The next morning a bundle of ſea weeds was ſeen floating paſt the ſloop; and in the afternoon, captain Furneaux in the Adventure having hailed us, acquainted captain Cook that he had ſeen a number of divers, reſembling thoſe in the Engliſh ſeas, and had paſt a great bed of floating rock-weeds. In conſequence of theſe obſervations we ſtood off and on during night, and continued an eaſterly courſe the next morning. We ſaw many petrels and black ſhear-waters, ſome rock-weed, and a ſingle tern *(ſterna)* or as the ſeamen call it an egg-bird, which had a forked tail. At noon we obſerved in 48° 36′ ſouth latitude, which was nearly the ſame in which the French diſcoveries are ſaid to be ſituated. After noon we ſtood ſouth-weſtward, but the next day the gale encreaſed to ſuch a degree, as obliged us to hand our topſails, and ſtand on under the courſes all night: however, at eight o'clock on the 4th, we found a ſmooth ſea again, and ſet more ſail, changing our courſe to the north-weſtward at noon. On the 6th our latitude at noon was nearly 48 degrees ſouth, about 60 degrees eaſt from Greenwich, when not ſeeing Monday 1. Tueſday 2.

FEBRUARY. any land, we gave over the attempt to ſtand in ſearch of it, and directed our courſe once more to the ſouh-eaſtward, to the main object of our voyage. The ſmoothneſs of the ſea, whilſt we had ſtrong eaſterly gales, however perſuaded us, that there was probably ſome land near us to the eaſtward, and the ſituation given to the French diſcoveries, in M. Vaugondy's late chart, has confirmed our ſuppoſition; for, according to it, we muſt have been at leaſt 2 degrees of longitude to the weſt of it, on the ſecond of February, when we were fartheſt to the eaſt in the given latitude. Though we did not fall in with the land itſelf, yet we have done ſo much ſervice to geography by our track, as to put it beyond a doubt, that the French diſcovery is a ſmall iſland, and not, what it was ſuppoſed at firſt to be, the north cape of a great ſouthern continent.

Monday 8. On the 8th in the morning, we had an exceeding thick fog, during which we loſt ſight of the Adventure, our conſort. We fired guns all that day and the next, at firſt every half hour, and afterwards every hour, without receiving any anſwer; and at night we burnt falſe fires, which likewiſe proved ineffectual.

Wedneſd. 10. On the 10th in the morning, notwithſtanding all our endeavours to recover our conſort, we were obliged to proceed alone on a diſmal courſe to the ſouthward, and to expoſe ourſelves once more to the dangers of that frozen climate, without the hope of being ſaved by our fellow-

voyagers,

voyagers, in caſe of loſing our own veſſel. Our parting with the Adventure, was almoſt univerſally regretted among our crew, and none of them ever looked around the ocean without expreſſing ſome concern on ſeeing our ſhip alone on this vaſt and unexplored expanſe, where the appearance of a companion ſeemed to alleviate our toils, and inſpired cheerfulneſs and comfort. We were likewiſe not entirely without apprehenſions, that the Adventure might have fallen in with land, as the ſight of pinguins, of little diving petrels, and eſpecially of a kind of grebe, ſeemed to vindicate its vicinity. Indeed, according to the chart of M. Vaugondy we muſt have been but very little to the ſouth of it at that time. 1773. FEBRUARY.

On the 17th we were near 58 degrees ſouth, and took up a great quantity of ſmall ice, with which we filled our water-caſks. A variety of petrels and albatroſſes, had attended us continually; and from time to time the ſkua, or great northern gull *(larus catarractes)*, which our people called a Port Egmont hen, many pinguins, ſome ſeals, and ſome whales had made their appearance near us. A beautiful phænomenon was obſerved during the preceding night, which appeared again this and ſeveral following nights. It conſiſted of long columns of a clear white light, ſhooting up from the horizon to the eaſtward, almoſt to the zenith, and gradually ſpreading on the whole ſouthern part of the ſky. Theſe columns ſometimes were Wedneſd. 17.

1773. FEBRUARY. bent ſideways at their upper extremity, and though in moſt reſpects ſimilar to the northern lights *(aurora borealis)* of our hemiſphere, yet differed from them, in being always of a whitiſh colour, whereas ours aſſume various tints, eſpecially thoſe of a fiery, and purple hue. The ſtars were ſometimes hid by, and ſometimes faintly to be ſeen through the ſubſtance of theſe ſouthern lights, (*aurora auſtralis*), which have hitherto, as far as I can find, eſcaped the notice of voyagers. The ſky was generally clear when they appeared, and the air ſharp and cold, the thermometer ſtanding at the freezing point.

Wedneſd. 24. On the 24th, being in about 62 degrees ſouth latitude, we fell in once more with a ſolid field of ice, which confined our progreſs to the ſouth, very much to the ſatisfaction of every body on board. We had now been long at ſea, without receiving any refreſhment; the favorable ſeaſon for making diſcoveries towards the frozen zone, drew to an end; the weather daily became more ſharp, and uncomfortable, and preſaged a dreadful winter in theſe ſeas; and, laſtly, the nights lengthened apace, and made our navigation more dangerous than it had hitherto been. It was therefore very natural, that our people, exhauſted by fatigues and the want of wholeſome food, ſhould wiſh for a place of refreſhment, and rejoice to leave a part of the world, where they could not expect to meet with it.

MARCH. Wedneſd. 17. We continued however from this day till the 17th of March

to

to run to the eaſtward, between 61° and 58° of ſouth latitude, during which time we had a great ſhare of eaſterly winds, which commonly brought fogs, and rains with them, and repeatedly expoſed us to the moſt imminent danger of being wrecked againſt huge iſlands of ice. The ſhapes of theſe large frozen maſſes, were frequently ſingularly ruinous, and ſo far picturesque enough; among them we paſſed one of a great ſize, with a hollow in the middle, reſembling a grotto or cavern, which was pierced through, and admitted the light from the other ſide. Some had the appearance of a ſpire or ſteeple; and many others gave full ſcope to our imagination, which compared them to ſeveral known objects, by that means attempting to overcome the tedioufneſs of our cruize, which the ſight of birds, porpeſſes, ſeals, and whales, now too familiar to our eyes, could not prevent from falling heavily upon us. Notwithſtanding our excellent preſervatives, eſpecially the four-krout, ſeveral of our people had now ſtrong ſymptoms of ſea-ſcurvy, ſuch as bad gums, difficult breathing, livid blotches, eruptions, contracted limbs, and greeniſh greaſy filaments in the urine. Wort was therefore preſcribed to them, and thoſe who were the moſt affected drank five pints of it per day; the contracted limbs were bathed in it, and the warm grains applied to them. By this means we ſucceeded to mitigate, and in ſome individuals entirely to remove the ſymptoms of this horrid diſeaſe. The ri- 1773. MARCH.

gours

1773. MARCH. gours of the climate likewiſe violently affected the live ſheep, which we had embarked at the Cape of Good Hope. They were covered with eruptions, dwindled to mere ſkeletons, and would hardly take any nouriſhment. Our goats and ſows too, miſcarried in the tempeſtuous weather, or their off-ſpring were killed by the cold. In ſhort, we felt, from the numerous concurrent circumſtances, that it was time to abandon the high ſouthern latitudes, and retire to ſome port, where our crew might obtain refreſhments, and where we might ſave the few ſheep, which were intended as preſents to the natives of the South-ſea iſlands.

On the 16th, being in about 58 degrees of ſouth latitude, we ſaw the ſea luminous at night, though not to ſuch a degree as we had obſerved it near the Cape, but only by means of ſome ſcattered ſparks. This phænomenon was however remarkable, on account of the high latitude we were in, and the cold weather, our thermometer being at $33\frac{1}{4}^{\circ}$ at noon. We ſaw the ſouthern lights again during the nights of the 16th and 19th; and this laſt time, the columns formed an arch acroſs the ſky, rather brighter than any we had hitherto ſeen. We now ſtood to the north-eaſtward, in order to reach the ſouth end of New-Zeeland; and on this courſe we had ſtrong gales, and frequently ſaw weeds, eſpecially rock-weeds, together with numbers of petrels, and other birds. We were much amuſed by a ſingular chace of ſeveral ſkuas or great grey gulls,

after

after a large white albatroſs. The ſkuas ſeemed to get the better of this bird, notwithſtanding its length of wings, and whenever they overtook it, they endeavoured to attack it under the belly, probably knowing that to be the moſt defenceleſs part; the albatroſs on theſe occaſions had no other method of eſcaping, than by ſettling on the water, where its formidable beak ſeemed to keep them at bay. The ſkuas are in general very ſtrong and rapacious birds, and in the Ferro Iſlands frequently tear lambs to pieces, and carry them away to their neſts. The albatroſſes do not ſeem to be ſo rapacious, but live upon ſmall marine animals, eſpecially of the *molluſca*, or blubber claſs. They appeared in great numbers around us, as we came to the northward of 50 degrees ſouth, only few ſolitary birds having gone ſo far to the ſouth as we had penetrated; from whence it may be inferred, that they are properly inhabitants of the temperate zone. 1773. MARCH.

As we ſtood to the northward, we alſo obſerved more ſeals every day, which came from the coaſt of New Zeeland. A large trunk of a tree, and ſeveral bunches of weeds were ſeen on the 25th, and greatly exhilarated the ſpirits of our ſailors. Soon after, the land was deſcried, bearing N. E. by E. at a vaſt diſtance. About five o'clock in the afternoon we were within a few miles of it, and ſaw ſome high mountains inland, and a broken rocky coaſt before us, where ſeveral inlets ſeemed to indicate an extenſive bay or ſound. Thurſday 25.

We

1773. MARCH. We tried ſoundings in 30 fathoms, but found none; however, at the maſt-head they obſerved ſunken rocks cloſe to us, on which we immediately tacked, and ſtood off ſhore, as the weather was growing dark and miſty. The next morning we found this part of New Zeeland lay to the ſouthward of Cape Weſt, and had not been explored by captain Cook, in the Endeavour.

Thus ended our firſt cruize in the high ſouthern latitudes, after a ſpace of four months and two days, out of ſight of land, during which we had experienced no untoward accident, and had been ſafely led through numerous dangers by the guiding hand of Providence, which preſerved our crew in good health during the whole time, a few individuals excepted. Our whole courſe, from the Cape of Good Hope to New Zeeland, was a ſeries of hardſhips, which had never been experienced before: all the diſagreeable circumſtances of the ſails and rigging ſhattered to pieces, the veſſel rolling gunwale to, and her upper works torn by the violence of the ſtrain; the concomitant effects of ſtorms, which have been painted with ſuch ſtrong expreſſion, and blackneſs of *Colorit*, by the able writer of Anſon's Voyage, were perhaps the leaſt diſtreſſing occurrences of ours. We had the perpetual ſeverities of a rigorous climate to cope with; our ſeamen and officers were expoſed to rain, ſleet, hail, and ſnow; our rigging was conſtantly encruſted with ice, which cut the hands of thoſe who were obliged to touch it; our

proviſion

proviſion of freſh water was to be collected in lumps of ice floating on the ſea, where the cold, and the ſharp ſaline element alternately numbed, and ſcarified the ſailors' limbs; we were perpetually expoſed to the danger of running againſt huge maſſes of ice, which filled the immenſe Southern ocean: the frequent and ſudden appearance of theſe perils, required an almoſt continual exertion of the whole crew, to manage the ſhip with the greateſt degree of preciſion and diſpatch. The length of time which we remained out of ſight of land, and the long abſtinence from any ſort of refreſhment were equally diſtreſsful; for our hooks and lines diſtributed in November (See pag. 90.) had hitherto been of no ſervice, on account of our navigation in high ſouthern latitudes, and acroſs an unfathomable ocean, where we ſaw no fiſh except whales, and where it is well known no others can be expected; the torrid zone being the only one where they may be caught out of ſoundings. 1773. MARCH.

——Atrum
Defendens piſces hiemat mare. HORAT.

We may add to theſe the diſmal gloomineſs which always prevailed in the ſouthern latitudes, where we had impenetrable fogs laſting for weeks together, and where we rarely ſaw the cheering face of the ſun; a circumſtance which alone is ſufficient to deject the moſt undaunted,

1773. MARCH. daunted, and to four the ſpirits of the moſt cheerful. It is therefore juſtly to be wondered at, and ought to be conſidered as a diſtinguiſhing mark of divine protection, that we had not felt thoſe ill effects which might have been expected, and juſtly dreaded as the reſult of ſuch accumulated diſtreſſes.

CHAP.

MARCH. 1773.

CHAP. V.

Stay at Duſky Bay; deſcription of it, and account of our tranſactions there.

AFTER an interval of one hundred and twenty-two days, and a run of above three thouſand five hundred leagues, out of ſight of land, we entered Duſky Bay on the 26th of March about noon. This bay is ſituated Friday 26. a little to the northward of Cape Weſt, and captain Cook, in his voyage in the Endeavour, had diſcovered and named it without entering into it *. The ſoundings gave about 40 fathoms in the entrance, but as we advanced, we had no ground with 60, and therefore were obliged to puſh on farther. The weather was delightfully fair, and genially warm, when compared to what we had lately experienced; and we glided along by inſenſible degrees, wafted by light airs, paſt numerous rocky iſlands, each of which was covered with wood and ſhrubberies, where numerous evergreens were ſweetly contraſted and mingled with the various ſhades of autumnal yellow. Flocks of aquatic birds enlivened the rocky ſhores, and the whole country reſounded with the wild notes of the feathered

* See Hawkeſworth's compilation, vol. III. p. 424.

1773. MARCH. tribe. We had long and eagerly wiſhed for the land and its vegetable productions, and therefore could not but eye the proſpect before us with peculiar delight, and with emotions of joy and ſatisfaction which were ſtrongly marked in the countenance of each individual.

About three o'clock in the afternoon, we dropped an anchor under a point of an iſland, where we were in ſome meaſure ſheltered from the ſea, and ſo near the ſhore, as to reach it with a hawſer. The ſloop was no ſooner in ſafety, than every ſailor put his hook and line overboard, and in a few moments numbers of fine fiſh were hauled up on all parts of the veſſel, which heightened the raptures we had already felt at our entrance into this bay. The real good taſte of the fiſh, joined to our long abſtinence, inclined us to look upon our firſt meal here, as the moſt delicious we had ever made in our lives. The view of rude ſceneries in the ſtyle of *Roſa*, of antediluvian foreſts which cloathed the rock, and of numerous rills of water, which every where rolled down the ſteep declivity, altogether conſpired to complete our joy; and ſo apt is mankind, after a long abſence from land, to be prejudiced in favour of the wildeſt ſhore, that we looked upon the country at that time, as one of the moſt beautiful which nature unaſſiſted by art could produce. Such are the general ideas of travellers and voyagers long exhauſted by

by diſtreſſes; and with ſuch warmth of imagination they have viewed the rude cliffs of Juan Fernandez, and the impenetrable foreſts of Tinian! 1772. MARCH.

Immediately after dinner two boats were ſent out to reconnoitre different parts of the bay, and chiefly to look for a ſafe harbour for our veſſel, the firſt anchoring-place being open, inconvenient, and only ſerving the neceſſity of the moment. We improved theſe opportunities of purſuing our reſearches in natural hiſtory, and ſeparated in order to profit by both excurſions. Each of the parties found convenient and well-ſheltered harbours, with plenty of wood and water; and wherever they went they met with ſuch abundance of fiſh and water-fowl, that they entertained hopes of a conſtant ſupply of refreſhments during their ſtay in theſe parts. This proſpect prevailed upon Capt. Cook, who had but curſorily examined the ſouthern extremities of New-Zeeland in his former voyage, to ſpend ſome time there, in order to gain a more competent knowledge of its ſituation and productions. On our part, we perceived a new ſtore of animal and vegetable bodies, and among them hardly any that were perfectly ſimilar to the known ſpecies, and ſeveral not analogous even to the known genera. With theſe therefore we hoped to be wholly employed during our ſtay, in ſpight of the approach of autumn, which ſeemed to threaten the vegetable creation.

Early

1773. MARCH. Saturday 27.

Early the next morning, a ſmall boat having been ſent out towards the ſhore, returned in three hours time with as many fiſhes, caught by the hook, as ſupplied a plentiful dinner to all on board. The beſt and moſt ſavoury fiſh was a ſpecies of the cod, which, from its external colour, our ſailors called a coal-fiſh: beſides this we caught ſeveral ſpecies of excellent flat cavalhas *(ſciænæ)*, ſome ſcorpens, mullets, horſe-mackrel, and many other ſorts of a fine taſte, which were entirely unknown in Europe. At nine o'clock we got under ſail and went into Pickerſgill harbour, one of thoſe examined the preceding day, where the ſhip was moored head and ſtern in a ſmall creek, and ſo near the ſhore, that we could reach it by means of a ſtage of a few planks. Nature had aſſiſted us for this purpoſe with a large tree, projecting in an horizontal poſition over the water, of which we placed the top on our gunwale, connecting our planks with it. This ſituation facilitated all our operations, and was particularly adapted to the conveniency of wooding and watering, for our ſloop's yards were locked in the branches of ſurrounding trees, and about half a muſket ſhot a-ſtern we had a fine ſtream of freſh water.

We now began to clear away the woods from a neighbouring hill, in order to fix the aſtronomer's obſervatory upon it, and to eſtabliſh our forge there, as our iron-works wanted repairs. Near the watering-place we pitched tents for the ſail-

ſail-makers, coopers, waterers, and wood-cutters. Theſe occupations ſerved to lower the great idea which our people had conceived of this country; for the prodigious intricacy of various climbers, briars, ſhrubs, and ferns which were interwoven throughout the foreſts, rendered the taſk of clearing the ground extremely fatiguing and difficult, and almoſt precluded the acceſs to the interior parts of the country. It is indeed reaſonable to ſuppoſe, that in the ſouthern parts of New-Zeeland, the foreſts have never been touched by human induſtry, but have remained in the rude unimproved ſtate of nature ſince their firſt exiſtence. Our excurſions into them gave us ſufficient grounds for this ſuppoſition; for not only the climbing plants and ſhrubs obſtructed our paſſage, but likewiſe numbers of rotten trees lay in our way, felled by winds and old age. A new generation of young trees, of paraſitic plants, ferns, and moſſes ſprouted out of the rich mould to which this old timber was reduced by length of time, and a deceitful bark ſometimes ſtill covered the interior rotten ſubſtance, whereon if we attempted to ſtep, we ſunk in to the waiſt. The animal creation afforded another proof that this country had not yet undergone any changes from the hands of mankind, and indeed at firſt raiſed the idea, that Duſky Bay was wholly uninhabited. Numbers of ſmall birds which dwelt in the woods were ſo little acquainted with men, that they familiarly hopped upon the neareſt

1773. MARCH.

1773. MARCH. neareſt branches, nay on the ends of our fowling-pieces, and perhaps looked at us as new objects, with a curioſity ſimilar to our own. This little boldneſs in reality at firſt protected them from harm, ſince it was impoſſible to ſhoot them when they approached ſo near; but in a few days it frequently proved the means of their deſtruction; for a ſly cat on board, had no ſooner perceived ſo excellent an opportunity of obtaining delicious meals, than ſhe regularly took a walk in the woods every morning, and made great havock among the little birds, that were not aware of ſuch an inſidious enemy.

As we had plenty of fiſh, and ſaw a number of water-birds which might afford us a variety of animal food, ſome of our botanical excurſions were in a great meaſure inſtituted in ſearch of uſeful vegetables, to be eaten as greens. From thence the moſt ſalutary effects might be expected, by a ſet of people who had been above ſeventeen weeks at ſea, and whoſe blood muſt have been more or leſs corrupted by living ſo long on ſalt proviſions.

On the firſt day after our arrival we found a beautiful tree in flower, ſomething related to the myrtle-genus, of which an infuſion had been drank inſtead of tea in Capt. Cook's former voyage. We immediately repeated the experiment with great eagerneſs, as we had not yet ſeen any plant which was fit to be uſed at our tables. Its leaves were finely aromatic, aſtringent, and had a particular pleaſant

fant flavour at the firſt infuſion; but this fine taſte went off at the next filling up of the tea-pot, and a great degree of bitterneſs was then extracted. We therefore never ſuffered it to be twice infuſed. The uſe of this plant, which became general among our crew, probably contributed greatly to reſtore their ſtrength, and to remove all ſcorbutic ſymptoms. A plant, which might be of ſervice to future navigators, deſerved to be drawn, in order that they might know it again. We have therefore very readily permitted Captain Cook to make uſe of our drawing of it, from which a plate has been engraved by order of the Admiralty, intended to accompany his own account of this voyage. In a fine ſoil in thick foreſts it grows to a conſiderable tree, ſometimes thirty or forty feet high, and above a foot in diameter; on a hilly arid expoſure I have, on the contrary, found it as a little ſhrub, ſix inches high, which bore flowers and ſeed; but its uſual ſize is about eight or ten feet, and about three inches in diameter. In that caſe its ſtem is irregular and unequal, dividing very ſoon into branches which riſe at acute angles, and only bear leaves and flowers at top. The flowers are white and very ornamental to the whole plant. Another tree, which grew in great plenty round about us, was likewiſe tried, and afforded a good infuſion; but the reſemblance it bore to the trees of the fir tribe, and a kind of reſinous taſte, ſoon convinced us that it was fitter to ſerve the purpoſes of 1773. MARCH.

1773. MARCH. the American ſpruce-tree, and that a palatable and wholeſome liquor might be brewed from it, as a kind of ſubſtitute for ſpruce-beer *. In effect, with the addition of the inſpiſſated juice of wort, and of ſome molaſſes, we brewed a very good ſort of beer, which we improved very conſiderably afterwards, by correcting the too great aſtringency of our new ſpruce, with an equal quantity of the new tea-tree. Its taſte was pleaſant, and ſomething bitter; and the only fault we could obſerve in it was, that being taken on an empty ſtomach, it frequently cauſed a nauſea or ſickneſs; but in all other reſpects it proved a very ſalutary drink. The ſpruce of New-Zeeland is a very beautiful tree, and conſpicuous on account of its pendant branches, which are loaded with numerous long thread-like leaves, of a vivid green. It frequently grows to the height of fifty or ſixty, and even one hundred feet, and has above ten feet in girth. Though the ſpruce and the tea-trees alone afforded articles of refreſhment in Duſky Bay; yet we found the woods full of trees of various kinds, very fit for the uſe of ſhipwrights, joiners, and other mechanics; and Capt. Cook was of opinion that, except in the river Thames on the northern iſland, he had not obſerved a finer growth of timber on all New-Zeeland.

* This uſeful plant deſerves a deſcription for the benefit of the navigator; but, notwithſtanding all our reſearches, we could never find it either in flower or in fruit, owing to the unfavourable ſeaſons in which we viſited New-Zeeland.

We

1773. MARCH. Sunday 28.

We had not been above two days in this bay, before we found that our opinion of its being uninhabited was premature. On the 28th in the morning ſeveral of our officers went a ſhooting in a ſmall boat, and on entering a cove two or three miles from the ſhip, perceived ſeveral natives upon a beach, who were about to launch their canoe. The New Zeelanders halloo'd at their approach, and ſeeming by this means more numerous than they really were, the officers thought proper to return and acquaint the captain with their diſcovery; a ſtep which they found the more neceſſary, as the weather was very rainy, and might, in caſe of danger, have prevented their pieces from going off. They were ſcarcely returned on board, when a canoe * appeared off a point, at about a mile's diſtance from the ſloop; there were ſeven or eight people in it, who looked at us for ſome time, but notwithſtanding all the ſigns of friendſhip which we could make, ſuch as calling to them to come to us, waving a white cloth, and promiſing beads, they did not care to come nearer, and paddled back again the ſame way they came. They appeared to be dreſſed in mats, and had broad paddles with which they managed their canoe, like the inhabitants in the northern parts of New Zeeland.

* We ſhall always make uſe of this word to ſignify an Indian embarkation, unleſs we mean to deſcribe or ſpecify it more particularly.

1773. MARCH. Captain Cook reſolved to viſit them in the afternoon, in order to quiet the apprehenſion which they ſeemed to have entertained. We went in two boats, accompanying him and ſeveral of the officers into the cove, where the natives had been firſt ſeen. Here we found a double canoe hauled upon the ſhore, near ſome old, low huts, about which we ſaw veſtiges of fire places, ſome fiſhing-nets, and a few ſcattered fiſh. The canoe which appeared to be old and in bad order, conſiſted of two troughs or boats joined together with ſticks, tied acroſs the gunwales with ſtrings of the New Zeeland flax-plant *. Each part conſiſted of planks ſowed together with ropes made of the flax-plant, and had a carved head coarſely repreſenting a human face, with eyes made of round pieces of ear-ſhell, which ſomewhat reſembled mother of pearl. This canoe contained two paddles, a baſket full of berries of the *coriaria ruſcifolia* Lin. and ſome fiſhes; but the natives were not to be ſeen or heard, which gave us reaſon to believe that they had retired into the woods. To conciliate their good will, we left ſome medals, looking-glaſſes, beads, &c. in the canoe, and embarked again after a ſhort ſtay. We then rowed to the head of the cove, in order to ſurvey it, where we found a fine brook of freſh water coming down on a flat beach, from whence the water continued ſhallow to a con-

* See Hawkeſworth's compilation, vol. III. p. 443.

ſiderable

ſiderable extent, ſo that our boat ran aground ſeveral times. Ducks, ſhags, black oyſter-catchers, and ſome ſorts of plovers were very numerous here. At our return we viſited the canoe again, added a hatchet to the other preſents which we had left before, and to ſhew the uſe of it, we cut ſeveral chips out of a tree, and left it ſticking there. No natives appeared this ſecond time, though we imagined they could not be far off, as we thought we could ſmell the ſmoke of a fire. However, captain Cook deſiſted at preſent from ſearching in the woods, ſince they purpoſely avoided us, and chooſing to leave it to time and their own free will to cultivate an intercourſe with us, he returned on board late in the evening. 1773. MARCH. Monday 29.

Heavy ſhowers of rain fell all the next morning, but intermitted in the afternoon, giving us an opportunity of going into the woods above our cove, where the rains had ſo thoroughly ſoaked the ſoil, that together with the other impediments in walking in this country, the prodigious ſlipperineſs rendered our excurſion laborious and fatiguing. We met however with a few plants, which ſtill ſhewed ſome late bloſſoms, notwithſtanding the advanced ſeaſon; but we were at the ſame time greatly tantalized by the appearance of numerous trees and ſhrubs, which had already loſt their flowers and fruits, and only ſerved to give us an idea of the great profuſion of new vegetables in this country.

The

1773. MARCH. The two following days we were entirely confined on board, on account of the rain and ſtormy weather; which not a little damped our ſpirits, and gave us reaſon to fear we ſhould ſpend the remainder of our time very diſ-

APRIL. Thurſday 1. agreeably. However, on the 1ſt of April in the afternoon, we took the advantage of a lucid interval to make another viſit to the cove where we had ſeen the Indians. We found every thing in the ſame ſituation as we had left it, and it did not appear that any perſon had been near the canoe ſince that time. The weather being now fair, we ſaw this cove in all its perfection. It is ſo ſpacious that a whole fleet of ſhips may lie at anchor in it, and ſome of the loftieſt hills in all the bay encompaſs it on the ſouth-weſt ſide, and are entirely covered with woods from the ſummit to the water's ſide. The different projecting points, and the various iſlands in the bay, form altogether a pictureſque and pleaſing ſcene. The ſmoothneſs of the water, illumined by the ſetting ſun, the different degrees of verdure, and the various notes of birds which reſounded throughout the whole cove during this calm evening, greatly ſoftened the rude, uncultivated outlines of this landſcape.

The pleaſure we had enjoyed in the evening, induced us to return to the cove again the next day, which continued to be perfectly fair. We ſet out at ſun-riſe, and did not return till late in the evening, with a conſider-

able

able acquiſition of new birds, and plants. We had a young dog with us at this time, which the officers had taken on board at the Cape of Good Hope, and intended to try, whether we could not train him up to the gun: but we had no ſooner diſcharged the firſt fowling-piece, than he ran into the woods, and would not return, though we uſed all poſſible means to recover him. Captain Cook likewiſe took the opportunity of the fair weather, to examine different parts of the bay; and touched at a little rock, near our firſt anchoring place, which had already at that time acquired the name of Seal-rock, from the animals that came to ſleep upon it. Here he found a number of ſeals, and killed three of them, among which one afforded him great ſport: for having been repeatedly wounded, it became quite furious, and attacked the boat, where it was at laſt killed. It weighed 220 pounds, was about ſix feet long, and very lean. After he had paſſed ſeveral iſles, he reached the north-weſt part of the bay, formed by the land of Point Five-fingers: there, at the bottom of a fine cove, he found a great variety of aquatic birds, of which he killed and brought on board a conſiderable number. 1773. APRIL.

Another rainy pauſe of three days followed this excurſion, confining us to our ſhip, where a ſort of little crane-flies *(tipula alis incumbentibus)*, which had plagued us ever ſince our entrance into Duſky Bay, became remarkably troubleſome during the bad weather. They were numerous in the

ſkirts

1773. APRIL. ſkirts of the woods, not half ſo large as gnats or muſketoes, and our ſailors called them ſand-flies. Their ſting was extremely painful, and as often as the hand or face grew warm, cauſed a troubleſome itching, the leaſt irritation of which brought on a very violent ſwelling, attended with great pain. We were, however, not all equally affected; myſelf in particular, never felt any great inconvenience from them; others, on the contrary, ſuffered in a very violent degree, eſpecially my father, who could not hold a pen to write down the common occurrences in a journal, and fell into a high fever at night. Various remedies were tried, but all proved ineffectual, except the ſimple unction with ſoft pomatum, and the conſtant uſe of gloves.

Tueſday 6. Early on the 6th, ſeveral of the officers went into the cove, which the captain had diſcovered on the 2d; and the latter, accompanied by Mr. Hodges, Dr. Sparrman, my father, and myſelf proceeded in another boat, to continue the ſurvey of the bay, to copy views from nature, and to ſearch for the natural productions of the country. We directed our courſe to the north ſide, where we found a fine ſpacious cove, from which we had not the leaſt proſpect of the ſea. Along its ſteep ſhores we obſerved ſeveral ſmall but beautiful caſcades, which fell from vaſt heights, and greatly improved the ſcene; they guſhed out through the midſt of the woods, and at laſt fell in a clear column, to which a ſhip might lie ſo near, as to fill her caſks on board with the greateſt ſafety,

ſafety, by means of a leather tube, which the ſailors call a hoſe. At the bottom there was a ſhallow muddy part, with a little beach of ſhell-ſand, and a brook, as in all the greater coves of the bay. In this fine place, we found a number of wild fowl, and particularly wild ducks, of which we ſhot fourteen, from whence we gave it the name of Duck Cove. As we were returning home, we heard a loud hallooing on the rocky point of an iſland, which on this occaſion obtained the name of Indian Iſland; and ſtanding in to the ſhore, we perceived one of the natives, from whom this noiſe proceeded. He ſtood with a club or battle-axe in his hand, on a projecting point, and behind him on the ſkirts of the wood we ſaw two women, each of them having a long ſpear. When our boat came to the foot of the rock, we called to him, in the language of Taheitee, *tayo, harre maï*, "friend, come hither;" he did not, however, ſtir from his poſt, but held a long ſpeech, at certain intervals pronouncing it with great earneſtneſs and vehemence, and ſwinging round his club, on which he leaned at other times. Captain Cook went to the head of the boat, called to him in a friendly manner, and threw him his own and ſome other handkerchiefs, which he would not pick up. The captain then taking ſome ſheets of white paper in his hand, landed on the rock unarmed, and held the paper out to the native. The man now trembled very viſibly, and having exhibited ſtrong marks of fear in his countenance, 1773. APRIL.

1773. APRIL. took the paper: upon which captain Cook coming up to him, took hold of his hand, and embraced him, touching the man's noſe with his own, which is their mode of ſalutation. His apprehenſion was by this means diſſipated, and he called to the two women, who came and joined him, while ſeveral of us landed to keep the captain company. A ſhort converſation enſued, of which very little was underſtood on both ſides, for want of a competent knowledge of the language. Mr. Hodges immediately took ſketches of their countenances, and their geſtures ſhewed that they clearly underſtood what he was doing; on which they called him *tóä-tóä*, that term being probably applicable to the imitative arts. The man's countenance was very pleaſing and open; one of the women, which we afterwards believed to be his daughter, was not wholly ſo diſagreeable as one might have expected in New Zeeland, but the other was remarkably ugly, and had a prodigious excreſcence on her upper lip. They were all of a dark brown or olive complexion; their hair was black, and curling, and ſmeared with oil and ruddle; the man wore his tied upon the crown of the head, but the women had it cut ſhort. Their bodies were tolerably well proportioned in the upper part; but they had remarkable ſlender, ill-made, and bandy legs. Their dreſs conſiſted of mats made of the New Zeeland flax-plant *,

* See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. III. p. 443.

interwoven

interwoven with feathers; and in their ears they wore small pieces of white albatross skins stained with ruddle or ochre. We offered them some fishes and wild fowl, but they threw them back to us, intimating that they did not want provisions. The approaching night obliged us to retire, not without promising our new friends a visit the next morning. The man remained silent, and looked after us with composure and great attention, which seemed to speak a profound meditation; but the youngest of the two women, whose vociferous volubility of tongue exceeded every thing we had met with, began to dance at our departure, and continued to be as loud as ever. Our seamen passed several coarse jests on this occasion, but nothing was more obvious to us than the general drift of nature, which not only provided man with a partner to alleviate his cares and sweeten his labours, but endowed that partner likewise with a desire of pleasing by a superior degree of vivacity and affability. 1773. April

The next morning we returned to the natives, and presented them with several articles which we had brought with us for that purpose. But so much was the judgment of the man superior to that of his countrymen, and most of the South Sea nations *, that he received almost every thing with indifference, except what he immediately con- Wednesday 7.

* See Hawkesworth's Compilation.

1773. APRIL. ceived the uſe of, ſuch as hatchets and large ſpike-nails. At this interview he introduced his whole family to us, conſiſting of two women, whom we ſuppoſed to be his wives; the young woman, a boy of about fourteen years of age, and three ſmaller children, of which the youngeſt was at the breaſt. One of the wives had the excreſcence or wen on the upper lip, and was evidently neglected by the man, probably on account of her diſagreeable appearance. They conducted us ſoon after to their habitation, which lay but a few yards within the wood, on a low hill, and conſiſted of two mean huts, made of a few ſticks thatched with unprepared leaves of the flax-plant, and covered with the bark of trees. In return for our preſents they parted with ſeveral of their ornaments and weapons, particularly the battle-axes, but they did not chooſe to give us their ſpears. When we were preparing to re-embark, the man came to the water-ſide, and preſented to Captain Cook a dreſs made of the flax plant, a belt of weeds, ſome beads made of a little bird's bones, and ſome albatroſs ſkins. We were at firſt of opinion that theſe were only intended as a retribution for what he had received, but he ſoon undeceived us by ſhewing a ſtrong deſire of poſſeſſing one of our boat-cloaks *. We were not charitable enough to part with our cloaths, when we knew the defi-

* Boat-cloaks are commonly of prodigious dimenſions and great width, ſo that the whole body may be wrapped into them ſeveral times.

ciency

ciency could not be ſupplied again; but as ſoon as we came on board, Captain Cook ordered a large cloak to be made of red baize, which we brought to the man at our next viſit. 1773. APRIL.

The rain prevented our going to him the next morning, but in the afternoon, the weather being a little more promiſing, we returned to Indian Iſland. However, at our approach, inſtead of being welcomed by the natives on the ſhore, we ſaw none of them, and received no anſwer when we ſhouted to them. We landed therefore, and having proceeded to their habitation, ſoon found the reaſon of this unuſual behaviour. They were preparing to receive us in all their finery, ſome being already completely adorned, and others ſtill buſy in dreſſing. Their hair was combed, tied on the crown of the head, and anointed with ſome oil or greaſe; white feathers were ſtuck in at the top; ſome had fillets of white feathers all round the head, and others wore pieces of an albatroſs ſkin, with its fine white down in their ears. Thus fitted out, they ſhouted at our approach, and received us ſtanding, with marks of friendſhip and great courteſy. The captain wore the new cloak of baize on his own ſhoulders, and now took it off and preſented the man with it; he, on his part, ſeemed ſo much pleaſed with it, that he immediately drew out of his girdle a pattoo-pattoo, or ſhort flat club made of a great fiſh's bone, and gave it to the Captain in return. Thurſday 8.

1773. APRIL. return for ſo valuable an acquiſition. We endeavoured to enter into converſation; but, though Captain Cook had taken Gibſon, the corporal of marines, with him for that purpoſe, he being ſuppoſed to know more of the language * than any other perſon on board, yet all our attempts to be underſtood proved fruitleſs, becauſe it ſeemed this family had a peculiar harſhneſs of pronunciation. We therefore took leave of them, and proceeded to ſurvey different parts of the bay, fiſhing at intervals, ſhooting birds, and collecting ſhells, and other marine productions among the rocks. The weather was cloudy all this time, though it did not rain where we were; but when we returned to our ſhip's cove, we were told it had rained there inceſſantly in our abſence. The ſame obſervation we had frequent opportunities of making during our ſojourn in Duſky Bay. The probable cauſe of this difference of weather at ſuch little diſtances, are the high mountains which run along the ſouth ſhore of the bay, gradually ſloping towards the weſt cape. Theſe mountains being almoſt conſtantly capped with clouds, our cove, which lay immediately under, and was ſurrounded by them, was of courſe expoſed to the vapours, which perpetually appeared moving with various velocities along the ſides of the hills, involving the tops of the trees over which they paſſed in a

* He was particularly verſed in the language of the iſle of O-Taheitee; and there is only a difference of dialect between it and the language of New Zeeland.

kind

kind of white ſemi-opaque miſt, and deſcending upon us at laſt in rains or in fogs which wetted us to the ſkin. The iſles in the northern part not having ſuch high hills to attract and ſtop the clouds coming from the ſea, permitted them to paſs freely on to the very bottom of the bay to the Alps, which we ſaw covered with perpetual ſnow. The two next days the rains were ſo heavy that no work could be done; the perpetual moiſture which deſcended in this place cauſed ſuch a dampneſs in all parts of our veſſel, as could not fail to become very unwholeſome, and to deſtroy all the collections of plants which had been made. Our ſloop lying ſo near the ſhore, which was ſteep and ſhaggy with over-hanging woods, was involved in almoſt conſtant darkneſs, even in fair weather, and much more ſo during the fogs and rains, ſo that we were obliged to light candles at noon. But the conſtant ſupply of freſh fiſh conſiderably alleviated theſe diſagreeable circumſtances, and, together with the ſpruce-beer and the myrtle-tea, contributed to keep us healthy and ſtrong even in this damp climate. We were now indeed become perfect *ichthyophagi*, for many amongſt us entirely lived upon fiſh. The fear of being cloyed with this delicious food, often ſet us at work to invent new methods of preparing it, in order to deceive the palate; and we accordingly made ſoups, and paſties, boiled, fried, roaſted, and ſtewed our fiſhes. But it was pleaſant to obſerve, that

1773. APRIL.

all

1773. APRIL. all the arts of cookery only tended to ſurfeit the ſooner, for thoſe who wiſely confined themſelves to plain boiling in ſea water, always did honour to their meals;

> As if increaſe of appetite had grown
> By what it fed on.—— SHAKESPEARE.

But what was more ſingular than all, was, that in order to prevent any diſlike to our food, we confined ourſelves, among a great variety of different ſorts, chiefly to one ſpecies of fiſhes, which our ſailors from its dark colour, called the coal-fiſh, and which in taſte nearly reſembled our Engliſh cod, being of the ſame genus. Its meat was firm, juicy, and nutritive; but not ſo rich and fat as that of many other ſpecies, which we found very delicious, but could not continually feed upon. A very fine ſpecies of crayfiſh (*cancer homarus* Lin.) larger than the lobſter, ſome ſhell-fiſh, and now and then a cormorant, duck, pigeon, or parrot gave us an agreeable variety at our table, which, compared to its appearance when at ſea, was now luxurious and profuſe.

Every perſon in our ſloop experienced the good effects of this change of diet; nay every animal on board ſeemed to be benefited by it, except our ſheep, which were not likely to fare ſo well as ourſelves. The nature of the country accounts for this diſagreeable circumſtance. The whole ſouthern extremity of Tavai-poe-namoo, or the ſouthern iſland of New Zeeland, and eſpecially the land about

about Duſky Bay conſiſts entirely of ſteep rocky mountains, with craggy precipices, clad with thick foreſts, and either barren or covered with ſnow on their ſummits. No meadows and lawns are to be met with, and the only flat land we found, was ſituated at the head of deep coves, where a brook fell into the ſea, which probably by depoſiting the earth and ſtones it brought from the hills, had formed this low and level ground. But even there the whole was over-run with woods and briars, and we could not find a ſingle ſpot of ground which might have afforded paſture, the graſs which grew on ſome beaches being very hard and coarſe. However, after we had taken pains to furniſh our ſheep with the freſheſt ſprouts which we could meet with, we were ſurpriſed that they would not touch any of them: but upon examination we found that their teeth were looſe, and that many of them had every ſymptom of an inveterate ſea ſcurvy. Of four ewes and two rams which captain Cook brought from the Cape of Good Hope, with an intent to put them on ſhore in New Zeeland, we had only been able to preſerve one of each ſex, and theſe were in ſo wretched a condition, that their further preſervation was very doubtful. If future navigators mean to make ſuch valuable preſents, as cattle of any ſort to the inhabitants of the South Sea, the only probable method of bringing them ſafely thither, would be to take the ſhorteſt route poſſible from the Cape to New

1773. APRIL.

1773. APRIL. Zeeland, in the middle latitudes, and in the beſt of ſeaſons, when they may expect a quick paſſage, and no ſevere cold.

On the 11th, the ſky being clear and ſerene promiſed a fair day, which was very much wanted, in order to dry our ſails and linen, as we had not been able to do either ſince our arrival in this bay. We likewiſe obtained the uſe of a boat, in order to increaſe the number of our obſervations on the productions of nature. We directed our courſe to the cove where we had ſeen the firſt canoe of the natives, and particularly to a water-fall, which we had obſerved from afar a few days ago, and which had induced us to call this inlet Caſcade Cove. This water-fall, at the diſtance of a mile and a half, ſeems to be but inconſiderable, on account of its great elevation; but after climbing about two hundred yards upwards, we obtained a full proſpect of it, and found indeed a view of great beauty and grandeur before us. The firſt object which ſtrikes the beholder, is a clear column of water, apparently eight or ten yards in circumference, which is projected with great impetuoſity from the perpendicular rock, at the height of one hundred yards. Nearly at the fourth part of the whole height, this column meeting a part of the ſame rock, which now acquires a little inclination, ſpreads on its broad back into a limpid ſheet of about twenty-five yards in width. Here its ſurface is curled, and daſhes upon every little eminence

in

in its rapid deſcent, till it is all collected in a fine baſon about ſixty yards in circuit, included on three ſides by the natural walls of the rocky chaſm, and in front by huge maſſes of ſtone irregularly piled above each other. Between them the ſtream finds its way, and runs foaming with the greateſt rapidity along the ſlope of the hill to the ſea. The whole neighbourhood of the caſcade, to a diſtance of an hundred yards around, is filled with the ſteam or watery vapour formed by the violence of the fall. This miſt however was ſo thick, that it penetrated our clothes in a few minutes, as effectually as a ſhower of rain would have done. We mounted on the higheſt ſtone before the baſon, and looking down into it, were ſtruck with the ſight of a moſt beautiful rainbow of a perfectly circular form, which was produced by the meridian rays of the ſun refracted in the vapour of the caſcade. Beyond this circle the reſt of the ſteam was tinged with the priſmatic colours, refracted in an inverted order. The ſcenery on the left conſiſts of ſteep, brown rocks, fringed on the ſummits with over-hanging ſhrubs and trees; on the right there is a vaſt heap of large ſtones, probably hurried down from the impending mountain's brow, by the force of the torrent. From thence riſes a ſloping bank, about ſeventy-five yards high, on which a wall of twenty-five yards perpendicular is placed, crowned with verdure and ſhrubberies. Still farther to the right, the broken rocks are clothed with moſſes, ferns, graſſes, 1773. APRIL.

1773. APRIL. and various flowers; nay ſeveral ſhrubs, and trees to the height of forty feet, riſe on both ſides of the ſtream, and hide its courſe from the ſun. The noiſe of the caſcade is ſo loud, and ſo repeatedly reverberated from the echoing rocks, that it drowns almoſt every other ſound; the birds ſeemed to retire from it to a little diſtance, where the ſhrill notes of thruſhes, the graver pipe of wattle-birds, and the enchanting melody of various creepers reſounded on all ſides, and completed the beauty of this wild and romantic ſpot. On turning round we beheld an extenſive bay, ſtrewed as it were with ſmall iſlands, which are covered with lofty trees; beyond them on one ſide, the mountains riſe majeſtic on the main land, capt with clouds and perpetual ſnow; and on the other, the immenſe ocean bounded our view. The grandeur of this ſcene was ſuch, that the powers of deſcription fall ſhort of the force and beauty of nature, which could only be truly imitated by the pencil of Mr. Hodges, who went on this voyage with us; and whoſe performances do great credit and honour to his judgment and execution, as well as to the choice of his employers. Satisfied with the contemplation of this magnificent ſight, we directed our attention next to the flowers which enlivened the ground, and the ſmall birds which ſung very cheerfully all round us. We had as yet found neither the vegetable nor animal creation ſo beautiful, or ſo numerous, in any part of this bay; perhaps, becauſe

the

the ſtrong refraction of the ſun-beams from the perpendi- 1773. APRIL.
lar walls of rock, and the ſhelter from ſtorms, made the climate conſiderably more mild and genial in this ſpot than in any other part. The ſoil was in nothing different here from that in other parts round the bay, but ſeemed to be the ſame vegetable mould; and the rocks and ſtones about the caſcade conſiſted of maſſes of granite, or moor-ſtone *(ſaxum)*, and of a kind of brown talcous clay-ſtone, in ſtrata, which is common to all New Zeeland.

We returned on board before ſun-ſet, well pleaſed with our acquiſitions during this excurſion. At our return we were told, that the Indian family, whom we had ſeen paddling into the cove, in the morning, in their beſt attire, had gradually approached the ſhip with great caution. Captain Cook meeting them in a boat, quitted it, and went into their canoe, but could not prevail on them to come along-ſide of the ſhip, and was obliged to leave them to follow their own inclination. At length they went aſhore, in a little creek hard by ours, and afterwards came and ſat down on the ſhore abreaſt of the veſſel, to which they were near enough to be heard, and ſpoken to. The captain gave orders to play the fife and bagpipe, and to beat the drum; but they entirely diſregarded the two firſt, and were not very attentive to the laſt, nor could any thing induce them to come on board. Several of our officers and ſeamen then going on ſhore to them, were received with great good-

nature,

1773. APRIL. nature, and attempted to converſe with them by ſigns, which were for the moſt part unintelligible, or miſunderſtood. However, the young woman ſhewed a great partiality to a young ſeaman, and from her geſtures it was ſuppoſed ſhe took him for one of her own ſex; but whether he had taken ſome improper liberties, or whether ſhe had any other reaſon to be diſguſted, ſhe would never ſuffer him to come near her afterwards. We likewiſe went on ſhore to them, after returning from our excurſion, and the man deſiring us to ſit down by him, frequently pointed at our boats that plyed between the ſhip and the ſhore, and it appeared that he was deſirous of poſſeſſing one of them. They ſtaid all night about a hundred yards from our watering place, lighted a fire, and dreſſed ſome fiſh there, thus evidently placing great confidence in us. In the evening a party of officers ſet out in a ſmall boat, to the north ſide of the bay, where they intended to paſs the night, and continue ſhooting all the next day.

Monday 12. Captain Cook, accompanied by my father, went in his boat the next morning, to ſurvey the rocks and iſles in the mouth of the bay. They entered a fine ſnug cove, on the S. E. ſide of the iſland, under which we had found our firſt anchorage, and which was therefore named Anchor Iſland. Here they ſat down by the ſide of a pleaſant brook, and made a ſlight repaſt on ſome boiled craw-fiſh, which they had brought with them. From thence they proceeded to

the

the outermoſt iſlands, where they diſcovered a number of ſeals on the rocks, ſhot fourteen of them with ball, which they carried away with them, and might have killed many more, had the ſurf permitted them to land upon all the rocks in ſafety. The ſeals in Duſky Bay are all of the ſpecies called ſea-bears *, which profeſſor Steller firſt deſcribed on Bering's Iſland, near Kamtchatka, and which are conſequently common to both hemiſpheres. They are very numerous on the ſouthern extremities of the continents of America and Africa, likewiſe at New Zeeland, and on Diemen's Land. The only difference we could perceive between theſe at Duſky Bay, and thoſe deſcribed at Kamtchatka, conſiſted in the ſize, in reſpect of which ours were inferior. They found it difficult to kill them, and many, though grievouſly wounded, eſcaped into the ſea, and tinged the rocks and the water with their blood. Their meat, which is almoſt black, and their heart and liver were eatable, the former, by the help of a good appetite, and a little imagination, might be eaten for beef, and the laſt were perfectly ſimilar to a calf's pluck. We were, however, obliged to cut away every bit of fat, before we dreſſed the meat, which otherwiſe had an inſupportable taſte of train-oil. Captain Cook availed himſelf of this opportunity of laying in a proviſion of lamp-oil, which was boiled

1773. APRIL.

* Phoca urſina *Linn.* Urſine Seal, *Pennant. Syn. Quad.* 271.

out

1773. APRIL. out of the ſeals fat: he alſo ordered the ſkins to be made uſe of for repairing our rigging.

Tueſday 13. The ſucceſs of the preceding day encouraged him to make another trip to the Seal Iſlands, on which my father accompanied him again; but the ſea ran ſo very high, that it was by no means practicable to come near, and much leſs to land on them. With a great deal of difficulty they weathered the S. W. point of Anchor Iſland, where the ſea tumbled in with great impetuoſity, and was ſo much agitated, as to affect the mariners with ſickneſs. They then rowed along the north ſhore of that iſland, where the captain landed to take the bearings of different points. It happened very fortunately, that they had taken this route; for they now diſcovered the ſmall boat adrift, which ſet off from the ſloop on the 11th in the evening, and laid hold of it the moment before it was going to be daſhed againſt the rocks. The boat was immediately ſecured in a ſmall creek, and after refreſhing the people with ſome proviſions which they found in it, captain Cook proceeded to the place where he ſuppoſed the party of officers to be, from whom it was drifted away. Between ſeven and eight in the evening they reached the cove, and found them on a ſmall iſland, to which they could not then approach, becauſe the tide had left it. They landed therefore on an adjacent point, and after many fruitleſs attempts, at length ſucceeded in making a fire. Here they broiled ſome fiſh, and after

ſupper

ſupper lay down; the ſtony beach was their bed, and their covering the canopy of heaven. 1773. APRIL.

At three o'clock in the morning the tide permitted them to take the ſportſmen from their barren iſland; after which they immediately ſailed with a fair wind, accompanied with ſhowers of rain, to the cove where they had ſecured the other boat. Here they found an immenſe number of petrels of the bluiſh ſpecies, common over the whole ſouthern ocean *, ſome being on the wing, and others in the woods, in holes under ground formed between the roots of trees and in the crevices of rocks, in places not eaſily acceſſible, where they probably had their neſts and young. In day time, not one of them was to be ſeen there, the old ones then being probably out at ſea in queſt of food. They now ſaw them going out for that purpoſe, and two days ago they had been obſerved at the Seal Iſlands, returning in the evening in order to feed their young with the food which they had collected. They now heard a great variety of confuſed ſounds coming from the ſides of the hill, ſome very acute, others like the croaking of frogs, which were made by theſe petrels. At other times we have found innumerable holes on the top of one of the Seal Iſlands, and heard the young petrels making a noiſe in them; but as the holes communicated with each other it was impoſſible to come at one of them. We had

* See page 91.

1773. APRIL. already frequently obſerved the old petrels flying about us in the evening, when we returned late from our excurſions, but till now they had always been taken for bats. They have a broad bill, and a blackiſh ſtripe acroſs their bluiſh wings and body, and are not ſo large as the common ſhear-water or Mank's petrel of our ſeas. The inſtinct is very wonderful which actuates theſe birds to burrow holes under ground for their young, to roam all over the ocean in queſt of food for their ſupport, and to find their way to the ſhore when they are ſeveral hundred leagues diſtant from it.

Having replaced the ſportſmen in their boat, they all proceeded to the ſhip, which they reached at ſeven in the morning, not a little fatigued from the night's expedition. The natives, probably foreſeeing the bad weather, which continued all this day, had left the place they occupied near the ſhip on the preceding night, and had retired to their habitations on Indian Iſland.

Thurſday 15. The weather cleared up a little on the 15th in the morning. Captain Cook therefore ſet out to continue his ſurvey of the N. W. part of the bay, and we accompanied a party of officers to the cove in that part where we intended to take up our quarters for the next night. In our way we rowed along-ſide of our fiſhing-boat, which conſtantly went out in the morning to provide all our crew with their dinner, and took in a ſail which we ſtood in

in need of. We were ſurpriſed to ſee the young black dog in the boat with them, which ran away from us on the 2d inſtant; and were told, that, taking their ſtation near the ſhore, at day-break they had heard a very piteous howling on the next point, and had found the dog, which came into the boat very readily as ſoon as they put in ſhore. Though this animal had been in the woods during a fortnight, yet it was by no means famiſhed, but on the contrary looked well fed and very ſleek. A large ſpecies of rails, which we called water-hens, and which are very numerous in this part of New Zeeland, with perhaps ſome ſhell-fiſh on the rocks, or ſome dead fiſh thrown up by the ſea, had in all probability afforded it ſufficient ſupport. We may from hence conclude, that as there is abundance of food for carnivorous animals in New Zeeland, they would probably be very numerous if they exiſted there at all, and eſpecially if they were endowed with any degree of ſagacity, like the fox, or cat tribes. In that caſe they could not have eſcaped the notice of our numerous parties, nor of the natives, and the latter would certainly have preſerved their furrs, as a valuable article of dreſs in their moiſt and raw climate, for want of which they now wear the ſkins of dogs and of birds. The queſtion, whether New Zeeland contained any wild quadrupeds, had engaged our attention from our firſt arrival there. One of our people, ſtrongly per- 1773. APRIL.

1773. APRIL. ſuaded that ſo great a country could not fail of poſſeſſing new and unknown animals, had already twice reported that he had ſeen a brown animal, ſomething leſs than a jackal or little fox, about the dawn of morning, ſitting on a ſtump of a tree near our tents, and running off at his approach. But as this circumſtance has never been confirmed by any ſubſequent teſtimony, nothing is more probable than that the want of day-light had deceived him, and that he had either obſerved one of the numerous wood-hens, which are brown, and creep through the buſhes very frequently; or that one of our cats, on the watch for little birds, had been miſtaken for a new quadruped.

Having taken the ſail on board, we continued our courſe, and began our reſearches in the cove, where we killed many ducks of four different ſpecies. One of them was remarkably beautiful, and of the ſize of the eider duck. Its plumage was of a blackiſh brown, elegantly ſprinkled with white; all the coverts of the wing were white, the rump and vent ferruginous, the quill and tail-feathers black, and the ſecondaries green. Another ſpecies was nearly of the ſize of our mallard, but all of a light-brown, every feather being edged with a yellowiſh white, of which there was a line on the cheek and eye-brows; the eyes of this ſort had irides of a bright yellow, and on the wings there was a ſpot of fine bluiſh green incloſed in black

black lines. The third ſort was a bluiſh grey whiſtling duck, about the ſize of a wigeon; its bill had a remarkable membranaceous ſubſtance at the extremity on both ſides, probably becauſe the bird is intended to live by ſucking the worms, &c. in the mud, when the tide retires from the beaches. Its breaſt was ſprinkled with ferruginous feathers, and on the wings it had a large white ſpot. The fourth and moſt common ſort is a ſmall brown duck, which is nearly the ſame as the Engliſh gadwall. A little before dark, the captain, having examined all the harbours which lay in his way, ſhot a number of wild fowl, and caught fiſh ſufficient for all our party, arrived at our rendezvous, where we had erected a tent, by means of the ſails and oars. Our keen appetites diſpenſed with the arts of cookery, and our fiſh broiled *à l'Indienne*, over a ſtrong fire, on a bit of a ſtick, taſted as deliciouſly as we could deſire. With this ſupper, and a draught of ſpruce-beer, of which we had carried a ſmall keg with us, we compoſed ourſelves to ſleep, and contrived to paſs the night, though not quite ſo comfortably as in our beds. The next morning a boat went up to the head of the cove to ſtart the game, which was done ſo effectually that almoſt all the wild-ducks eſcaped, the rain having wetted all our fire-arms. The captain now landed in the cove, and walked acroſs a narrow iſthmus, which ſeparates it from another cove on the north ſide of the Five-finger

1773. APRIL.

Land.

1773. APRIL. Land. Here he found a prodigious number of the water-hens before mentioned, and brought away ten couple of them, which recompenſed him for the trouble of croſſing the iſthmus, through intricate woods, where the water was frequently up to the waiſt. At nine o'clock we were all aſſembled again, and ſet out on our return to the ſhip; but as we continued examining every creek and harbour which we found on our way, and encreaſing our collection of wild-fowl, we did not return till ſeven o'clock in the evening. We brought ſeven dozen of various ſorts of birds with us, among which were near thirty ducks, and immediately diſtributed them to the ſeveral meſſes of officers, petty-officers, and ſeamen, as far as they would go. We may take this opportunity to obſerve, that there is no part of New Zeeland ſo well ſtocked with birds of all kinds as Duſky Bay. We found ſeveral ſorts of wild-ducks, ſhags, corvorants, oyſter-catchers or ſea-pies, water or wood-hens, albatroſſes, gannets, gulls, pinguins, and others of the aquatic kind. The land-birds were hawks, parrots, pigeons, and many leſſer ones of new and unknown ſpecies. The parrots were of two ſorts; one ſmall and green, and the other very large, greyiſh-green, with a reddiſh breaſt. As the birds of that genus are commonly confined to the warmer climates, we were much ſurpriſed to find them in the latitude of 46°, expoſed to the raw rainy weather, which

which the height of the mountains almoſt conſtantly produces in Duſky Bay. 1773. APRIL.

The next day was ſo rainy, that none of us could venture to ſtir out of the ſloop; but the day after proving a very fine one, my father went up the hill, along the courſe of the brook, from which we filled our caſks. About half a mile upwards, through ferns, rotten trees, and thick foreſts, he came to a fine lake of freſh water nearly half a mile in diameter. Its water was limpid and well taſted, but had acquired a browniſh hue, from the leaves of trees which dropped into it on all ſides; he obſerved no other inhabitant in it than a ſmall ſpecies of fiſh *(eſox)*, without ſcales, reſembling a little trout; its colour was brown, and mottled with yellowiſh ſpots in the ſhape of ſome ancient Aſiatic characters. The whole lake was ſurrounded by a thick foreſt, conſiſting of the largeſt trees, and the mountains roſe all round it in a variety of forms. The environs were deſerted and ſilent, not the leaſt note of the common birds was heard, for it was rather cold at this elevation; and not a ſingle plant had bloſſoms. The whole ſcene was perfectly fitted to inſpire a kind of pleaſing melancholy, and to encourage hermit-meditation. The fine weather induced our friends the natives to pay us another viſit; they took up their quarters on the ſame ſpot, where they had been this day ſevennight, and when they were again invited to come on board, they promiſed Sunday 18.

to

1773. APRIL. to come the next morning. In the mean while they had a quarrel among themſelves, the man beat the two women who were ſuppoſed to be his wives; the young girl in return ſtruck him, and then began to weep. What the cauſe of this diſagreement was, we cannot determine; but if the young woman was really the man's daughter, which we could never clearly underſtand, it ſhould ſeem that the filial duties are ſtrangely confounded among them; or which is more probable, that this ſecluded family acted in every reſpect, not according to the cuſtoms and regulations of a civil ſociety, but from the impulſes of nature, which ſpeak aloud againſt every degree of oppreſſion.

Monday 19. In the morning, the man reſolved to come on board with the young woman, but ſent the reſt of his family a-fiſhing in the canoe. He walked with her round the cove, to the place where we had made a ſtage or temporary bridge from the veſſel to the ſhore. Before they entered upon this, they were conducted to a place on the hill, where we kept our ſheep and goats, which they ſeemed to be much ſurpriſed with, and deſired to poſſeſs; but as we foreſaw that they muſt die for want of proper food if we left them here, we could not comply with this requeſt. Captain Cook, and my father met them at the ſtage, and this man after ſaluting them with his noſe againſt theirs, gave each of them a new cloak or piece of cloth made of the flax-plant, curiouſly interwoven with parrot's

parrot's feathers, and preſented the captain with a piece of green nephritic ſtone, or *jadde* *, which was formed into the blade of a hatchet. Before he ſtepped on the bridge, he turned aſide, put a piece of a bird's ſkin with white feathers through the hole in one of his ears, and broke off a ſmall green branch from a neighbouring buſh. With this he walked on, and ſtopping when he could juſt reach the ſhip's ſides with his hand, ſtruck them and the main-ſhrouds ſeveral times with his branch. He then began to repeat a kind of ſpeech or prayer, which ſeemed to have regular cadences, and to be metrically arranged as a poem; his eyes were fixed upon the place he had touched, his voice was raiſed, and his whole behaviour grave and ſolemn. The young woman, though at other times laughing and dancing, now kept cloſe to the man and was ſerious all the while he ſpoke, which laſted about two or three minutes; at the cloſe of his ſpeech he ſtruck the ſhip's ſide again, threw the branch into the main chains, and came aboard. This manner of delivering ſolemn orations, and making peace, is practiſed by all the nations which have been ſeen in the South Sea before our voyage, as appears from the teſtimonies of various voyagers. Both the man and woman had a ſpear in their hands when they were conducted on the quarter-deck; there they admired every thing they ſaw: a few geeſe 1773. APRIL.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 286.

1773. APRIL. in our coops particularly attracted their attention; a handſome cat, was likewiſe much courted, but they always ſtroked it the wrong way, ſo as to make the hair ſtand upright, though we ſhowed them to do it in a contrary direction; probably they admired the richneſs of the furr. The man looked upon every new object with ſurprize, but as his attention could not be fixed to any one object for more than a ſingle moment, many of our works of art muſt have appeared to him as incomprehenſible, as thoſe of nature. However, the number and ſtrength of our decks and of other parts of our veſſel engroſſed his admiration more than any thing elſe. The girl, ſeeing Mr. Hodges, whoſe pencil ſhe had much admired, made him a preſent of a piece of cloth, of the ſame kind as thoſe which the man had given to captain Cook and my father. This cuſtom of making preſents is not ſo uſual in other parts of New Zeeland, as in the tropical iſlands: but it appears on the whole, that this family were not always guided by national cuſtoms, but took ſuch meaſures as prudence and integrity ſuggeſted in their ſituation, which left them at the mercy of a greater force. We deſired them to come into the cabin, and after a long debate among themſelves, they accepted the invitation, and deſcended by the ladder. Here they admired every thing, and were particularly pleaſed to learn the uſe of chairs, and that they might be removed from place to place. They were preſented with hatchets

by

by the captain and my father, and received a great number of trinkets of leſs value. Theſe laſt the man laid down in a heap, and would have gone away without them, had we not reminded him of them; whereas he never let a hatchet or ſpike-nail go out of his hand, after he had once taken hold of it. They ſaw us ſit down to our breakfaſt, and were ſeated near us; but all our intreaties could not prevail on them to touch our victuals. They likewiſe expreſsly inquired where we went to ſleep, and the captain ſhowed them his cot, which was ſuſpended, at which they were mightily pleaſed. From the cabin they proceeded to the gun-room, on the deck below; and having received ſeveral preſents there, they returned to the captain again. The man now pulled out a little leather bag, probably of ſeals ſkin, and having, with a good deal of ceremony, put in his fingers, which he pulled out covered with oil, offered to anoint captain Cook's hair; this honour was however declined, becauſe the unguent, though perhaps held as a delicious perfume, and as the moſt precious thing the man could beſtow, yet ſeemed to our noſtrils not a little offenſive; and the very ſqualid appearances of the bag in which it was contained, contributed to make it ſtill more diſguſtful. Mr. Hodges did not eſcape ſo well; for the girl, having a tuft of feathers, dipt in oil, on a ſtring round her neck, inſiſted upon dreſſing him out with it, and he was forced to wear the odoriferous preſent, in pure civility.

1773. APRIL.

1773. APRIL. We left them to amuſe themſelves in the other parts of the ſhip, and ſet out in two boats, with the captain and ſeveral officers, to examine a long inlet which ran to the eaſtward, in ſight of our cove. In proportion as we receded from the ſea, we found the mountains much higher, more ſteep, and barren: the trees gradually diminiſhed in height and circumference, and dwindled to ſhrubs, contrary to what is obſerved in other parts of the world, where the inland countries have finer foreſts and better timber than the ſea ſhores. The interior ranges of mountains called the Southern Alps, appeared very diſtinctly, of a great height, and covered with ſnow on their ſummits. We paſſed by a number of ſhady iſlands, which contained little coves and rivulets; and on one of the projecting points, oppoſite the laſt iſland, we ſaw a fine caſcade falling into the water, over a ſteep rock, clothed with thick buſhes and trees. The water was perfectly calm, poliſhed, and tranſparent; the landſcape was diſtinctly reflected in it, and the various romantic ſhapes of the ſteep mountains, contraſted in different maſſes of light and ſhade, had an admirable effect. About noon we put into a ſmall cove, where we caught ſome fiſh, and ſhot a few birds. From thence we rowed again till duſk, when we entered a fine cove, at the extremity of this long arm, and were obliged to take up our quarters on the firſt beach we could land upon, after being prevented by ſhoals from proceeding to the head of the cove. There

we

we thought we perceived ſomething ſimilar to a ſmoke, but finding nothing to confirm this opinion, and eſpecially ſeeing no fire at night, we readily acquieſced in the idea of having been deceived by ſome miſty vapour, or other object, which we might have indiſtinctly ſeen. We prepared with great alacrity to paſs the night here, and no one was excepted from his taſk on theſe occaſions. As it may be curious to know the nature of our marooning parties, as our ſeamen called them, I ſhall here give ſome account of our proceedings this night. Having found a beach to land on, with a brook, and a wood cloſe to it, our firſt care was to bring on ſhore the oars, ſails, cloaks, guns, hatchets, &c. not forgetting a little keg of ſpruce-beer, and perhaps a bottle of ſtrong liquor. The boats were next ſecured at a grappling, and with a rope made faſt to a tree on ſhore. Some of us were then buſied in collecting dry pieces of wood for fuel, which in ſuch a wet country as New Zeeland, was ſometimes very difficult; ſome erected a tent or wigwam, made of the oars and ſails together with ſtrong branches of trees, in a convenient dry ſpot, ſheltered as much as poſſible, in caſe of wind and rain. Others lighted the fire in front of the tent, by burning ſome oakum, in which they had previouſly rubbed a quantity of gunpowder. The preparations for ſupper were very ſhort: ſome of the ſailors cleaned our fiſhes, ſkinned the waterfowl, ſplit, and laſtly broiled them; when they were dreſſed, 1773. APRIL.

one

1773. APRIL. one of the boat's gang-boards, waſhed clean, anſwered the ſeveral purpoſes of a table, of diſhes, and plates; and our fingers and teeth did yeoman's ſervice, inſtead of knives and forks. A keen appetite, procured by ſtrong exerciſe, and excited by the ſharp air of the country, ſoon taught us to overcome the ideas of indelicacy, which civilized nations connect with this way of living; and we never ſo ſtrongly felt how little is wanting to ſatisfy the cravings of the ſtomach, and to ſupport the exiſtence of human beings, as on theſe occaſions. After ſupper we liſtened a while to the original comic vein of our boat's crew, who huddled round the fire, made their meal, and recited a number of droll ſtories, intermixed with hearty curſes, oaths, and indecent expreſſions, but ſeldom without real humour. Then ſtrewing our tent with heaps of fern leaves, and wrapping ourſelves in our boat-cloaks, with our guns and ſhooting-bags for our pillows, we compoſed ourſelves to ſleep.

At day-break Captain Cook and my father, with two men, went in a ſmall boat to take a view of the head of the cove, where they ſaw ſome flat land. They went on ſhore upon it at one corner, and ordered the boat to meet them at the oppoſite point. They had not walked a great way before they ſaw ſome wild-ducks, and, by creeping through the buſhes, came near enough to fire and kill one of them. The moment they had fired they heard a hideous ſhout of ſeveral loud and piercing voices round about them

1773. APRIL.

them from different quarters. They ſhouted in their turn, and taking up the duck retired towards the boat, which was full half a mile off. The natives continued their clamours, but did not follow them; for indeed a deep branch of a river was between them, and their numbers were too inconſiderable to attempt hoſtilities; but theſe circumſtances we only learnt in the ſequel. We had in the mean while taken a ramble into the woods in ſearch of plants; but hearing the ſhout of the natives, we embarked immediately in the remaining boat and joined the other, which by this time had taken Captain Cook and my father on board. We therefore proceeded up into a river, which was deep enough for the boats, and amuſed ourſelves with ſhooting ducks, which were here in great plenty. We now ſaw a man, woman, and child on the left ſhore, and the woman waved to us with a white bird's ſkin, probably in ſign of peace and friendſhip. On this occaſion I could not help admiring, that almoſt all nations on our globe have tacitly agreed upon the white colour, or upon green branches, as tokens of a peaceable diſpoſition, and that with theſe in their hands they confidently rely on a ſtranger's placability. Perhaps this general agreement had its origin anterior to the univerſal diſperſion of the human ſpecies; this will ſeem the more probable when it is conſidered, that neither the white colour, nor the green boughs of a tree, have any intrinſic character, to which the

1773. APRIL. the idea of amity is naturally and neceſſarily referred. Our boat being neareſt to theſe natives, Captain Cook deſired the officer in it to land, and accept their proferred friendſhip, whilſt he meant to take the advantage of the tide to get as high up in the river as poſſible, Whether the officer did not underſtand Captain Cook's meaning, or whether he was too deeply engaged with duck-ſhooting, we did not land; and the poor people, to all appearance apprehenſive of the worſt conſequences, from a ſet of men who rejected their propoſals of peace, fled into the woods with the utmoſt precipitation. The Captain in the mean while rowed about half a mile higher, where his boat was ſtopped by the violence of the ſtream, and by ſeveral huge ſtones which lay acroſs the bed of the river, and redoubled the rapidity of the water. Here, however, he found a new ſpecies of ducks, the fifth we had obſerved in Duſky Bay. Its ſize was ſomething leſs than that of a teal, the colour of a ſhining greeniſh black above, and a dark ſooty grey below; it had a purple caſt on the head, a lead-coloured bill and feet, a golden eye, and a white bar in the leſſer quill feathers. On Captain Cook's return to us, we perceived two men in the woods along the bank oppoſite to that where we had ſeen the friendly family. The captain endeavoured to form an acquaintance with them, but when the boat came cloſe along ſhore, they always retired into the woods, which were ſo thick, that they not

not only covered them from our ſight, but alſo made it unadviſeable to follow them. The ebbing tide obliged us to retire out of this river to the place where we had ſpent the night; and, after breakfaſting there, we embarked in order to ſet out on our return to the Reſolution. However, when we had ſcarce put off, we perceived the two natives, who had walked acroſs the woods to an open ſpot, from whence they halloo'd to us. The captain immediately ordered both the boats to row up to them, and coming into ſhallow water, he got out unarmed, attended by two men, and waded to the ſhore, with a ſheet of white paper in his hand. The two natives ſtood about one hundred yards from the water's ſide, each of them with a long ſpear in his hand. When the captain advanced with his two men they retired; he then proceeded alone, but could not prevail on them to lay aſide their ſpears. At laſt one of them ſtuck his ſpear in the ground, and taking a bunch of graſs in his hand met the captain, and giving him one end of the graſs to hold while he kept the other, he pronounced a ſolemn ſpeech in a loud tone of voice, during a minute or two, in which he made ſeveral pauſes, perhaps waiting for a reply. As ſoon as this ceremony was over, they ſaluted each other, and the New Zeelander took a new garment from his own ſhoulders and preſented it to the captain, for which he received a hatchet in return. Peace and friendſhip being thus firmly eſtabliſhed, the

1773. APRIL.

1773. APRIL. other man likewiſe came up to ſalute the captain, and was preſented with a hatchet; and ſeveral of us came aſhore to them, at which they were not the leaſt alarmed, but received every new comer with great cordiality. We now perceived ſeveral other natives, probably women, on the ſkirts of the wood, and the two men earneſtly intreated us to go up to their habitations, intimating by ſigns, that they would give us ſomething to eat there; but the tide and other circumſtances did not permit us to accept their invitation. When we had taken leave of them, the two men followed us to our boats, where they deſired us to remove the muſkets which lay acroſs the ſtern, and having complied with their requeſt, they came along-ſide, and aſſiſted us to launch the boats, which were aground on account of the ebb. We found however that it was neceſſary to have an eye upon them, becauſe they ſeemed to covet the poſſeſſion of every thing they ſaw or could lay hands on, except the muſkets, which they would not touch, being taught to reſpect them as inſtruments of death, on account of the havock they had ſeen us make among the wild-fowl. We obſerved no canoes among them, and their only means of tranſporting themſelves acroſs the river, was on a few logs of wood connected together into a kind of raft, which was perfectly ſufficient for that purpoſe. Fiſh and wild-fowl were in ſuch plenty here, that they can have little occaſion to roam to any diſtance

tance in queſt of them, as their numbers did not ſeem to exceed three families; and the whole bay being almoſt entirely deſtitute of inhabitants, one ſingle family more excepted, they need not be apprehenſive of diſturbance from bad neighbours. The features of theſe men were rather wild, but not ill-favoured; their complexion reſembled that of the family on Indian Iſland, of a mahogany brown; their hair buſhy, and their beards frizled and black. They were of a middling ſtature and ſtout, but their legs and thighs very ſlender, and their knees too much ſwelled in proportion. Their dreſs and general behaviour ſeemed to be the ſame as that of the other family before mentioned. The courage of this people has ſomething ſingular in it, for it ſhould ſeem, that in ſpight of their inferiority of force, they cannot brook the thought of hiding themſelves, at leaſt not till they have made an attempt to eſtabliſh an intercourſe, or prove the principles of the ſtrangers who approach them. It would have been impoſſible for us, among the numerous iſlands and harbours, and in the mazy foreſts upon them, to have found out the family which we ſaw on the Indian Iſland, if they had not diſcovered themſelves, and thus made the firſt advances. We might alſo have departed from the cove without knowing that it was inhabited, if the natives had not ſhouted at the diſcharge of our muſkets. In both caſes a certain openneſs and honeſty, appear ſtrongly to mark

1773. APRIL.

1773. APRIL. their character; for if it had the leaſt admixture of treachery, they would have tried to fall upon us unawares, as they could not have failed of meeting with frequent opportunities of cutting off our numerous ſmall parties, when diſperſed in different parts of the woods.

It was noon when we left theſe two men, and proceeded down on the north ſide of the long arm, of which captain Cook took the bearings in his way. The night overtook us before he had completed this ſurvey; ſo that we were forced to leave another arm unexplored, and to haſten to the veſſel, which we reached about eight o'clock at night. We were told that the native with his companion, the young woman, had ſtaid on board till noon, after our departure; and having been informed, that we had left ſome preſents in his double canoe in Caſcade Cove, he employed ſome of his people to bring them away from thence, after which the whole family remained in the neighbourhood of the ſhip till this morning. They then took their departure, and we never ſaw them again, which was the more extraordinary, as they never went away empty handed from us, but had at different times received nine or ten hatchets, and four times that number of large ſpike nails, beſides other articles. As far as theſe things may be counted riches among them, this man was the wealthieſt in all New Zeeland; being poſſeſſed of more hatchets, than there were in the whole country beſides, before the ſecond

arrival

arrival of Britiſh veſſels. The thin population in this part of the iſland makes it probable, that the few families in it lead a nomadic or wandering life, and remove according as the ſeaſon, the conveniency of fiſhing, and other circumſtances render it neceſſary. We were therefore of opinion, that our friendly family had only removed upon this principle; but we were likewiſe told that before they went away, the man had made ſigns of going to kill men, and employing the hatchet as an offenſive weapon. If this circumſtance was rightly underſtood, we cannot ſufficiently wonder that a family ſo ſecluded from all the reſt of the world, in a ſpacious bay, where they have a ſuperfluity of food, and of all the neceſſaries of life, the fewneſs of their wants conſidered, ſhould ſtill have a thought of warring with their fellow-creatures, when they might live peaceably and happily in their retirement. The pleaſing hope of facilitating the œconomical operations of theſe people, and of encouraging ſome degree of agriculture among them, by preſenting them with uſeful tools, was defeated by this determination. The ſtate of barbariſm, in which the New Zeelanders may juſtly be ſaid to live, and which generally hearkens to no other voice than that of the *ſtrongeſt*, might make them more liable than any other nation to reſolve upon the deſtruction of their fellow-citizens, as ſoon as an opportunity offered; and their innate and ſavage valour may probably aſſiſt them

1773. MARCH.

to

1773. APRIL. to put ſuch projects in execution. On this occaſion, I cannot omit mentioning a remarkable inſtance of courage which characteriſed the old man who had now left us; our officers having fired ſeveral muſquets in his preſence, he became deſirous of diſcharging one himſelf, which they eaſily granted; the young woman, ſuppoſed to be his daughter, fell proſtrate on the ground before him, and entreated him, with the ſtrongeſt marks of fear, to deſiſt from his undertaking; but he was not to be diverted from his purpoſe, and fired the muſquet with the greateſt reſolution, repeating it afterwards three or four times. This warlike diſpoſition, together with the iraſcible temper of the whole nation, that cannot brook the leaſt injury, is probably the cauſe which has induced this ſingle family, and the few in the long inlet we had viſited, to ſeparate from the reſt of their fellow-creatures. All the diſputes of ſavage people commonly terminate in the deſtruction of one of their parties, unleſs they evade it by a well-timed flight: this may have been the caſe of the inhabitants of Duſky Bay, and admitting it, their deſign of going to fight, is no more than a project of being revenged on their foes and oppreſſors.

Friday 23. On the 23d, early in the morning, ſeveral officers, accompanied by Dr. Sparrman, went to Caſcade Cove, in order to aſcend one of the higheſt mountains in the bay, which was ſituated on one ſide of it. About two o'clock they reached

reached the ſummit, which they made known to us by lighting a great fire there. We ſhould have accompanied them on this excurſion, but a violent flux attended with gripes confined us on board. It was owing to the careleſſneſs of our cook, who had ſuffered our copper kitchen-furniture to become full of verdigriſe. In the evening however, we went to meet our travellers in Caſcade Cove, and after ſearching the woods ſome time for plants and birds, we brought them on board with us. At night the fire had ſpread in a bright circular garland all round the ſummit of the mountain, and made a very elegant illumination in honour of St. George's day. Our party related that they had a proſpect of the whole bay, and of the ſea beyond the mountains to the ſouth, S. W. and W. N. W. for more than twenty leagues all round them, the weather being remarkably fine and clear. The inland mountains were very barren, and conſiſted of huge broken and craggy maſſes, all covered with ſnow on their ſummits; the top of that on which they ſtood, afforded ſeveral low ſhrubs and various alpine plants, which we had ſeen no where elſe. A little lower down they ſaw a taller ſhrubbery; below this a ſpace covered with dry or dead trees, and next to thoſe the living woods began, which increaſed in ſize as they deſcended. The aſcent had been fatiguing enough, on account of the intricacy of briars and climbers, but the deſcent alſo was dangerous, becauſe of many

1773. APRIL.

precipices

1773. APRIL. precipices which they met on their way, and along moſt of which they contrived to ſlide down by the help of trees and buſhes. At a conſiderable height they met with three or four trees, which they took for palms, and of which they cut down one, and uſed its middlemoſt ſhoot for their refreſhment. Theſe trees, however, were not the true cabbage-palms, nor did they belong at all to the claſs of palms, which are generally confined to more temperate climates. They were properly ſpeaking, a new ſpecies of dragon-trees, with broad leaves, *(dracæna auſtralis)* of which the central ſhoot when quite tender, taſtes ſomething like an almond's kernel, with a little of the flavour of cabbage. We afterwards obſerved more of them in other parts of this bay.

The next morning I accompanied captain Cook to the cove on the N. W. part of the bay, which from the tranſaction of this day, received the name of Gooſe Cove. We had five tame geeſe left, of thoſe which we had taken on board at the Cape of Good Hope, and theſe we intended to leave in New Zeeland to breed, and run wild. This cove was looked upon as the moſt convenient place for that purpoſe, ſince there were no inhabitants to diſturb them, and becauſe it afforded an abundance of proper food. We ſet them on ſhore, and they immediately ran to feed in the mud, at the head of the cove where we left them, pronouncing over them the *creſcite & multipliciamini*, for the benefit

benefit of future generations of navigators and New Zeelanders. There can be little doubt indeed, but that they will ſucceed in this ſecluded ſpot, and in time ſpread over the whole country, anſwerable to our original intention. The reſt of this day was ſpent in ſhooting, and among the different birds killed was a white heron *(ardea alba)*, common to Europe. 1773. April.

The fair weather, which had laſted eight days ſucceſſively, was entirely at an end on the 25th, when the rain ſet in again towards evening, and continued till the next day at noon. We had reaſon to believe ſuch a continuance of dry weather very uncommon in Duſky Bay, and particularly at this ſeaſon, becauſe we never experienced above two fair days one after another, either before or after this week. We had, however, improved this opportunity to complete our wood and water, and put the ſloop in condition to go out to ſea, and having taken on board all our men, we caſt off our bridge, and removed out of the creek, into the middle of our cove, ready to ſail with the firſt fair wind. The ſuperiority of a ſtate of civilization over that of barbariſm could not be more clearly ſtated, than by the alterations and improvements we had made in this place. In the courſe of a few days, a ſmall part of us had cleared away the woods from a ſurface of more than an acre, which fifty New Zeelanders, with their tools of ſtone, could Sunday 25. Monday 26.

1773. APRIL. not have performed in three months. This ſpot, where immenſe numbers of plants left to themſelves lived and decayed by turns, in one confuſed inanimated heap; this ſpot, we had converted into an active ſcene, where a hundred and twenty men purſued various branches of employment with unremitted ardour:

Quales apes æſtate nova per florea rura
Exercet ſub ſole labor. VIRGIL.

Such was their toil, and ſuch their buſy pains,
As exerciſe the bees in flowery plains,
When winter paſt and ſummer ſcarce begun,
Invites them forth to labour in the ſun. DRYDEN.

We felled tall timber-trees, which, but for ourſelves, had crumbled to duſt with age; our ſawyers cut them into planks, or we ſplit them into billets for fuel. By the ſide of a murmuring rivulet, whoſe paſſage into the ſea we facilitated, a long range of caſks, which had been prepared by our coopers for that purpoſe, ſtood ready to be filled with water. Here aſcended the ſteam of a large cauldron, in which we brewed, from neglected indigenous plants, a ſalutary and palatable potion, for the uſe of our labourers. In the offing, ſome of our crew appeared providing a meal of delicious fiſh for the refreſhment of their fellows. Our caulkers and riggers were ſtationed on the ſides and maſts of the veſſel, and their occupations gave life

life to the ſcene, and ſtruck the ear with various noiſes, whilſt the anvil on the hill reſounded with the ſtrokes of the weighty hammer. Already the polite arts began to flouriſh in this new ſettlement; the various tribes of animals and vegetables, which dwelt in the unfrequented woods, were imitated by an artiſt in his noviciate; and the romantic proſpects of this ſhaggy country, lived on the canvas in the glowing tints of nature, who was amazed to ſee herſelf ſo cloſely copied. Nor had ſcience diſdained to viſit us in this ſolitary ſpot: an obſervatory aroſe in the centre of our works, filled with the moſt accurate inſtruments, where the attentive eye of the aſtronomer contemplated the motions of the celeſtial bodies. The plants which clothed the ground, and the wonders of the animal creation, both in the foreſts and the ſeas, likewiſe attracted the notice of philoſophers, whoſe time was devoted to mark their differences and uſes. In a word, all around us we perceived the riſe of arts, and the dawn of ſcience, in a country which had hitherto lain plunged in one long night of ignorance and barbariſm! But this pleaſing picture of improvement was not to laſt, and like a meteor, vaniſhed as ſuddenly as it was formed. We re-imbarked all our inſtruments and utenſils, and left no other veſtiges of our reſidence, than a piece of ground, from whence we had cleared the wood. We ſowed indeed a quantity of European garden ſeeds of the beſt kinds; but it is obvious that the ſhoots of the ſurrounding weeds will ſhortly ſtifle 1773. APRIL.

1773. APRIL. every ſalutary and uſeful plant, and that in a few years our abode no longer diſcernible, muſt return to its original chaotic ſtate.

A new paſſage out to ſea, to the northward, was diſcovered on the 27th; and it being more convenient for our purpoſe, than that by which we entered, we weighed on Thurſday 29. the 29th in the afternoon, in order to ſtand up the bay towards it. However, the wind falling calm, we were obliged to come to again in 43 fathom, under the north ſide of an iſland which we named Long Iſland, about two leagues from Friday 30. our cove. At nine the next morning we proceeded with a light breeze at weſt, which with all our boats towing ahead, was ſcarce ſufficient to ſtem the current; for after ſtruggling till ſix in the evening, we had gained no more than five miles, and anchored under the ſame iſland, only a hundred yards from the ſhore.

MAY. Saturday 1. At daylight the next morning we attempted to work to windward, having a gentle air down the bay, but the breeze dying away, we loſt ground, and came with the ſtern ſo cloſe to the ſhore, that our enſign-ſtaff was entangled in the branches of trees, on a perpendicular rock, cloſe to which we could find no bottom. We were towed off without receiving any damage, and dropt an anchor below the place we ſet out from, in a little cove on the north ſide of Long Iſland. Here we found two huts, and two fire-places, which ſeemed to prove that the place had lately been

been inhabited. During our ſtay here, we diſcovered ſeveral new birds and fiſh; and indeed caught ſome fiſh which are common to Europe, viz. the horſe-mackarel, the greater dog-fiſh, and the ſmooth hound *. The captain was taken ill of a fever and violent pain in the groin, which terminated in a rheumatic ſwelling of the right foot, contracted probably by wading too frequently in the water, and ſitting too long in the boat after it, without changing his cloaths. 1773. MAY.

We were detained in this cove by calms, attended with continual rains, till the 4th in the afternoon, when, aſſiſted by a light breeze at S. W. we entered the reach or paſſage leading out to ſea. The breeze coming a-head juſt at that time obliged us to anchor again under the eaſt point of the entrance, before a ſandy beach. Theſe little delays gave us opportunities of examining the ſhores, from whence we never failed to bring on board new acquiſitions to the vegetable and animal ſyſtem. During night we had heavy ſqualls of wind, attended with rain, hail, and ſnow, and ſome loud thunder claps. Day-light exhibited to our view all the tops of the hills round us covered with ſnow. At two o'clock in the afternoon a light breeze ſprung up at S. S. W. which carried us down the paſſage, though not without the help of our boats, to the laſt point near the opening into the ſea, where we anchor- Tueſday 4. Wedneſday 5.

* Scomber trachurus, ſqualus canis, & ſq. muſtelus, Linn.

ed

1773. MAY. ed at eight in the evening. The ſhores on both ſides of the paſſage were ſteeper than any we had ſeen before, and formed various wild landſcapes, ornamented with numerous little caſcades, and many dragon-trees *(dracæna.)*

Thurſday 6. The captain being confined to the cabin by his rheumatiſm, ſent an officer, accompanied by my father and myſelf, to explore the ſouthernmoſt arm, which ran up eaſtward from our new paſſage into the interior country. During our abſence he ordered the Reſolution to be well cleaned and aired with fires between decks, a precaution which ought never to be neglected in a moiſt and raw climate.

We rowed up this new inlet, were delighted with many caſcades on both ſides of it, and found a number of good anchoring places, with plenty of fiſh and wild-fowl. However, the woods conſiſted chiefly of ſhrubberies, and began to look very bare, the leaves being moſtly ſhed, and what remained looking faded of a pale yellow colour. Theſe ſtrong marks of approaching winter ſeemed to be peculiar to this part of the bay, and it is probable that the adjacent high mountains, all which were now crowned with ſnow, cauſed their premature appearance. We put into a little cove about two o'clock to broil a few fiſhes for our dinner, and then went on till it was dark, taking up our night's quarters on a little beach, almoſt at the head of the inlet. Here we made a fire, but ſlept very little

little on account of the cold of the night and the hardneſs of our pillows. The next morning we ſaw a cove, with a little flat land, to the north of us, which formed the end of this ſpacious inlet or arm, about eight miles from its entrance. Here we amuſed ourſelves with ſhooting for ſome time, and then ſet out to return towards the Reſolution; but the fair weather which had favoured us hitherto, was now ſucceeded by a ſtorm at N. W, which blew in hard ſqualls, attended with violent ſhowers of rain. We made ſhift to row down the arm into the entrance which led to the ſloop, and there ſharing the remains of a bottle of rum among our boat's crew, by way of encouragement, we entered the hollow ſea in the paſſage. The violence of the wind, and the height of the ſhort waves were ſuch, that in ſpight of our utmoſt efforts we were thrown above half a mile to leeward in a few minutes, and narrowly eſcaped being ſwamped. With the greateſt difficulty we regained the inlet out of which we had paſſed, and about two o'clock in the afternoon we put into a ſmall ſnug cove, at its north entrance. After ſecuring our boat in the beſt manner poſſible, we climbed on a bleak hill, where we made a fire on a narrow rock, and attempted to broil ſome fiſhes; but though we were ſoaked with rain, and ſeverely cut by the wind, yet it was impoſſible for us to keep near our fire, of which the flames were continually whirled about in a vortex by the ſtorm, ſo that we were forced to change

1773. MAY. Friday 7.

1773. MAY. change our places every moment, in order to eſcape being ſcorched or burnt. The ſtorm now encreaſed to ſuch a violence, that we could hardly ſtand on this barren ſpot; and therefore it was reſolved, for our own and the boat's greater ſafety, to croſs the cove, and take up our night's quarters in the woods immediately under the lee of the high mountains. Every one of us ſeized a firebrand and ſtepped into the boat, where we made a formidable appearance, as if we were bound on ſome deſperate expedition. To our great diſappointment the woods were almoſt worſe than the rock we had left, being ſo wet that it was with the utmoſt difficulty our fire would burn; we had no ſhelter from the heavy rains which came down upon us in double portions from the leaves; and the wind not allowing the ſmoke to aſcend, we were almoſt ſtifled with it. Here we lay down on the moiſt ground, wrapped in wet cloaks thoroughly ſoaked and cold, ſupperleſs, and tormented with rheumatic pains; and, notwithſtanding all theſe inconveniencies, fell aſleep for a few moments, being entirely exhauſted with fatigue. But about two o'clock we were rouſed by a loud thunder-clap. The ſtorm was now at its height, and blew a perfect hurricane. The roar of the waves at a diſtance was tremendous, and only overcome at times by the agitation of the foreſts, and the craſhing fall of huge timber-trees around us. We went to look after our boat, and at that inſtant a dreadful

flaſh

flaſh of lightning illuminated the whole arm of the ſea; we ſaw the billows foaming, and furiouſly rolled above each other in livid mountains; in a word, it ſeemed as if all nature was haſtening to a general cataſtrophe. 1773. MAY.

Non han piu gli elementi ordine o ſegno,
S'odono orrendi tuoni, ognor piu creſce
De' fieri venti il furibondo ſdegno.
Increſpa, e inlividiſce il mar la faccia,
E s'alza contra il ciel che lo minaccia. TASSONI.

The lightning was inſtantaneouſly followed by the moſt aſtoniſhing exploſion we had ever heard, reverberated from the broken rocks around us; and our hearts ſunk with apprehenſion leſt the ſhip might be deſtroyed by the tempeſt or its concomitant ætherial fires, and ourſelves left to periſh in an unfrequented part of the world. In this diſmal ſituation we lingered out the night, which ſeemed the longeſt we had ever known. At laſt about ſix in the morning the violence of the ſtorm abated, we embarked about day break, and reached the veſſel ſoon after, which had been obliged to ſtrike yards and top-maſts. The inlet we had now ſurveyed, received the name of Wet Jacket Arm, from the dreadful night we paſſed in it. There now remained only one inlet to the northward of this unexplored; and captain Cook, finding himſelf recovered, ſet out, immediately after our return, to examine it. He proceeded Saturday 8.

1773. MAY. up about ten miles, and ſaw nearly the end of this arm, which like the other, contains good harbours and plenty of freſh water, wood, fiſh, and wild fowl. On his return his people had the wind and heavy rains to ſtruggle with, and all returned on board thoroughly wet, at nine in the Sunday 9. evening. The next morning the ſky being clear, but the wind unfavourable for going out to ſea, we accompanied captain Cook once more on a ſhooting party up the new arm, where we ſpent the whole day, and met with tolerable good ſport; but another party, who had taken a different route, came back almoſt empty-handed.

The wind continuing weſterly and blowing very hard, the captain did not think it adviſeable to put to ſea; but it falling moderate in the afternoon, he made an excurſion to an iſland in the entrance, on which were abundance of ſeals. He and his party killed ten of them, of which they took five on board, leaving the reſt behind them.

Tueſday 11. The next morning it was pretty clear, the air very cold and ſharp, and all the hills covered with ſnow almoſt half way down to the water, ſo that the winter was now fairly ſet in. A boat was ſent to fetch off the ſeals killed laſt night, which had been left behind; and in the mean time we weighed and ſailed from Duſky Bay, getting clear of the land at noon.

The

The ſtay which we had made here of ſix weeks, and four days, together with the abundance of freſh proviſions which we enjoyed, and the conſtant exerciſe we uſed, had contributed to recover all thoſe who had been ill of the ſcurvy at our arrival, and given new ſtrength to the reſt. However it is much to be doubted, whether we ſhould have preſerved our health ſo well as we did, without the uſe of the fermented liquor or ſpruce-beer which we brewed. The climate of Duſky Bay, is I muſt own, its greateſt inconvenience, and can never be ſuppoſed a healthy one. During the whole of our ſtay, we had only one week of continued fair weather, all the reſt of the time the rain predominated. But perhaps the climate was leſs noxious to Engliſhmen than to any other nation, becauſe it is analagous to their own. Another inconvenience in Duſky Bay is the want of celery, ſcurvy-graſs, and other antiſcorbutics, which may be found in great plenty at Queen Charlotte's ſound, and many parts in New Zeeland. The intricate foreſts which clothe the ground, the prodigious ſteepneſs of the hills, which on that account are almoſt incapable of cultivation, and the virulent bite of ſand-flies, which cauſes ulcers like the ſmall-pox, are certainly diſagreeable circumſtances; but of ſmall conſequence to thoſe who only put in here for refreſhment, when compared to the former. With all its defects, Duſky Bay is one of the fineſt places 1773. May.

1773. MAY. in New Zeeland, for a ſet of people to touch at in our ſituation, exhauſted with labours and hardſhips of long continuance, and deprived of the ſight of land above four months. Nothing is more eaſy than to ſail into it, there being no danger except what is viſible above water, and ſo many harbours and coves exiſting in every part of it, that it is impoſſible to miſs a convenient anchoring-place, where wood, water, fiſh, and wild-fowl are to be found in plenty.

CHAP.

1773. MAY.

CHAP. VI.

Paſſage from Duſky Bay to Queen Charlotte's Sound.—Junction with the Adventure.—Tranſactions during our ſtay there.

HAVING hoiſted in our boat, which returned loaden with ſeals, we ſtood to the northward, with a heavy S. W. ſwell, and numerous ſooty albatroſſes and blue petrels attending us. As we advanced along ſhore, the mountains ſeemed to decreaſe in height, and in four and twenty hours the thermometer roſe 7½ degrees, having been at 46° on the day after we left Duſky Bay, and ſtanding at 53½° the next morning at eight o'clock. Tueſday 11. Thurſday 13.

On the 14th, being off Cape Foul-wind, our favourable gale left us, as if it meant to authenticate the propriety of the denomination, and we really had a contrary wind. It blew a hard gale all the 16th, attended with heavy rains, and we kept plying the whole day, making one of our boards cloſe in ſhore under Rock's Point. Sunday 16.

At four o'clock in the morning on the 17th we ſtood to the eaſtward with a fair wind, ſo that we were abreaſt of Cape Farewell at eight o'clock. Here we ſaw the land appearing low and ſandy near the ſea-ſhore, though it roſe into high ſnow-capt mountains in the interior parts. Vaſt flocks of the little diving petrel, *(procellaria tridactyla,)* were

ſeen

1773. MAY. ſeen fluttering on the ſurface of the ſea, or ſitting on it, or diving to conſiderable diſtances with amazing agility. They ſeemed exactly the ſame which we had ſeen on the 29th of January and the 8th of February, in the latitude of 48° S. when we were in ſearch of M. Kerguelen's Iſlands.

In the afternoon, about four o'clock, we were nearly oppoſite Cape Stephens, and had little or no wind. We obſerved thick clouds to the S. W. about that time, and ſaw that it rained on all the ſouthern parts of that cape. On a ſudden a whitiſh ſpot appeared on the ſea in that quarter, and a column aroſe out of it, looking like a glaſs tube; another ſeemed to come down from the clouds to meet this, and they made a coalition, forming what is commonly called a water-ſpout. A little while after we took notice of three other columns, which were formed in the ſame manner as the firſt. The neareſt of all theſe was about three miles diſtant, and its apparent diameter, as far as we could gueſs, might be about ſeventy fathom at the baſe. We found our thermometer at 56½ when this phænomenon firſt took its riſe. The nature of water-ſpouts and their cauſes being hitherto very little known, we were extremely attentive to mark every little circumſtance attendant on this appearance. Their baſe, where the water of the ſea was violently agitated, and roſe in a ſpiral form in vapours, was a broad ſpot, which looked bright and yellowiſh

yellowiſh when illuminated by the ſun. The column was of a cylindrical form, rather encreaſing in width towards the upper extremity. Theſe columns moved forward on the ſurface of the ſea, and the clouds not following them with equal rapidity, they aſſumed a bent or incurvated ſhape, and frequently appeared croſſing each other, evidently proceeding in different directions; from whence we concluded, that it being calm, each of theſe water-ſpouts cauſed a wind of its own. At laſt they broke one after another, being probably too much diſtended by the difference between their motion and that of the clouds. In proportion as the clouds came nearer to us, the ſea appeared more and more covered with ſhort broken waves, and the wind continually veered all round the compaſs, without fixing in any point. We ſoon ſaw a ſpot on the ſea, within two hundred fathom of us, in a violent agitation. The water, in a ſpace of fifty or ſixty fathoms, moved towards the centre, and there riſing into vapour, by the force of the whirling motion, aſcended in a ſpiral form towards the clouds. Some hailſtones fell on board about this time, and the clouds looked exceedingly black and louring above us. Directly over the whirl-pool, if I may ſo call the agitated ſpot on the ſea, a cloud gradually tapered into a long ſlender tube, which ſeemed to deſcend to meet the riſing ſpiral, and ſoon united with it into a ſtrait column of a cylindrical form. We could diſtinctly obſerve the water 1773. MAY.

1773. MAY. water hurled upwards with the greateſt violence in a ſpiral, and it appeared that it left a hollow ſpace in the centre; ſo that we concluded the water only formed a hollow tube, inſtead of a ſolid column. We were ſtrongly confirmed in this belief by the colour, which was exactly like any hollow glaſs-tube. After ſome time the laſt water-ſpout was incurvated and broke like the others, with this difference, that its disjunction was attended with a flaſh of lightning, but no exploſion was heard. Our ſituation during all this time was very dangerous and alarming; a phænomenon which carried ſo much terrific majeſty in it, and connected as it were the ſea with the clouds, made our oldeſt mariners uneaſy and at a loſs how to behave; for moſt of them, though they had viewed water-ſpouts at a diſtance, yet had never been ſo beſet with them as we were; and all without exception had heard dreadful accounts of their pernicious effects, when they happened to break over a ſhip. We prepared indeed for the worſt, by cluing up our topſails; but it was the general opinion that our maſts and yards muſt have gone to wreck if we had been drawn into the vortex. It was hinted that firing a gun had commonly ſucceeded in breaking water-ſpouts, by the ſtrong vibration it cauſes in the air; and accordingly a four-pounder was ordered to be got ready, but our people being, as uſual, very dilatory about it, the danger was paſt before we could try this experiment. How far

electricity

electricity may be conſidered as the cauſe of this phænomenon, we could not determine with any preciſion; ſo much however ſeems certain, that it has ſome connection with it, from the flaſh of lightning, which was plainly obſerved at the burſting of the laſt column. The whole time, from their firſt appearance to the diſſolution of the laſt, was about three quarters of an hour. It was five o'clock when the latter happened, and the thermometer then ſtood at 54° or 2½ degrees lower, than when they began to make their appearance. The depth of water we had under us was thirty-ſix fathom. The place we were in was analogous to moſt places where water-ſpouts have been obſerved, inaſmuch as it was in a narrow ſea or ſtrait. Dr. Shaw and Thevenot ſaw them in the Mediterranean and Perſian Gulph; and they are common in the Weſt Indies, the Straits of Malacca, and the Chineſe ſea. Upon the whole, we were not fortunate enough to make any remarkable diſcoveries in regard to this phænomenon; all our obſervations only tend to confirm the facts already noticed by others, and which are ſo largely commented upon by the learned Dr. Benjamin Franklin, F. R. S. His ingenious hypotheſis, that whirlwinds and water-ſpouts have a common origin, has not been invalidated by our obſervations. We refer our philoſophical readers to his papers, as containing the moſt complete and ſatisfactory account of water-ſpouts*. 1773. MAY.

* See his Experiments on Electricity, &c. 4to. fifth edition, London, 1774.

1773. MAY. Tueſday 18. About five o'clock the next morning we opened Queen Charlotte's Sound, and about ſeven we ſaw three flaſhes riſing from the ſouth end of the *Motu-Aro*, where a *hippah*, or ſtrong hold of the natives, was ſituated, which is deſcribed in Lieutenant Cook's voyage in the Endeavour *. We immediately conceived that they were ſignals made by Europeans, and probably by our friends in the Adventure; and upon firing ſome four-pounders, had the pleaſure of being anſwered out of the Ship Cove, oppoſite the iſland. Towards noon we could diſcern our old conſort at anchor; and ſoon after were met by ſeveral of her officers, who brought us a preſent of freſh fiſh, and gave us an account of what had happened to them after our ſeparation. In the afternoon it fell calm, ſo that we were obliged to be towed into the cove, where we anchored at ſeven in the evening. In the mean time Captain Furneaux came on board, and teſtified his ſatisfaction at rejoining us, by a ſalute of thirteen guns, which our people cheerfully returned. Thoſe who have been in ſituations ſimilar to ours, may form an adequate idea of the reciprocal pleaſure which this meeting produced. It was heightened on both ſides, by the recent impreſſions of accumulated dangers to which our ſeparate courſes had expoſed us, and which under Providence we had happily eſcaped.

* See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. II. p. 395, 400.

The

The Adventure, after loſing our company, had continued her courſe to the northward of us, between the latitudes of 50° and 54° ſouth, experiencing very heavy gales from the weſtward during the whole time. On the 28th of February, being in about 122° of longitude weſt from Greenwich, Captain Furneaux thought it adviſeable gradually to deſcend into the latitude of Diemen's Land, or the extremity of New Holland, diſcovered by Abel Janſſen Taſman in November 1642. On the 9th of March he fell in with the S. W. part of this coaſt, and running along its ſouthern extremity, came to an anchor on the 11th in the afternoon, in a bay on the eaſt ſide, which he called Adventure Bay, and which is probably the ſame where Taſman lay at anchor, diſtinguiſhed by the name of Frederick Henry Bay. The ſouthern extremities of this coaſt conſiſted of large broken maſſes of barren and blackiſh rocks, reſembling the extreme points of the African and American continents. The land round the bay roſe in ſandy hillocks, of which the innermoſt were covered with various ſorts of trees, rather remote from each other, and without any bruſh-wood. They alſo found a lake of freſh water on the weſt ſide, covered with great flocks of wild-ducks and other aquatic fowls. Several iſlands in the offing to the N E. along ſhore, were of a moderate height, and likewiſe covered with wood. Taſman probably took them for one great iſland, which in his charts 1773. MAY.

1773. MAY. bears the name of Maria's Iſland. The Adventure lay only three days in this bay, during which Captain Furneaux took in a ſmall quantity of freſh water, and collected ſeveral curious animals, among which was a ſpecies of Viverra, and a fine white hawk. Our Europeans perceived no inhabitants during their ſtay, but thought they obſerved ſome ſmoke at a great diſtance in the country.

On the 15th in the evening they weighed and ſailed out of Adventure Bay, ſtanding along ſhore to the northward. They found it conſiſted of ſandy hills of a moderate height, but ſaw at the ſame time ſome much higher in the interior country. At different parts of this coaſt they met with ſeveral iſlands, particularly thoſe which Taſman named Schouten's and Vander Lyn's Iſlands. About the latitude of 41° 15′ ſouth, they opened a little bay, which, on account of ſeveral fires, probably lighted by the natives, they named the Bay of Fires. They continued examining the coaſt, not without running ſome danger from numerous ſhoals, till the 19th of March at noon, when being in the latitude of 39° 20′ ſouth, and ſtill ſeeing the land about eight leagues to the north-weſtward, they concluded that Diemen's Land was connected with the continent of New Holland, and directed their courſe towards the rendezvous at New Zeeland. However, as they had been obliged, by the frequency of ſhoals, to keep out of ſight of the coaſt ſeveral times, and there remained a ſpace of twenty leagues from the

the northernmoſt land they had ſeen, to Point Hicks, the ſouthern boundary of captain Cook's diſcoveries in the Endeavour; it is ſtill undetermined, whether a ſtrait or paſſage does not exiſt between the main of New Holland and Diemen's Land, though the appearance of quadrupeds upon the latter, rather ſeems to favour the idea of their being connected together. Be this as it may, there is perhaps no part of the world which ſo well deſerves future inveſtigation as the great continent of New Holland, of which we do not yet know the whole outline, and of whoſe productions we are in a manner entirely ignorant. Its inhabitants, from the accounts of all the voyagers who have viſited them, are but few in number, probably dwell on the ſea-coaſts only, go perfectly naked, and ſeem by all deſcription to lead a more ſavage life than any nation in warm climates. There is conſequently a vaſt interior ſpace of ground, equal to the continent of Europe, and in great meaſure ſituated between the tropics, entirely unknown, and perhaps uninhabited: nothing is more certain, from the vaſt variety of animal and vegetable productions, collected on its ſea-coaſts in captain Cook's voyage in the Endeavour, than that the inner countries contain immenſe treaſures of natural knowledge, which muſt of courſe become of infinite uſe to the civilized nation, which ſhall firſt attempt to go in ſearch of them. The ſouth-weſt corner

1773. MAY.

of

1773. MAY. of this continent, which hitherto remains wholly unexplored, may perhaps open a way to the heart of the country; for it is not likely, that ſo great an extent of land, ſituated under the tropic, ſhould be deſtitute of a great river, and no part of the coaſt ſeems better ſituated than that for its paſſage into the ſea.

After leaving this coaſt, the Adventure continued fifteen days at ſea, on account of contrary winds, and at length made the coaſt of New Zeeland, near Rock's Point, on the ſouthern iſland, on the third of April, at ſix in the morning, and came to an anchor at Ship Cove, Queen Charlotte's Sound, on the 7th.

During their ſtay here, they had made the ſame eſtabliſhments on ſhore as we had done at Duſky Bay, except the brewery, which they were not yet acquainted with. They had found the *hippah*, or ſtrong-hold of the natives, at the ſouthern end of Motu-Aro forſaken, and their aſtronomer had fixed his obſervatory upon it. The inhabitants of this ſound, who amount to ſome hundred perſons, in ſeveral diſtinct and independent parties, often at variance with each other, had begun an intercourſe with them, and paid them ſeveral viſits, coming from the interior parts. They had been extremely well received, and did not heſitate to come on board, where they eat freely of the ſailor's proviſions, ſhowing a particular liking to our biſcuit, and

peaſe-

peaſe-ſoup. They had brought with them great quantities of their clothing, tools, and weapons, which they eagerly exchanged for nails, hatchets, and cloth. 1773. MAY.

On the 11th of May, being the ſame day we ſailed out of Duſky Bay, ſeveral of the Adventure's people, who were at work on ſhore, or diſperſed on ſhooting parties, diſtinctly felt a ſhock of an earthquake; but thoſe who remained on board, did not perceive any thing of it. This circumſtance may ſerve to evince the probability of volcanoes on New Zeeland, as theſe two great phænomena on our globe ſeem to be cloſely connected together.

We arrived in Queen Charlotte's Sound, at the time when the Adventure's crew began to deſpair of ever meeting with us again, and had made preparations to ſpend the whole winter in this harbour, in order to proceed to the eaſtward, with the enſuing ſpring, to explore the South Sea in high latitudes. Captain Cook, however, was by no means inclined to lie inactive during ſo many months, eſpecially as he knew, that conſiderable refreſhments were to be had at the Society Iſles, which he had viſited in his former voyage. He therefore gave directions to put both ſloops in condition to go to ſea, as ſoon as poſſible; and the Reſolution being entirely prepared for that purpoſe, her crew aſſiſted that of the Adventure for the ſake of greater diſpatch.

We

1773. MAY. Wedneſd. 19. We began our excurſions the day after our arrival, and found the productions of the foreſts very ſimilar to thoſe of Duſky Bay, but the ſeaſon and climate infinitely more favourable to our botanical reſearches. We were fortunate enough to meet with ſeveral ſpecies of plants ſtill in flower, and alſo found ſome birds, which we had not ſeen before. But the antiſcorbutic plants, which grew on every beach, gave this port the moſt diſtinguiſhed advantage over our firſt place of refreſhment. We immediately gathered vaſt quantities of wild celery, and of a well-taſted ſcurvy-graſs (*lepidium*) which were daily boiled with ſome oat-meal or wheat for breakfaſt, and with peaſe-ſoup for dinner; and the people on board the Adventure, who had hitherto not known the uſe of theſe greens, now followed our example. We alſo found a ſpecies of ſow-thiſtle (*ſonchus oleraceus,*) and a kind of plant which our people called lamb's quarters, (*tetragonia cornuta**,) which we frequently uſed as ſallads; and if we had not ſuch plenty of wild-fowl and fiſhes as at Duſky Bay, we were amply recompenſed by theſe excellent vegetables. The ſpruce and the tea-tree of New Zeeland likewiſe grew in great plenty hereabouts, and we taught our friends to make uſe of both for their refreſhment.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. III. p. 442.

The

1773. MAY. Thurſday 20.

The next day we went to the Hippah, or fortification of the natives, where Mr. Bailey, the aſtronomer of the Adventure had fixed his obſervatory. It is ſituated on a ſteep inſulated rock, which is acceſſible only in one place, by a narrow difficult path, where two perſons cannot go abreaſt. At the top it had been ſurrounded by ſome paliſadoes, but theſe were in moſt parts removed, and had been uſed for fuel by our people. The huts of the natives ſtood promiſcuouſly within the encloſure, and had no walls, but conſiſted only of a roof, which roſe into a ſteep ridge. The inner ſkeletons of theſe huts were branches of trees plaited ſo as to reſemble hurdles; on theſe they had laid the bark of trees, and covered the whole with the rough fibres of the flag, or New Zeeland flax-plant. We were told, that the people from the Adventure had found them exceeding full of vermin, and particularly fleas, from which it ſhould ſeem that they had been but lately inhabited; and indeed it is not unlikely, that all theſe ſtrong places are only the occaſional abode of the natives, in caſe of danger from their enemies; and that they forſake them, whenever their perſonal ſafety does not require their reſidence. Our fellow-voyagers likewiſe found immenſe numbers of rats upon the Hippah rock, ſo that they were obliged to put ſome large jars in the ground, level with the ſurface, into which theſe vermin fell during night, by running backwards and forwards; and great number of them were caught in this

1773. MAY. manner. It is therefore very probable, that rats are indigenous in New Zeeland, or at leaſt that their arrival there, is prior to its diſcovery by European navigators. Captain Furneaux ſhewed us ſeveral ſpots of ground on the top of this rock, which he had ordered to be dug, and on which he had ſown a great variety of garden-ſeeds; theſe ſucceeded ſo well that we frequently had ſallads, and many diſhes of European greens at our table, notwithſtanding the ſeaſon of winter was now far advanced. But the climate in this part of New Zeeland is extremely mild, when compared to that of Duſky Bay; and notwithſtanding the vicinity of the ſnowy mountains, I am inclined to believe it ſeldom freezes hard in Queen Charlotte's Sound; at leaſt we experienced no froſt during our continuance there to the 6th of June.

Saturday 22. On the 22d we went over to an iſland in the ſound, to which captain Cook had given the name of Long Iſland in his former voyage. It conſiſts of one long ridge, of which the ſides are ſteep, and the back or top nearly level, though in moſt places very narrow. On its N. W. ſide we ſaw a fine beach, ſurrounding a little piece of flat land, of which the greateſt part was marſhy, and covered with various graſſes; the reſt was full of antiſcorbutics, and the New Zeeland flax-plant *(phormium)*, growing round ſome old abandoned huts of the natives. We cleared ſome ſpots of ground here, and ſowed European garden ſeeds on them, which

which we thought were likely to thrive in this place. We alſo climbed to the top of the ridge, which we found covered with dry graſſes, intermixed with ſome low, ſhrubby plants; and among them a number of quails exactly like thoſe of Europe, had their reſidence. Several deep and narrow glens which ran down the ſides of the ridge to the ſea, were filled with trees, ſhrubs, and climbers, the haunt of numerous ſmall birds, and of ſeveral falcons; but where the cliffs were perpendicular, or hanging over the water, great flocks of a beautiful ſort of ſhags, built their neſts on every little broken rock, or if poſſible in ſmall cavities about a foot ſquare, which ſeemed in a few inſtances to be enlarged by the birds themſelves. The argillaceous ſtone, of which moſt of the hills about Queen Charlotte's Sound conſiſted, is ſometimes ſufficiently ſoft for that purpoſe. It runs in oblique ſtrata, commonly dipping a little towards the ſouth, is of a greeniſh-grey, or bluiſh, or yellowiſh-brown colour, and ſometimes contains veins of white quartz. A green talcous or nephritic ſtone, is alſo found in this kind of rock, and when very hard, capable of poliſh, and ſemi-tranſparent; it is uſed by the natives for chiſſels, hatchets, and ſometimes for pattoo-pattoos: it is of the ſame ſpecies which jewellers call the jadde. Several ſofter ſorts of this ſtone, perfectly opaque, and of a pale green colour, are more numerous than the flinty ſemi-tranſparent kind; and ſeveral ſpecies of horn-

1773. MAY.

1773. MAY. ſtone and argillaceous ſlate likewiſe are ſeen running in great ſtrata through ſome of the mountains. The latter is commonly found in great quantity, and broken pieces, on the ſea beeches, and is what our ſeamen call ſhingle, by which name it is diſtinguiſhed in the account of captain Cook's former voyage. On theſe beaches we alſo met with ſeveral ſorts of flinty ſtones and pebbles, and ſome looſe pieces of black, compact, and ponderous baſaltes, of which the natives form ſome of their ſhort clubs, called pattoo-pattoos. In many places we likewiſe ſaw ſtrata of a blackiſh *ſaxum* Lin. conſiſting of a black and compact mica or glimmer, intermixed with minute particles of quartz. The argillaceous ſlate is ſometimes found of a ruſty colour, which ſeems evidently to riſe from irony particles; and from this circumſtance, and the variety of minerals juſt enumerated, there is great reaſon to ſuppoſe that this part of New Zeeland contains iron ore, and perhaps ſeveral other metallic bodies. Before we left this place, we found ſome ſmall pieces of a whitiſh pumice-ſtone on the ſea-ſhore, which, together with the baſaltine lava, ſtrongly confirm the exiſtence of volcanoes in New Zeeland.

Sunday 23. On the 23d in the morning, two ſmall canoes came towards us, in which were five men of the natives, the firſt we had ſeen ſince the arrival of our ſloop in this harbour. Their appearance was nearly the ſame as that

of

of the Duſky Bay people, with this difference, that they ſeemed much more familiar and unconcerned. We bought ſome fiſh of them, and likewiſe made them ſome preſents, conducting them into the cabin, as they did not heſitate to come on board. Seeing us ſit down to dinner, they freely partook of our proviſions, but drank pure water, refuſing to touch either wine or brandy. They were ſo reſtleſs, that they removed from our table to that of the officers in the ſteerage, where they likewiſe eat with great appetite, and drank great quantities of water ſweetened with ſugar, of which they were remarkably fond. Every thing they ſaw, or could lay hands upon they coveted, but upon the leaſt hint, that we either could not, or would not part with what they had taken up, they laid it down without reluctance. Glaſs bottles, which they called taw-haw, were however particularly valuable to them; and whenever they ſaw any of them, they always pointed to them, and then moved the hand to their breaſt, pronouncing the word *mòkh*, by which they uſed to expreſs their deſire of poſſeſſing any thing. Among the variety of little preſents we made them they did not notice beads, ribbons, white paper, &c. but were very eager after iron, nails, and hatchets; a proof that the intrinſic value of theſe tools cannot fail to make an impreſſion on the minds of theſe people in the long run, though they were at firſt indifferent to them, as not knowing their uſe and durability. 1773. APRIL.

1773. MAY. bility. Some of our people having made uſe of their canoes in the afternoon to tranſport themſelves to the ſhore, they came into the cabin complaining to the captain, whoſe authority over the reſt they very well conceived; and their embarkations being reſtored to them, they all went away highly pleaſed.

Monday 24. The next morning at day-break they returned, but brought four other perſons with them, one of them a woman, with ſome children, and traded as uſual about the ſhips. The captains embarked with us after breakfaſt, in order to viſit an extenſive inlet on the northern ſhore of the ſound, which was called Weſt Bay in the Endeavour's voyage. On our way we met a double canoe, manned with thirteen perſons, who, coming along ſide, made acquaintance with Captain Cook, and ſeemed to recollect him, by enquiring for Tupaya, the native of O-Taheitee, whom he had taken on board during his former voyage, and who had lived to viſit this country with him. When they were told that he was dead, they ſeemed much concerned, and pronounced ſome words in a plaintive tone. We made ſigns for them to go on board the veſſels lying in Ship Cove; but when they ſaw us going on to the ſouth, they returned to the cove from whence they came.

We found the country not quite ſo ſteep as at the ſouthern extremity of New Zeeland, and the hills near the ſea-ſide were in general of an inferior height. In moſt parts, however,

however, they were covered with foreſts, equally intricate and impenetrable as thoſe of Duſky Bay, but containing a greater number of pigeons, parrots, and ſmall birds, which perhaps abandon that rude climate during the cold ſeaſon, and paſs their winter in theſe milder regions. Oyſter-catchers or ſea-pies, and various ſorts of ſhags, likewiſe enlivened the ſea ſhores here, but ducks were extremely ſcarce. Weſt Bay contains a number of fine coves, each of which affords excellent anchorage; the hills riſe gently all round it, covered with ſhrubs and trees, and many of their ſummits are clear of woods, but overgrown with a common ſpecies of fern, *(acroſticum furcatum.)* This is likewiſe the caſe with many iſlands in the ſound, and great part of the ſouth-eaſt ſhore of the ſound from Cape Koamaroò to Eaſt Bay. After collecting a number of new plants, among which was a ſpecies of pepper, very much reſembling ginger in the taſte, and ſhooting many birds of all ſorts, we returned on board late in the evening. 1773. MAY.

The launch, which had been ſent out in the morning to an adjacent cove, in order to cut geeens for the ſhip's company and ſome graſs for our goats and ſheep, did not return that day; but ſtaying out all the next likewiſe, we began to be very uneaſy about the twelve people in her, among whom were our third lieutenant, the lieutenant of marines, Mr. Hodges, the carpenter, and the gunner. Our apprehenſions were the more juſt, as the wind and weather

1773. MAY. ther had been favourable for their return from almoſt any part of the bay, till the morning of the 25th; ſoon after which it began to be very rainy and ſtormy. On the day we had gone to Weſt Bay, a large canoe with twelve of the natives came from the north to our ſhip, and after ſelling a variety of their dreſſes, ſome ſtone hatchets, clubs, ſpears, and even paddles, they returned the way they came.

On the 26th, after noon, the weather being ſomewhat cleared up, our launch arrived on board, but all the people in her were exhauſted with fatigue and hunger. All the proviſion they had taken out with them conſiſted of three biſcuits and a bottle of brandy; and they had not been able to ſucceed in catching a ſingle fiſh during the tempeſtuous weather. After being toſſed about by the waves, attempting in vain to return to the veſſels, they had put into a cove, on which they found a few deſerted huts of the natives, where they took ſhelter, and juſt kept themſelves from ſtarving by eating a few muſcles that adhered to the rocks.

The next morning we made our reſearches round the bottom of the cove, in queſt of plants and birds; and in the afternoon we went out along the rocky ſhores towards Point Jackſon, to kill ſome ſhags, which we had now learnt to reliſh inſtead of ducks. Between theſe two excurſions we received another viſit of the Indian family, whom we had ſeen before, on the 23d. They ſeemed to be come for no

no other purpoſe than that of eating with us, having brought nothing with them to exchange for our iron-work. We now enquired for their names, but they were a long time before they could underſtand us; however, comprehending our meaning at laſt, they gave us a collection of words, which had a ſingular mixture of gutturals and vowels. The oldeſt among them was called Towahàngha; the others Kotughâ-a, Koghoäà, Khoäà, Kollàkh, and Taywaherùa. This laſt was a boy about twelve or fourteen years of age, who had a very promiſing countenance, and ſeemed to be the livelieſt and moſt intelligent among them. He came into the cabin and dined with us, eating very voraciouſly of a ſhag-pye, of which, contrary to our expectation, he preferred the cruſt. The captain offered him ſome Madeira wine, of which he drank ſomething more than one glaſs, making a great many wry faces at firſt. A bottle of a very ſweet Cape wine being brought upon the table, a glaſs was filled out to him, which he reliſhed ſo well that he was continually licking his lips, and deſired to have another, which he likewiſe drank off. This draught began to elevate his ſpirits, and his tongue ran on with great volubility. He capered about the cabin, inſiſted on having the captain's boat-cloak, which lay on a chair, and was much vexed at the refuſal; he next deſired one of the empty bottles, and this requeſt likewiſe proving fruitleſs, he went out of the cabin

1773. MAY.

1773. MAY. highly offended. On deck he ſaw ſome of our ſervants folding up linen which had been hung out to dry, and immediately ſeized on a table-cloth; but this being taken from him, his paſſion was at the higheſt pitch, he ſtamped, threatened, then grumbled, or rather grunted awhile, and at laſt became ſo ſullen that he would not ſpeak a word. The impatient temper of this nation never appeared more diſtinctly than in this boy's conduct; but at the ſame time we had room to conſider, ſeeing the effect of ſtrong liquors upon him, how fortunate it was that they were uſed to no kind of intoxicating draught, which would perhaps ſerve to make their temper ſtill more fierce and ungovernable than it is at preſent.

Saturday 29. About thirty natives ſurrounded us in ſeveral canoes the next morning, and brought a few of their tools and weapons to ſell, for which they received great quantities of our goods in exchange, owing to the eagerneſs with which our crews outbid each other. There were a number of women among them, whoſe lips were of a blackiſh blue colour, by punctuation; and their cheeks were painted of a lively red, with a mixture of ruddle and oil. Like thoſe at Duſky Bay, they commonly had ſlender and bandy legs, with large knees; defects which evidently are deducible from the little exerciſe they uſe, and their mode of ſitting croſs-legged and cramped up almoſt perpetually in canoes. Their colour was of a clear brown, between the olive and mahogany

mahogany hues, their hair jetty black, the faces round, the noſe and lips rather thick but not flat, their black eyes ſometimes lively and not without expreſſion; the whole upper part of their figure was not diſproportionate, and their aſſemblage of features not abſolutely forbidding. Our crews, who had not converſed with women ſince our departure from the Cape, found theſe ladies very agreeable; and from the manner in which their advances were received, it appeared very plainly that chaſtity was not rigorouſly obſerved here, and that the ſex were far from being impregnable. However their favours did not depend upon their own inclination, but the men, as abſolute maſters, were always to be conſulted upon the occaſion; if a ſpike-nail, or a ſhirt, or a ſimilar preſent had been given for their connivance, the lady was at liberty to make her lover happy, and to exact, if poſſible, the tribute of another preſent for herſelf. Some among them, however, ſubmitted with reluctance to this vile proſtitution; and, but for the authority and menaces of the men, would not have complied with the deſires of a ſet of people who could, with unconcern, behold their tears and hear their complaints. Whether the members of a civilized ſociety, who could act ſuch a brutal part, or the barbarians who could force their own women to ſubmit to ſuch indignity, deſerve the greateſt abhorrence, is a queſtion not eaſily to be decided. Encouraged by the lucrative nature of this 1773. MAY.

1773. MAY. infamous commerce, the New Zeelanders went through the whole veſſel, offering their daughters and ſiſters promiſcuouſly to every perſon's embraces, in exchange for our iron tools, which they knew could not be purchaſed at an eaſier rate. It does not appear that their married women were ever ſuffered to have this kind of intercourſe with our people. Their ideas of female chaſtity are, in this reſpect, ſo different from ours, that a girl may favour a number of lovers without any detriment to her character; but if ſhe marries, conjugal fidelity is exacted from her with the greateſt rigour. It may therefore be alledged, that as the New Zeelanders place no value on the continence of their unmarried women, the arrival of Europeans among them, did not injure their moral characters in this reſpect; but we doubt whether they ever debaſed themſelves ſo much as to make a trade of their women, before we created new wants by ſhewing them iron-tools; for the poſſeſſion of which they do not heſitate to commit an action that, in our eyes, deprives them of the very ſhadow of ſenſibility.

It is unhappy enough that the unavoidable conſequence of all our voyages of diſcovery, has always been the loſs of a number of innocent lives; but this heavy injury done to the little uncivilized communities which Europeans have viſited, is trifling when compared to the irretrievable harm entailed upon them by corrupting

their

their morals. If theſe evils were in ſome meaſure compenſated by the introduction of ſome real benefit in theſe countries, or by the abolition of ſome other immoral cuſtoms among their inhabitants, we might at leaſt comfort ourſelves, that what they loſt on one hand, they gained on the other; but I fear that hitherto our intercourſe has been wholly diſadvantageous to the nations of the South Seas; and that thoſe communities have been the leaſt injured, who have always kept aloof from us, and whoſe jealous diſpoſition did not ſuffer our ſailors to become too familiar among them, as if they had perceived in their countenances that levity of diſpoſition, and that ſpirit of debauchery, with which they are generally reproached. 1773. MAY.

Several of theſe people were invited into the cabin, where Mr. Hodges applied himſelf to ſketch the moſt characteriſtic faces, while we prevailed on them to ſit ſtill for a few moments, keeping their attention engaged, by a variety of trifles which we ſhewed, and ſome of which we preſented to them. We found ſeveral very expreſſive countenances among them, particularly ſome old men, with grey or white heads and beards; and ſome young men, with amazing buſhy hair, which hung wildly over their faces, and increaſed their natural ſavage looks. The ſtature of theſe people was middle ſized in general, and their form and colour almoſt entirely the ſame as that of the Duſky Bay people; their dreſs was likewiſe made in the ſame manner

1773. May. ner of the flax-plant, but never interwoven with feathers, in lieu of which they had bits of dog-ſkin at the four corners of their cloaks, which the others were not fortunate enough to poſſeſs. The *boghee-boghee*, or ſhaggy-cloak, which hangs round their neck like a thatch of ſtraw*, was almoſt conſtantly worn by them, on account of the ſeaſon, during which the air began to be ſharp, and rains were very frequent. But their other kinds of cloth ‡ were here commonly old, dirty, and not ſo neatly wrought as they are deſcribed in captain Cook's firſt voyage. The men wore their hair hanging in a very ſlovenly manner about them, but the women had theirs cut ſhort, which ſeems to be the general practice among them. They alſo wore the head-dreſs, or cap of brown feathers, mentioned in the account of captain Cook's former voyage. After theſe people had been on board a few hours, they began to ſteal, and ſecrete every thing they could lay their hands on. Several of them were diſcovered in conveying away a large four-hour glaſs, a lamp, ſome handkerchiefs, and ſome knives; upon which they were ignominiouſly turned out of the ſloop, and never permitted to come on board again. They felt the whole weight of ſhame, which this proceeding brought upon them; and their fiery temper, which cannot brook any humiliation, was up in arms at this

* See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. III. p. 453, &c.

‡ Ibid. p. 455.

puniſh-

puniſhment; ſo that one of them uttered threats, and made violent geſtures in his canoe. In the evening they all went on ſhore, abreaſt of the ſloops, and made ſome temporary huts of the branches of trees, near which they hawled their canoes on the dry land, and made fires, over which they prepared their ſuppers. Their meals conſiſted of ſome freſh fiſhes, which they had caught in their canoes not far from ſhore, with a kind of ſcoop-net, deſcribed in captain Cook's former voyage, which they managed with a dexterity peculiar to themſelves. 1773. MAY.

The next morning we had fine mild weather, and made a trip over to Long Iſland, in order to look after ſome hay, which our people had cut there, and to collect greens for the ſhip's company, near the huts which the natives had abandoned. We were fortunate enough at the ſame time to find ſome new plants, and ſhoot ſeveral little birds, different from thoſe which had hitherto fallen into our hands. In the afternoon, many of our ſailors were allowed to go on ſhore, among the natives, where they traded for curioſities, and purchaſed the embraces of the ladies, notwithſtanding the diſguſt which their uncleanlineſs inſpired. Their cuſtom of painting their cheeks with ochre and oil, was alone ſufficient to deter the more ſenſible from ſuch intimate connections with them; and if we add to this a certain ſtench which announced them even at a diſtance, and the abundance of vermin which not only in- Sunday 30.

feſted

1773. MAY. feſted their hair, but alſo crawled on their clothes, and which they occaſionally cracked between their teeth, it is aſtoniſhing that perſons ſhould be found, who could gratify an animal appetite with ſuch loathſome objects, whom a civilized education and national cuſtoms ſhould have taught them to hold in abhorrence.

——————— Unde
Hæc tetigit, Gradive, tuos urtica nepotes? JUVENAL.

Before they returned on board again, a woman ſtole a jacket belonging to one of our ſailors, and gave it to a young fellow of her own nation. The owner finding it in the young man's hands, took it from him, upon which he received ſeveral blows with the fiſt. Theſe he believed were meant in joke, but as he was advancing to the waterſide, in order to ſtep into the boat, the native threw ſeveral large ſtones at him. The ſailor was rouzed, and returning to the fellow, began to box him after the Engliſh manner, and in a few moments had given the New Zeelander a black eye, and bloody noſe; upon which the latter, to all appearance much terrified, declined the combat, and ran off.

Captain Cook, who was determined to omit nothing which might tend to the preſervation of European garden-plants in this country, prepared the ſoil, ſowed ſeeds, and tranſplanted the young plants in four or five different parts

of

of this ſound. He had cultivated a ſpot of ground on the beach of Long Iſland, another on the Hippah rock, two more on the Motu-Aro, and one of conſiderable extent at the bottom of Ship Cove, where our veſſels lay at anchor. He chiefly endeavoured to raiſe ſuch vegetables as have uſeful and nutritive roots, and among them particularly potatoes, of which we had been able to preſerve but few in a ſtate of vegetation. He had likewiſe ſown corn of ſeveral ſorts, beans, kidney-beans, and peaſe, and devoted the latter part of his ſtay in great meaſure to theſe occupations. 1773. MAY.

Early on the firſt of June ſeveral canoes full of natives came on board, whom we had not ſeen before. Their canoes were of different ſizes, and three of them had ſails, which are but ſeldom ſeen among them. The ſail conſiſted of a large triangular mat, and was fixed to a maſt, and a boom joining below in an acute angle, which could both be ſtruck with the greateſt facility. The upper edge, or broadeſt part of the ſail, had five tufts of brown feathers on its extremity. The bottom of theſe canoes conſiſted of a long hollow trunk of a tree, and the ſides were made of ſeveral boards or planks above each other, which were united by means of a number of ſtrings of the New Zeeland flax-plant, paſſed through ſmall holes, and tied very faſt. The ſeams between them are caulked with the downy or woolly ſubſtance of the reed-mace *(typha latifolia.)* Some of the ca- JUNE. Tueſday 1.

1773. JUNE. noes were double, that is, two faſtened along ſide of each other, by means of tranſverſe ſticks, laſhed on with ropes; but where that was not the caſe, they had an outrigger, or narrow piece of plank fixed parallel to one ſide of the canoe, by means of tranſverſe poles, to prevent their overſetting. All thoſe we now ſaw had not that profuſion of carving and fine workmanſhip, mentioned in captain Cook's firſt voyage, which he obſerved in the canoes of the northern iſlands; but ſeemed rather old, and worn out; they were not, however, different in the general conformation from thoſe deſcribed there, and always had the diſtorted human face at the head, the high ſtern, and the neat ſharp-pointed paddles. The people in them brought for ſale ſeveral ornaments, which were new to us, eſpecially pieces of green nephritic ſtone, cut into various forms. Some were of a flat ſhape, with a ſharp edge, and ſerved as the blades of hatchets, or adzes; ſome were formed into long pieces, which are hung into the ear; others were little chiſſels, inſerted in a wooden handle, and again others were cut out with great labour into a contorted and ſquatted figure, ſomething reſembling the carricature of a man, in which a pair of monſtrous eyes were inſerted, made of the mother of pearl of an ear-ſhell. This laſt, which they called *ê teeghee*, was worn by perſons of both ſexes, hanging on the breaſt, from a ſtring paſſed about the neck, and may perhaps relate to ſome religious matters. They ſold us an apron, made

made of their cloſe-wrought cloth, covered with red feathers, faced with white dog-ſkin, and ornamented with pieces of the ear-ſhell; which is ſaid to be worn by the women in their dances. They brought a number of their fiſh-hooks, which are of a remarkable clumſy form, made of wood, and barbed with a piece of bone, which was jagged, and which they aſſured us was human bone. Several rows of human teeth, drawn on a thread, hung on their breaſts, in the place of, or along with the *teeghee*, but they readily ſold them to us, in exchange for iron tools, or trinkets. A good many dogs were obſerved in their canoes, which they ſeemed very fond of, and kept tied with a ſtring, round their middle; they were of a rough long-haired ſort, with pricked ears, and much reſembled the common ſhepherd's cur, or count Buffon's *chien de berger* (ſee his Hiſt. Nat.) They were of different colours, ſome ſpotted, ſome quite black, and others perfectly white. The food which theſe dogs receive is fiſh, or the ſame as their maſters live on, who afterwards eat their fleſh, and employ the fur in various ornaments and dreſſes. They ſold us ſeveral of theſe animals, among which the old ones coming into our poſſeſſion, became extremely ſulky, and refuſed to take any ſuſtenance, but ſome young ones ſoon accuſtomed themſelves to our proviſions. Several of the New Zeelanders came into the veſſel, and ſome were conducted into the cabin, where they received ſome preſents; 1773. JUNE.

1774. JUNE. but none of them ſhewed that aſtoniſhment, and that degree of reflection and attention, which our old friend at Duſky Bay had manifeſted on coming aboard. Some of them were ſtrangely marked in the face with deeply excavated ſpiral lines; and one of them in particular, a tall and ſtrong man, and nearly middle-aged, had theſe marks very regular on his chin, cheeks, forehead, and noſe, ſo that his beard, which would otherwiſe have been very thick, now conſiſted only of a few ſtraggling hairs. This man's name was Tringho-Waya, and he ſeemed to have ſome authority with his people, which was more than we had hitherto obſerved among the ſmall number who had viſited us. The chief object of their commerce were ſhirts and bottles, of which laſt they were remarkably fond: perhaps becauſe they have nothing in which to keep liquids, except a minute kind of calabaſh or gourd, which grows only in the northern iſland, and was extrmely ſcarce among the people in Queen Charlotte's Sound. They were not inclined however to make diſadvantageous bargains, and demanded the beſt price for every little trifle which they offered for ſale, though they were never offended with a refuſal. Some of them being in remarkable good ſpirits, gave us a *heiva*, or dance, on the quarter-deck. They placed themſelves in a row, and parted with their ſhaggy upper garments: one of them ſung ſome words in a rude manner, and all the reſt accompanied the geſtures

he

he made, alternately extending their arms, and ſtamping with their feet in a violent and almoſt frantic manner. The laſt words which we might ſuppoſe the burden of the ſong, or a chorus, they all repeated together; and we could eaſily diſtinguiſh ſome ſort of metre in them, but were not ſure they had rhimes. The muſic was extremely rough, and of no great extent in theſe kinds of ſongs. In the evening they all went off again, and returned to the upper part of the ſound from whence they came. 1773. JUNE.

The next morning we accompanied the captains Cook and Furneaux to Eaſt Bay, and Graſs Cove, where they intended to collect a load of antiſcorbutic greens. We had not only endeavoured to leave uſeful European roots in this country, but we were likewiſe attentive to ſtock its wilds with animals, which in time might become beneficial to the natives, and to future generations of navigators. To this purpoſe captain Furneaux had already ſent a boar and two ſows to Canibal Cove, where they had been turned into the woods to range at their own pleaſure; and we now deprived ourſelves, with the ſame view, of a pair of goats, male and female, which we left in an unfrequented part of Eaſt Bay. Theſe places had been fixed upon, in hopes that our new coloniſts would there remain unmoleſted by the natives, who indeed were the only enemies they had to fear, as their inconſiderate and barbarous temper would not ſuffer them to make any reflection on the Wedneſday 2.

1773. JUNE. the advantages which future ages might reap from the propagation of ſuch a valuable race of animals. On this excurſion we ſaw a large animal in the water about Graſs Cove, which ſeemed to be a ſea-lion by its magnitude, but which we could not get a ſhot at. We had already diſcovered a ſmall ſpecies of bats in the woods, ſo that the liſt of the indigenous quadrupeds in New Zeeland was increaſed to five, including the domeſtic dog of the natives; and it is much to be doubted whether it is poſſible to add a ſixth to that number. After we had ranged the woods in different parts, collected ſeveral plants, ſhot a few birds, and taken in a great load of wild celery and ſcurvy-graſs, we returned late on board.

On the third of June, we ſent ſome boats to Long Iſland to fetch our hay on board; and having laid in a ſufficient quantity of wood and water, put the ſhip in a condition to go to ſea, and refreſhed our crews with vaſt quantities of greens, we were ready to ſail with the firſt opportunity. One of our boats in returning ſaw a large double canoe, and another in which they counted about fifty men, who immediately chaced them: but our people not being armed, hoiſted ſail, and ſoon got away from them, ſo that the New Zeelanders gave over the purſuit, and returned towards Eaſt Bay from whence they came. We can by no means pretend to aſſert that their intentions were hoſtile in any degree, but prudence naturally ſuggeſted to our people

people, not to place themſelves in the power of a ſet of uncivilized men, who follow their own caprice inſtead of laws. 1773. JUNE.

The next morning we hoiſted St. George's colours, the jack and pennant in honour of His Majeſty's birth-day, which we prepared to celebrate with the uſual feſtivities. The family of natives, whoſe name I have mentioned page 209, and who by living conſtantly in a neighbouring cove, were now intimate with us, came on board very early, and breakfaſted with us. Whilſt we were ſitting in the ſteerage, an officer acquainted the captain with the approach of a large double canoe, well manned with New Zeelanders, coming from the northward. We immediately went on deck, and ſaw the canoe about a muſket ſhot from us, containing twenty-eight men, making towards our ſloop, which from her ſize they probably took to be the commanding one. Our friends on board very earneſtly told us they would be our enemies, and perſiſted to fire at them; nay Towahanga, the head of the family jumped on the arm cheſt, which was placed on our quarter deck, and taking hold of a ſtick, made a number of warlike motions with it, and ſoon after ſpoke to them very violently, but with ſome degree of ſolemnity, at the ſame time brandiſhing, as it ſeemed in defiance, a large hatchet of green nephritic ſtone, which he had never ſhewn us before. In the mean time the canoe approached, without Friday 4.

taking

1773. JUNE. taking much notice of our friend, whom we perſuaded at laſt to be ſilent. Two people of a fine ſtature, one at the ſtern, and another about the middle of the canoe ſtood upright, while all the reſt continued ſeated. The former had a perfect black cloak of the cloſe-wrought kind, patched in compartments with dog-ſkin; he held a green plant of the New Zeeland flag in his hand, and now and then ſpoke a few words. But the other pronounced a long ſpeech well articulated, loud, and very ſolemn, and gave his voice great variety of falls and elevations. From the various tones in which he ſpoke, and a few geſtures with which he accompanied his words, he appeared by turns to queſtion, to boaſt, to threaten, to challenge, and to perſuade us; he was ſometimes running on in a moderate tone, then all at once breaking out into violent exclamations; after which he made ſhort pauſes in order to recover his breath. Having finiſhed his oration, he was invited to come on board by the captain, who came to the ſhip's ſide; he ſeemed at firſt dubious and miſtruſtful, but his natural ſpirit ſoon overcoming that diffidence, he ventured on board, and was preſently followed by all his people, who traded with the greateſt eagerneſs for our iron wares. They immediately ſaluted the family of natives on board, with the uſual application of noſes, or as our ſailors expreſſed it, they noſed each other, and paid every one of us upon the quarter-deck the ſame compliment. The

two

two ſpeakers were taken into the cabin, where we learnt the ſecond orator's name was Teiratu, and that he came from the oppoſite ſhore of the northern iſland, called Teera Whittee. They immediately enquired for Tupia (*Tupaya*), and, like thoſe mentioned p. 206, ſeemed much concerned, and pronounced ſome words in a mournful or plaintive voice on hearing of his death. So much had this man's ſuperior knowledge, and his ability to converſe in their language rendered him valuable, and beloved even among a nation in a ſtate of barbariſm. Perhaps with the capacity which Providence had allotted to him, and which had been cultivated no farther than the ſimplicity of his education would permit, he was more adapted to raiſe the New Zeelanders to a ſtate of civilization ſimilar to that of his own iſlands, than ourſelves, to whom the want of the intermediate links, which connect their narrow views to our extended ſphere of knowledge, muſt prove an obſtacle in ſuch an undertaking. 1773. JUNE.

Teiratu and all his companions were a taller race of people than we had hitherto ſeen in New Zeeland, none of them being below the middle ſize, and many above it. Their dreſs, ornaments, and arms were richer than any we had obſerved among the inhabitants of Queen Charlotte's Sound, and ſeemed to ſpeak a kind of affluence, which was entirely new to us. Among their dreſſes were ſeveral cloaks entirely lined with dog-ſkin, upon which

1773. JUNE. they ſet a high value, and which indeed gave them a very comfortable appearance in the cold weather that now began to be felt. Many of their cloaks, made of the fibres of the New Zeeland flag *(phormium)*, were new, and had elegant borders, very ſymmetrically wrought in red, black, and white; ſo that they might have paſſed for the work of a much more poliſhed nation*. The black is ſo ſtrongly fixed upon their ſtuffs, that it deſerves the attention of our manufacturers, who greatly want a laſting dye of that colour on vegetable productions; but the little progreſs we could make in their language, rendered it impoſſible to gain intelligence from them on this point. Their cloaks are ſquare pieces, of which two corners were faſtened on the breaſt by ſtrings, and ſtuck together by a bodkin of bone, whalebone, or green jadde. A belt of a ſort of cloſe matting of graſs, confined the lower extremities of their cloak to their loins, beyond which it extended at leaſt to the middle of the thigh, and ſometimes to the mid-leg. Notwithſtanding this ſuperiority over the natives of Queen Charlotte's Sound, they reſembled them perfectly in their uncleanlineſs, and ſwarms of vermin marched about in their cloaths. Their hair was dreſſed in the faſhion of the country tied on the crown, greaſed, and ſtuck with white feathers; and ſeveral of them had large combs, of ſome cetaceous animal's bone, ſtuck upright juſt

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. III.

behind

behind the bunch of hair on the head. Many of them were ſtrongly carved with ſpirals in the face; ſeveral had painted it with red ochre and oil, and were always much pleaſed when we laid ſome vermilion on their cheeks. We likewiſe ſaw ſome little calabaſhes among them, neatly carved, in which they kept ſome ſtinking oil; but whether it was animal or vegetable I could never learn. All their tools were very elegantly carved, and made with great attention. They ſold us a hatchet, of which the blade was of the fineſt green jadde, and the handle curiouſly ornamented with fretwork. They alſo brought ſome muſical inſtruments, among which was a trumpet, or tube of wood, about four feet long, and pretty ſtrait; its ſmall mouth was not above two inches, and the other not above five in diameter; it made a very uncouth kind of braying, for they always ſounded the ſame note, though a performer on the French horn might perhaps be able to bring ſome better muſic out of it. Another trumpet was made of a large whelk, *(murex tritonis,)* mounted with wood, curiouſly carved, and pierced at the point where the mouth was applied; a hideous bellowing was all the ſound that could be procured out of this inſtrument. The third went by the name of a flute among our people, and was a hollow tube, wideſt about the middle, where it had a large opening, as well as another at each end. This and the firſt trumpet were both made of

1773. JUNE.

JUNE. 1773. two hollow ſemicylinders of wood, exactly fitted and moulded together, ſo as to form a perfect tube. Their double canoe was about fifty feet long, and ſeemed to be new; both the high ſtern and the head were very curiouſly carved with fretwork and ſpiral lines, as deſcribed in Capt. Cook's former voyage. A miſhapen thing, which with ſome difficulty we perceived was meant to repreſent a human head, with a pair of eyes of mother of pearl, and a long tongue lolling out of its mouth, conſtituted the foremoſt extremity or *prora* of the canoe. This figure is the moſt common in all their ornaments, and principally in every thing that relates to warlike affairs. The cuſtom of lolling out the tongue in contempt and defiance of the enemy, ſeems to have given riſe to the frequent repreſentations of it; the figure of the tongue forms the heads of their war-canoes, it is placed on the narrow extremity of their battle-axes, and they wear it on their breaſt, tied to a ſtring round the neck; nay they carve it on their very ſcoops with which they bale the water, and on the paddles with which they manage their canoes.

Theſe people made but a very ſhort ſtay with us, for ſeeing it began to blow freſh, they all embarked and paddled over to the Motu-Aro. The captain, accompanied by ſeveral gentlemen, followed them about noon, and found ſeven canoes there hauled on ſhore, which had carried about ninety perſons to that iſland, who were all buſied making

making huts for their temporary ſhelter. Our people were received with every mark of friendſhip, and the captain diſtributed many preſents to them. Among theſe was a number of braſs medals, gilt, about one inch and three quarters in diameter, which had been ſtruck on purpoſe to be left as a memorial of this voyage among the nations we ſhould meet with: on one ſide was the head of his preſent majeſty, with the inſcription, GEORGE III. KING OF GREAT BRITAIN, FRANCE, AND IRELAND, &c. On the reverſe, the repreſentation of two men of war, with the names RESOLUTION and ADVENTURE over them; and the exergue SAILED FROM ENGLAND MARCH MDCCLXXII *. Some of theſe medals had already been given to the natives of Duſky Bay, and thoſe of Queen Charlotte's Sound. In exchange for iron, cloth, and beads, our people collected a great number of arms, tools, dreſſes, and ornaments, as curioſities among them, they having greater quantities of theſe things than any New Zeelanders we had ſeen. The captain and his company perceived that Teiratu ſeemed to be the principal or chief among them, by a certain degree of regard which the reſt paid to him: they could not, however, determine any thing with preciſion on this ſubject. Reſpect is always paid to the old men among them, who may be ſuppoſed to owe their conſequence to the long experience they have gained. But their

1773. JUNE.

* It was originally intended that the ſloops ſhould ſail ſo early as March.

chiefs,

1773. JUNE. chiefs, ſuch as we believed this Teiratu to be, are ſtrong, active, young men, in the prime and flower of their age. Theſe are perhaps elected, as among the North American ſavages; being men of avowed courage, ſtrength, and military ſagacity; from a conſciouſneſs that a body of men, in caſe of war, neceſſarily requires a leader to animate them as a ſoul, and upon whoſe ſuperior talents they may confidently place all their hopes. The more we conſider the warlike diſpoſition of the New Zeelanders, and the numerous ſmall parties into which they are divided, this form of government will appear indiſpenſible; for it muſt be evident to them that the qualifications of a chief are not to be inherited, or propagated from father to ſon; and it is likewiſe probable, that this free people may have had opportunities of making the obvious reflection, that hereditary government has a natural tendency towards deſpotiſm.

Captain Cook, apprehenſive leſt the natives ſhould find our garden and deſtroy it, not knowing for what purpoſe it was intended, conducted Teiratu thither, and ſhewed him every plant in it, eſpecially the potatoes. He expreſſed a great liking to the laſt, and ſeemed to know them very well, evidently becauſe a ſimilar root, the Virginian or ſweet potatoe, *(convolvulus batatas,)* is planted in ſome parts of the Northern Iſland, from whence he came. The captain parted from him, after obtaining the promiſe

that

that he would not deſtroy his plantations, but leave every thing to grow up and propagate, and returned aboard the Reſolution, where the marines fired three vollies, and our crews gave three heerty cheers in token of affection to their king. 1773. JUNE.

The wind freſhened conſiderably after noon, and continued to blow very hard for two days following, ſo that we were obliged to lie at anchor till the 7th in the morning, when we weighed and ſailed out of Ship Cove, in company with the Adventure. Our ſtay here had proved ſo beneficial to our crews, that they might now be ſaid to be to the full as healthy as when they left England; and we had only a ſingle ſick man, a marine, on board our ſloop, who had laboured under a conſumption and dropſy ever ſince we had left England. Monday 7.

CHAP.

1773. JUNE.

CHAP. VII.

Run from New Zeeland to O-Taheitee.

WE entered Cook's Strait after noon, and ſtanding down to the ſouthward, beheld the immenſe ocean before us, which goes by the name of the South Sea. This vaſt expanſe of ſea, through which many former navigators had paſſed, in the happy climate of the torrid zone, but whoſe middle latitudes no European veſſel, except the Endeavour bark, had hitherto attempted to explore, has always been believed to contain a large tract of land, diſtinguiſhed by geographers with the name of a Southern Continent. Previous to the Endeavour's voyage, New Zeeland was thought the weſtern coaſt of this unknown land, and certain pretended diſcoveries near America were aſſerted as its eaſtern ſhores. Captain Cook in that voyage having cut off both theſe by his courſe, and even penetrated to 40 degrees of ſouth latitude without finding land, the ſouthern continent was reſtrained within narrower limits, though theſe were ſtill conſiderable enough to engage the attention of future navigators. We were now to enter on this unexplored part, and running to the eaſtward between the 50th and 40th degrees of ſouth latitude, to ſearch for undiſcovered countries in the depth of winter.

winter. Many among our fellow-voyagers proceeded on this dangerous expedition in the firm belief that we ſhould ſpeedily find the coaſts we went in queſt of, whoſe novelty and valuable productions would amply reward our perſeverance and fatigues. But captain Cook, and ſeveral others, judging from what had been done in the former voyage, and what they had already experienced on this, were far from expecting to diſcover new lands, and greatly doubted the exiſtence of a ſouthern continent. 1773. JUNE.

We were ſtill in the mouth of the ſtrait at eight the next morning, and ſaw the high mountains of the ſouthern iſle loaded with ſnow, from whence they had their name, whilſt the weather below was clear and mild, our thermometer being about 51° in the ſhade. Great ſhoals of cetaceous fiſh, of a perfectly black colour, with a white ſpot before the back-fin, paſſed by us. They were fired at from our veſſel, and one of them being ſhot through the head, could no longer plunge under water, but began to beat about furiouſly on the ſurface, and tinged the ſea with its blood. It ſeemed to be about three yards long, and was ſlender and blunt-headed, from whence our ſailors called it the bottle-noſe, a name which Dale applies to a very different fiſh, the beaked whale, of which the beak or noſe reſembles the neck of a bottle *. We went at the Tueſday 8.

* See Pennant's Britiſh Zoology.

1773. JUNE. rate of three knots and a half at this time, ſo that it was not thought proper to bring to, for the ſake of taking up the dead fiſh.

Wedneſday 9. An infinite number of albatroſſes, of all the three ſpecies, hovered about us, after we were out of ſight of the land. The common or large ſort were of diverſe colours, which we believed to differ according to age, and that the oldeſt were almoſt wholly white, thoſe next them ſomewhat more ſprinkled with brown, and the youngeſt quite brown. Some of our ſailors, who had formerly ſailed on board of Eaſt-India ſhips, after comparing the facility of thoſe voyages to the hardſhips of the preſent, propagated the ludicrous idea among their meſſmates, that theſe birds contained the departed ſouls of old India captains; who now, exiled to a part of the ocean which they ſhunned before, were forced to gather a precarious ſubſiſtence inſtead of enjoying their former affluence, and were made the ſport of ſtorms which they had never felt in their cabbins. This ſtroke, which may paſs for witty enough, confirms what I have before obſerved of the original humour of ſea-faring men.

The officers, who could not yet reliſh their ſalt proviſions, after the refreſhments of New Zeeland, had ordered their black dog, mentioned p. 135, to be killed, and ſent the captain one half of it; this day therefore we dined for the firſt time on a leg of it roaſted, which taſted ſo exactly like mutton, that it was abſolutely undiſtinguiſhable. In

our

our cold countries where animal food is ſo much uſed, and where to be carnivorous perhaps lies in the nature of men, or is indiſpenſibly neceſſary to the preſervation of their health and ſtrength, it is ſtrange that there ſhould exiſt a Jewiſh averſion to dogs-fleſh, when hogs, the moſt uncleanly of all animals are eaten without ſcruple. Nature ſeems expreſsly to have intended them for this uſe, by making their offspring ſo very numerous, and their encreaſe ſo quick and frequent. It may be objected, that the exalted degree of inſtinct, which we obſerve in our dogs, inſpires us with great unwillingneſs to kill and eat them. But it is owing to the time we ſpend on the education of dogs, that they acquire thoſe eminent qualities which attach them ſo much to us. The natural qualities of our dogs may receive a wonderful improvement, but education muſt give its aſſiſtance, without which the human mind itſelf, though capable of an immenſe expanſion, remains in a very contracted ſtate. In New Zeeland, and (according to former accounts of voyages) in the tropical iſles of the South Sea, the dogs are the moſt ſtupid, dull animals imaginable, and do not ſeem to have the leaſt advantage in point of ſagacity over our ſheep, which are commonly made the emblems of ſillineſs. In the former country they are fed upon fiſh, in the latter on vegetables, and both theſe diets may have ſerved to alter their diſpoſition. Education may perhaps likewiſe graft new

1773. JUNE.

1773. JUNE. inſtincts; the New Zeeland dogs are fed on the remains of their maſters' meals; they eat the bones of other dogs, and the puppies become true cannibals from their birth. We had a young New Zeeland puppy on board, which had certainly had no opportunity of taſting any thing but the mother's milk before we purchaſed it; however it eagerly devoured a portion of the fleſh and bones of the dog, on which we dined to-day; while ſeveral others of the European breed taken on board at the Cape, turned from it without touching it.

Wedneſd. 16. We kept ſtanding to the ſouth-eaſtward till the 16th at noon, attended by numerous birds of the petrel and albatroſs kind, together with now and then a ſkua, or Port-Egmont hen. Beds of ſea-weeds frequently were ſeen floating on the ſea, but we were now too much accuſtomed to their appearance, to attempt to draw any concluſions from it. The thermometer, which at our departure from New Zeeland, ſtood at 51° at eight o'clock in the morning, ſunk in proportion as we came to the ſouthward to 48°, and ſometimes to 47° at the ſame time of day; but the temperature of the air upon the whole was extremely variable, and the weather equally unſettled. From thence it aroſe, that we daily obſerved rainbows, or parts of them about the horizon, eſpecially in the morning. The wind during this time was likewiſe very changeable, and veered round the compaſs in a direction contrary to the courſe

of

of the ſun, that is, from weſt round by the north towards eaſt, and ſo further on; but it chiefly prevailed from the eaſterly quarter, where we leaſt expected it, ſo that our ſituation became tedious, and was made more irkſome by frequent fogs, rains, and heavy ſwells. Having reached the latitude of 46° 17′ ſouth, we directed our courſe to the north-eaſtward, as much as the wind would permit. 1773. JUNE.

On the 23d, the weather being mild and the wind very moderate, captain Furneaux came on board, and dined with us. He acquainted captain Cook, that all his people continued in good health, except one or two, who were infected with a nauſeous diſeaſe, which is propagated by connections with the other ſex. This information gave us great uneaſineſs, it being evident that the diſtemper had already reached New Zeeland, ſince our men muſt have received it there. Struck with the horrid conſequences which this evil would entail on the New Zeelanders, we recapitulated the opportunities which thoſe people had of catching the infection from Europeans. The firſt diſcoverer of this country, in 1642, Abel Janſſen Taſman, had not the leaſt amicable intercourſe with the inhabitants, and none of his people appear to have been aſhore upon it. Captain Cook, the next navigator, who viſited it in the Endeavour Bark, 1769 and 1770, came from O-Taheitee and the Society Iſles, where ſeveral of his people had contracted venereal complaints. However, as his paſſage laſted Wednesd. 23.

nearly

1773. JUNE. nearly two months, the ſurgeon reported, when they made the coaſt, that no man had any ſymptoms of the diſtemper about him. Notwithſtanding this aſſurance captain Cook had the precaution, not to ſuffer any perſon to go on ſhore, who had been under cure, and might be ſuſpected to have ſome latent remains of this infectious evil; and to preclude the poſſibility of communicating it to a guiltleſs people, he never ſuffered the women to come on board. M. de Surville, a French navigator, ſailed from Pondichery in the St. Jean Baptiſte, paſſed through the Straits of Malacca, touched at the Baſhee Iſles, went round Manila, ſaw land to the S. E. of New Britain, about the latitude of $10\frac{3}{4}^{\circ}$, and longitude 158° eaſt, which he called Port Surville; touched at New Zeeland, and proceeded to Callao, in South America, in order to trade there: but being drowned in the landing, and all his letters of recommendation being loſt with him, the ſhip was detained near two years, and then ſent to France, with all her merchandize. M. de Surville lay in Doubtleſs Bay, on the 9th of December, 1769, and ſaw the Endeavour ſtanding paſt him, though captain Cook could not ſee his veſſel, which lay under the land. What ſtay M. de Surville made there, and upon what terms he was with the natives, I know not; but the diſtance between this place and Queen Charlotte's Sound, and the want of intercourſe between the inhabitants of both ports, make it improbable, even ſuppoſing the complaint to have exiſted among

among his crew, that it could have reached ſo far ſouth. 1773. JUNE.

The ſame thing may be ſaid with regard to M. de Marion and captain Crozet, two French officers, whoſe expedition, in 1772, I have mentioned page 112; for the communications which their crews had with the natives, was confined to the environs of the Bay of Iſlands, in the northernmoſt part of the northern iſle. Our two ſloops were the next in order, which touched at New Zeeland; but we had not the leaſt reaſon to ſuppoſe, that they carried any venereal complaint to that country. They had left the Cape of Good Hope, the laſt place where it is poſſible the ſailors might contract this diſorder, ſix months before they came to Queen Charlotte's Sound, five of which they had been at ſea; an interval in which a radical cure may be expected, unleſs the diſeaſe be of too inveterate a nature. However, they were far from having any patients of this ſort on board, and it is not likely that the poiſon could lay dormant during that long interval of time, in a ſet of men who had no other than ſalt proviſions to live upon, and ſpirituous liquors to drink, and who were expoſed to wet and cold, and all the rigours of ſouthern climates. We therefore concluded, that from all the concurring circumſtances, the venereal diſeaſe was indigenous in New Zeeland, and not imported by Europeans; and we have hitherto had no reaſon to alter our opinion on this ſubject. But if, in ſpite of appearances, our concluſions ſhould prove erroneous, it is another

1773. JUNE. another crime added to the ſcore of civilized nations, which muſt make their memory execrated by the unhappy people, whom they have poiſoned. Nothing can in the leaſt atone for the injury they have done to ſociety, ſince the price at which their libidinous enjoyments were purchaſed, inſtils another poiſon into the mind, and deſtroys the moral principles, while the diſeaſe corrupts and enervates the body. (ſee pag. 212.) A race of men, who amidſt all their ſavage roughneſs, their fiery temper, and cruel cuſtoms, are brave, generous, hoſpitable, and incapable of deceiving, are juſtly to be pitied, that love, the ſource of their ſweeteſt and happieſt feelings, is converted into the origin of the moſt dreadful ſcourge of life.

JULY. The wind ſtill continued as changeable as before, till the beginning of July, having veered all round the compaſs againſt the ſun, more than four times. During this ſpace albatroſſes, petrels, and ſea-weeds, were frequently ſeen; rainbows alſo appeared almoſt every morning, nay one night we obſerved this phænomenon pretty ſtrong, cauſed by the refracted light of the moon.

Friday 9. On the 9th of July we were nearly in the ſame longitude, where captain Cook, in the Endeavour, had reached 40° 22′ ſouth *, but our latitude was about two degrees and a quarter more ſoutherly. Here we loſt a young he-

* See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. II. p. 282.

goat,

goat, which fell over board, and notwithſtanding all poſſible means were tried for his recovery, ſuch as chafing, injecting clyſters of the fumes of tobacco, &c. our endeavours proved entirely ineffectual. 1773. JULY.

July 17th, having paſt the longitude of 227° eaſt, and being in about 40° ſouth latitude, we began to run due north, after a very tedious courſe in ſearch of the ſouthern continent, the exiſtence of which, in the latitudes we had now paſſed through, had been poſitively aſſerted. The uncomfortable ſeaſon of the year, the many contrary winds, and the total want of intereſting incidents united to make this run extremely tedious to us all, and the only point we had gained by it, was the certainty that no great land was ſituated in the South Sea about the middle latitudes. In five days time our latitude being 31° ſouth, we began to loſe ſight of albatroſſes and petrels, and the thermometer was riſen to 61½, ſo that we began to change our winter clothes for others, conſiderably thinner, for the firſt time after leaving the Cape of Good Hope. The ſpirits of all our people were much exhilarated in proportion as we approached to the tropics, and our ſailors diverted themſelves with a variety of plays every evening. The genial mildneſs of the air was ſo welcome to us, after a long abſence from it, that we could not help preferring the warm climates as the beſt adapted for the abode of mankind. We ſaw a tropic bird on the 25th in the afternoon, a ſure ſign that we were arrived into the tem- Saturday 17. Sunday 25.

1773. JULY. perate climates below 30° of latitude. The ſetting ſun illumined the clouds with the moſt brilliant tints of gold, which confirmed us in the opinion that the colours of the ſky are no where ſo rich and beautiful as between or near the tropics.

Wedneſd. 28. On the 28th we ſpoke with the Adventure, and heard that they had buried their cook three days ago, and that about twenty of her people were very ill of the ſcurvy. This was the more ſurpriſing to us, as we had but very few people affected with any ſymptoms of that diſorder, and only one who was dangerouſly ſick. The next day captain Cook ſent one of his ſeamen with a warrant to act as cook on board the Adventure; and ſeveral of our gentlemen took the opportunity of going to dine with their friends. They found captain Furneaux and ſome others very ill of a rheumatic complaint, and many of the people had fluxes. Their carpenter was remarkable ill of the ſcurvy, and had great livid blotches on his legs. This difference between the ſalubrity of the two veſſels probably aroſe from the want of freſh air in the Adventure, our ſloop being higher out of the water, ſo that we could open more ſcuttles in bad weather than our conſort. Our people likewiſe made a greater conſumption of ſour-krout and wort, and particularly applied the grains of the latter to all blotches and ſwelled parts, a regimen which had been omitted by thoſe in the Adventure. On this occaſion it is not improper to remark, that the ſcurvy is more dangerous

and

and virulent in warm climates than in cold. As long as we had kept in high latitudes it did not make its appearance, or was at leaſt confined to a few individuals, who were naturally of a bad habit of body; but we had ſcarcely had ten days of warm weather when one man died, and a number of others were affected with the worſt ſymptoms of this dreadful diſtemper, on board the Adventure. It ſhould therefore ſeem that the heat contributes to inflammation and putrefaction; and its general effect, even among thoſe who had no dangerous ſcorbutic complaints, was a great degree of languor and debility. 1773. AUGUST.

On the 4th of Auguſt a young bitch, of the terrier breed, taken on board at the Cape of Good Hope, and covered by a ſpaniel, brought ten young ones, one of which was dead. The New Zeeland dog, mentioned above, which devoured the bones of the roaſted dog, now fell upon the dead puppy, and ate of it with a ravenous appetite. This is a proof how far education may go in producing and propagating new inſtincts in animals. European dogs are never fed on the meat of their own ſpecies, but rather ſeem to abhor it. The New Zeeland dogs, in all likelihood, are trained up from their earlieſt age to eat the remains of their maſter's meals; they are therefore uſed to feed upon fiſh, their own ſpecies, and perhaps human fleſh; and what was only owing to habit at firſt, may have become inſtinct by length of time. This was Wedneſday 4.

1773. AUGUST. remarkable in our canibal-dog, for he came on board ſo young, that he could not have been weaned long enough to acquire a habit of devouring his own ſpecies, and much leſs of eating human fleſh; however, one of our ſeamen having cut his finger, held it out to the dog, who fell to greedily, licked it, and then began to bite into it.

On the 6th, in the afternoon, being in about 19½ deg. of ſouth latitude, we got the eaſterly trade-wind, which ſet in freſh after ſeveral calms, attended with heavy ſhowers of rain. The ſun being at this time ſtill in the oppoſite hemiſphere, was probably the cauſe of our meeting with this wind ſo much later than uſual, the tropics being generally reckoned its limits. Agreeable to the obſervation which we now made, we had found the trade-wind, in Auguſt 1772, at Madeira, though that iſland is ſituated in 33° of north latitude. But the moſt remarkable occurence in our run was the nature of the winds previous to our obtaining the trade-wind. We had expected that, by going in a middle latitude between 50 and 40 deg. ſouth, we ſhould meet with regular weſterly winds, which are common in our ſeas during the winter months; inſtead of this we found them veering round the compaſs in two or three days time, never ſettling in any other than the eaſtern quarter, and ſometimes blowing with great violence. Thus the name of Pacific Ocean, which has formerly been given to the whole South Sea, is, in my opinion, applicable

ble only to a part of it between the tropics, where the winds are ſteady and uniform, the weather in general fair and mild, and the ſea not ſo much agitated as in higher latitudes. 1773. AUGUST.

Albecores, bonitos, and dolphins gave chace to many ſhoals of flying-fiſh, in the ſame manner as we had obſerved them in the Atlantic; while ſeveral large black-birds, with long wings and forked tails, which are commonly called men of war *(pelecanus aquilus*, Linn.) ſoared at a vaſt height in the air, and ſometimes deſcending into a lower region, viewed a fiſh ſwimming under them, and darted down with amazing velocity, never failing to ſtrike the fiſh with their bill. It is a well known fact, that gannets, which are birds of the ſame genus in the Engliſh ſeas, catch fiſh in a ſimilar manner. The fiſhermen on the coaſt frequently fix a pilchard or herring on the point of a knife faſtened to a floating board, and the bird darting down upon it transfixes itſelf on the knife.

On the 11th, in the morning, we diſcovered a low iſland to the ſouthward of us, which ſeemed about four miles long, and about ſix miles diſtant. It appeared to be almoſt level with the ſea, only ſome groups of trees roſe above the horizon, and among them a few cocoa-nut palms out-topped the reſt. To people in our ſituation, exhauſted with a tedious paſſage, the bare ſight of land was ſufficient to give ſome conſolation, though we could not

expect

1773. AUGUST. expect to reap any benefit from its productions; and therefore this iſland, though diveſted of every thing ſtrikingly beautiful, yet pleaſed the eye by the ſimplicity of its form. Our thermometer was now conſtantly between 70 and 80 degrees in the morning; but the heat was far from being troubleſome, as the fair weather was accompanied by a ſtrong pleaſant trade-wind, and our awnings were ſpread over the quarter-deck. This iſland, which was called RESOLUTION Iſland, ſeems to have been ſeen by M. de Bougainville. Its latitude is 17° 24′ ſouth, and its longitude 141° 39′ weſt from Greenwich. Our obſervation at noon was 17° 17′ ſouth, our courſe being nearly eaſt. In the evening, at half paſt ſix o'clock, we ſaw another iſland of the ſame nature as the preceding, about four leagues diſtant, which was named DOUBTFUL Iſland. It being after ſun-ſet, we ſtood to the northward till we had paſſed by it. The next morning, before day-break, we were alarmed by the ſudden appearance of breakers within half a mile a-head of us. We changed our courſe inſtantly, apprized our conſort of the danger by proper ſignals, and then ſtood along the reef. As ſoon as it was light we diſtinguiſhed an iſland of a circular form, including a large baſon or lagoon of ſea-water; the northern ſhores were covered with trees and palms in various cluſters, which had a very elegant appearance; but all the reſt was a narrow ledge of rocks, over which the ſurf beat

Thurſday 12.

with

with great violence; within it the lagoon was ſhallow near us, but deeper under the wooded part; a difference which could eaſily be diſtinguiſhed by the whiter or the bluer colour of the water. Captain Cook gave this iſle the name of FURNEAUX Iſland; it is ſituated in 17° 5′ ſouth latitude, and 143° 16′ weſt longitude. Standing along this reef we ſaw a canoe ſailing near the northern part of the iſle, and by the help of glaſſes we obſerved ſix or ſeven men in it, one of which was placed at the ſtern ſteering with a paddle. They did not ſeem to have embarked in order to reconnoitre us, as they did not approach the ſouthern reef, but kept cloſe in with the wooded part of the iſland. We proceeded all day with a favourable breeze and fair weather till ſun-ſet; but the navigation between theſe low iſlands and reefs being extremely dangerous, becauſe they can only be ſeen at ſhort diſtances, we were obliged to bring to at night in order to avoid meeting with them unawares. Early the next morning we left another iſland of this kind on our ſtarboard quarter, which was called ADVENTURE Iſland; it lies in 17° 4′ ſouth latitude, and 144° 30′ weſt longitude. We ſpoke with the Adventure about the ſame time, and were told ſhe had above thirty men on the ſick liſt, moſt of them ill of the ſcurvy. Our ſloop ſtill kept rather free of this diſtemper, and every precaution was taken to preſerve our crew in health by a plentiful uſe of ſour-krout, by airing the hammocks

1773. AUGUST. Friday 13.

1773. AUGUST. hammocks every day, and frequently ſmoaking the ſhip with gunpowder and vinegar.

In the afternoon we ſaw an iſland right a-head, conſiſting of ſeveral clumps of trees, united by one reef, and from its ſituation we judged it was the ſame which Captain Cook named Chain Iſland in his former voyage *. To prevent loſing our time by bringing the ſloops to at night, we hoiſted a boat out, and ſent it to ſail ahead of our veſſels, with a light, and to make ſignals in caſe of danger. The South Sea between the tropics contains many low iſlands, ſingularly conſtructed, which are level with the ſea in moſt places, and at the utmoſt a yard or two above it. They have frequently a circular form, including a lagoon or baſon of ſea-water in their centre, and the depth of the ſea all round them is unfathomable, the rocks riſing perpendicularly from the bottom. Their productions muſt be few, and cocoa nut-trees are probably the moſt uſeful which they contain; but notwithſtanding this circumſtance and their ſmall ſize, many of them are inhabited. The queſtion how ſuch little ſpots came to be peopled is not eaſily to be anſwered; but it is not eaſier to determine how the higher iſlands in the South Sea have acquired their inhabitants. Commodore (now Admiral) Byron, and Captain Wallis, who ſent ſome of their people on ſhore upon theſe low iſlands, found their inhabitants ſhy and jealous of

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 77.

ſtrangers;

ſtrangers; a diſpoſition which is perhaps owing to the difficulty of preſerving their exiſtence from the ſcanty proviſions on their narrow circle, and which may be heightened by the conſciouſneſs that their ſmall numbers render them liable to oppreſſion. The language of theſe people, and their cuſtoms, are therefore ſtill unknown, and theſe are the only circumſtances from which the origin of nations, who have no records among them, can be traced. 1773. AUGUST.

Early on the 15th of Auguſt we ſaw a high peak with a flattiſh ſummit, firſt diſcovered by Captain Wallis, who called it Oſnabruck Iſland, and afterwards by M. de Bougainville, in whoſe chart it has the names of Pic de la Boudeuſe, or le Boudoir. The mountain appeared of a conſiderable height, and its top was broken or excavated perfectly like the crater of a volcano, which ſeemed evidently to have exiſted here. The iſland was nearly of a circular form, and the mountain roſe ſteep to a conical ſhape from all parts of the ſea-ſhore, there being but little level land round its foot. The whole mountain was green, and the bottom or low land was covered with trees. While we eagerly feaſted our eyes with this pleaſing proſpect, one of our officers, who had formerly been ſent cloſe in ſhore there by Captain Wallis, told us that the trees were of the kind which bear the bread-fruit, ſo much extolled in the voyages of Anſon, Byron, Wallis, and Cook. He acquainted us at the ſame time, that the natives were of the

1773. AUGUST. race as thoſe who dwell on O-Taheitee and the Society Iſles, of which the firſt is within half a day's ſail; and that they give the name of *Maâtea** to their own iſland. We never came nearer than four leagues to it, which was probably the reaſon that no canoes came off to viſit us. Having very little wind we hoiſted a boat out, which went on board the Adventure, and brought Captain Furneaux to dine with us. We had the pleaſure to learn from him, that the flux among his crew was ceaſed, and that none of his people were in any imminent danger from the ſcurvy; we hoped therefore, from our vicinity to O-Taheitee, to have a ſpeedy opportunity of reſtoring their health by a wholeſome vegetable diet.

In the evening, about ſun-ſet, we plainly ſaw the mountains of that deſirable iſland, lying before us, half emerging from the gilded clouds on the horizon. Every man on board, except one or two who were not able to walk, haſtened eagerly to the forecaſtle to feaſt their eyes on an object, of which they were taught to form the higheſt expectations, both in reſpect of the abundance of refreſhments, and of the kind and generous temper of the natives, whoſe character has pleaſed all the navigators who have viſited them. The firſt diſcoverer was probably a Spaniard, PEDRO FERNANDEZ DE QUIROS, who ſailed from Lima in Peru, on the 21ſt of December 1605. He made

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 78. Maitea,

an

an iſland on the 10th of February 1606, calling it *la Sagittaria* *, which, from all the concurring circumſtances, ſeems to have been O-Taheitee. He found no harbours on the ſouth part, where he fell in with it; but the people he ſent aſhore were treated with the greated marks of friendſhip and kindneſs. Captain Wallis next found this iſland on the 18th of June 1767, and called it George the Third's Iſland. Some unhappy miſunderſtanding ariſing between him and the natives at firſt, he fired upon them, killed about fifteen, and wounded a great number; but theſe good tempered people, forgetting the great loſs they had ſuſtained, and the wounds their brethren had received, made peace with him ſoon after, and furniſhed him with a profuſion of refreſhments, conſiſting of ſeveral roots, many ſorts of rich fruit, fowls, and hogs. M. de Bougainville arrived in the eaſtern part on the 2d of April 1768, or about nine months and a half after the departure of Captain Wallis, and diſcovered the true indigenous name of this iſland; ſenſible of the amiable character of the inhabitants, he ſtaid ten days among them, giving and receiving frequent marks of friendſhip and regard. Captain Cook, in the Endeavour, arriving here in April 1769, to obſerve the tranſit of Venus, circumnavigated the whole iſland in a boat; and, during a ſtay of three months, had 1773. AUGUST.

* See an Hiſtorical Collection of the ſeveral Voyages and Diſcoveries in the South Pacific Ocean, by Alexander Dalrymple, Eſq. vol. I. p. 109 to 117.

1773. AUGUST. daily opportunities of confirming the obſervations already made upon this ſubject.

We ſtood on towards this iſland all night, and the favourable ideas which were raiſed by the accounts of former navigators, made us paſs ſome happy hours in expectation of the morning. We reſolved to forget our fatigues and the inclemencies of ſouthern climates; the clouds which had hitherto hung lowering upon our brows were diſperſed; the loathed images of diſeaſe and the terrors of death were fled, and all our cares at reſt.

——— Somno poſiti ſub nocte ſilenti
Lenibant curas, et corda oblita laborum. VIRGIL.

CHAP.

1773. AUGUST.

CHAP. VIII.

Anchorage in O-Aitepeha harbour, on the leſſer peninſula of O-Taheitee.—Account of our ſtay there.—Removal to Matavai Bay.

Devenere locos lætos et amœna vireta
Fortunatorum nemorum, ſedeſque beatas.
Largior hic campos æther, et lumine veſtit
Purpureo. VIRGIL.

IT was one of thoſe beautiful mornings which the poets of all nations have attempted to deſcribe, when we ſaw the iſle of O-Taheite, within two miles before us. The eaſt-wind which had carried us ſo far, was entirely vaniſhed, and a faint breeze only wafted a delicious perfume from the land, and curled the ſurface of the ſea. The mountains, clothed with foreſts, roſe majeſtic in various ſpiry forms, on which we already perceived the light of the riſing ſun: nearer to the eye a lower range of hills, eaſier of aſcent, appeared, wooded like the former, and coloured with ſeveral pleaſing hues of green, ſoberly mixed with autumnal browns. At their foot lay the plain, crowned with its fertile bread-fruit trees, over which roſe innumerable palms, the princes of the grove. Here every thing ſeemed as yet aſleep, the morning ſcarce dawned, and a peaceful ſhade ſtill reſted on the landſcape. We diſcerned however, a number of houſes among the trees, and many canoes hauled Monday 12.

1773. AUGUST. hauled up along the ſandy beaches. About half a mile from the ſhore a ledge of rocks level with the water, extended parallel to the land, on which the ſurf broke, leaving a ſmooth and ſecure harbour within. The ſun beginning to illuminate the plain, its inhabitants aroſe, and enlivened the ſcene. Having perceived the large veſſels on their coaſt, ſeveral of them haſtened to the beach, launched their canoes, and paddled towards us, who were highly delighted in watching all their occupations.

The canoes ſoon paſſed through the openings in the reef, and one of them approached within hale. In it were two men almoſt naked, with a kind of turban on the head, and a ſaſh round their waiſt. They waved a large green leaf, and accoſted us with the repeated exclamation of *tayo* * ! which even without the help of vocabularies, we could eaſily tranſlate into the expreſſion of proffered friendſhip. The canoe now came under our ſtern, and we let down a preſent of beads, nails, and medals to the men. In return, they handed up to us a green ſtem of a plantane, which was their ſymbol of peace, with a deſire that it might be fixed in a conſpicuous part of the veſſel. It was accordingly ſtuck up in the main ſhrouds, upon which our new friends immediately returned towards the land. In a ſhort time we ſaw great crouds of people on the ſea-ſhore gazing at us, while numbers in conſequence of this

* See Bougainville's Voyage, Engliſh Edition, p. 217.

treaty

treaty of peace, which was now firmly eſtabliſhed, launched their canoes, and loaded them with various productions of their country. In leſs than an hour we were ſurrounded by an hundred canoes, each of which carried one, two, three, and ſometimes four perſons, who placed a perfect confidence in us, and had no arms whatſoever. The welcome ſound of *tayo* reſounded on all ſides, and we returned it with a degree of heart-felt pleaſure, on this favourable change of our ſituation. Coco-nuts, and plantanes in great quantity, bread-fruit and ſeveral other vegetables, beſides ſome freſh fiſh were offered to us, and eagerly exchanged for tranſparent beads, and ſmall nails. Pieces of cloth, fiſh-hooks, hatchets of ſtone, and a number of tools, were likewiſe brought for ſale and readily diſpoſed of; and many canoes kept plying between us and the ſhore, exhibiting a picture of a new kind of fair. I immediately began to trade for natural productions through the cabin-windows, and in half an hour had got together two or three ſpecies of unknown birds, and a great number of new fiſhes, whoſe colours while alive were exquiſitely beautiful. I therefore employed the morning in ſketching their outlines, and laying on the vivid hues, before they diſappeared in the dying objects. 1773. AUGUST.

The people around us had mild features, and a pleaſing countenance; they were about our ſize, of a pale mahogany brown, had fine black hair and eyes, and wore a piece of cloth round

1773. AUGUST. round their middle of their own manufacture, and another wrapped about the head in various picturesque shapes like a turban. Among them were several females, pretty enough to attract the attention of Europeans, who had not seen their own country-women for twelve long months past. These wore a piece of cloth with a hole in the middle, through which they had passed the head, so that one part of the garment hung down behind, and the other before, to the knees; a fine white cloth like a muslin, was passed over this in various elegant turns round the body, a little below the breast, forming a kind of tunic, of which one turn sometimes fell gracefully across the shoulder. If this dress had not entirely that perfect form, so justly admired in the draperies of the ancient Greek statues, it was however infinitely superior to our expectations, and much more advantageous to the human figure, than any modern fashion we had hitherto seen. Both sexes were adorned, or rather disfigured, by those singular black stains, occasioned by puncturing the skin, and rubbing a black colour into the wounds, which are mentioned by former voyagers. They were particularly visible on the loins of the common men, who went almost naked, and exhibited a proof how little the ideas of ornament of different nations agree, and yet how generally they all have adopted such aids to their personal perfection. It was not long before some of these good people came aboard. That peculiar gentleness of disposition

diſpoſition, which is their general characteriſtic, immediately manifeſted itſelf in all their looks and actions, and gave full employment to thoſe, who made the human heart their ſtudy. They expreſſed ſeveral marks of affection in their countenance, took hold of our hands, leaned on our ſhoulder, or embraced us. They admired the whiteneſs of our bodies, and frequently puſhed aſide our clothes from the breaſt, as if to convince themſelves that we were made like them. 1773. AUGUST.

Many of them ſeeing us deſirous of learning their language, by aſking the names of various familiar objects, or repeating ſuch as we found in the vocabularies of former voyagers, took great pains to teach us, and were much delighted when we could catch the juſt pronunciation of a word. For my own part, no language ſeemed eaſier to acquire than this; every harſh and ſibilant conſonant being baniſhed from it, and almoſt every word ending in a vowel. The only requiſite, was a nice ear to diſtinguiſh the numerous modification of their vowels, which muſt naturally occur in a language confined to few conſonants, and which, once rightly underſtood, give a great degree of delicacy to converſation. Amongſt ſeveral other obſervations, we immediately found that the O or E with which the greateſt part of the names and words in lieutenant Cook's firſt voyage, begin, is nothing elſe than the article, which many eaſtern languages affix to the greater part of their

1773. AUGUST. ſubſtantives. In conſequence of this remark, I ſhall always in the ſequel either omit this prefix, or ſeparate it from the word itſelf by a hyphen: and I cannot help taking notice that M. de Bougainville has been fortunate enough to catch the name of the iſland without the additional O, and expreſſed it as well as the nature of the French language will permit, by Taïti, which, with the addition of a ſlight aſpirate, we pronounce Taheïtee, or Tahitee.

Seeing an opening in the reef before us, which was the entrance to the harbour of Whaï-Urua, in the leſſer peninſula of O-Taheitee, we ſent a boat to ſound in it, which found convenient anchorage. The boat afterwards proceeded to the ſhore, where a croud of the natives gathered round it, and we heard the ſqueaking of pigs, which was at this time a more welcome ſound to us, than the muſic of the moſt brilliant performer. Our people, however, were not ſo fortunate as to purchaſe any of them, all their offers being conſtantly refuſed, under the pretext that theſe animals belonged to the *aree*, or king.

A canoe now came alongſide, of a ſomewhat larger ſize than the reſt, and brought a handſome man, above ſix feet high, and three women, who all came on board. The man who immediately informed us, that his name was O-Taï, ſeemed to be a perſon of ſome conſequence in this part of the iſland, and we ſuppoſed he belonged to that

claſs

claſs of vaſſals, or freeholders, who are called Manahounas in the firſt voyage of captain Cook. He came on the quarter-deck, to all appearance thinking, that a place where our chiefs were ſtationed, beſt became him. He was remarkable fairer than any of the natives we had yet ſeen, and reſembled in colour the Weſt Indian Meſtizos. His features were really handſome and regular; he had a high forehead, arched eyebrows, large black eyes, ſparkling with expreſſion, and a well-proportioned noſe; there was ſomething remarkably ſweet and engaging about his mouth; the lips were prominent, but not diſagreeably large; and his beard was black, and finely frizzled; his hair was of a jetty colour, and fell in ſtrong curls down his neck; but ſeeing that we all had ours queued, he made uſe of a black ſilk neckcloth, which Mr. Clerke made him a preſent of, to imitate our faſhion. The body was in general well proportioned, though ſomewhat too luſty, and his feet were rather too large to harmonize perfectly with the reſt. By the help of vocabularies we aſked this man ſeveral queſtions. One of the firſt was, whether Tootahàh was well? to this we were anſwered, that he was dead, being killed by the men of Tiarraboo, or the ſmaller peninſula, and that O-Aheatua was *e-aree*, or the king of the latter; which was confirmed by all the other natives. Of his three female companions, one was his wife, and the other two his ſiſters: the latter took great pleaſure in teaching us to

1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. call them by their names, which were both ſufficiently harmonious, one was called Maroya, and the other Maroraï. They were ſtill fairer than O-Taï, but their ſtature was ſmall in compariſon to his, being at leaſt nine or ten inches leſs. The laſt mentioned was a graceful figure, with the moſt delicate and beautiful contours, in the hands and all above the zone. Their face was round, and their features far from being ſo regular as thoſe of the brother; but an ineffable ſmile ſat on their countenances. They ſeemed never to have been aboard of a ſhip before, ſo much were they ſtruck with admiration on beholding its variety of objects. They did not content themſelves with looking around the deck, but deſcended into the officers cabins, whither a gentleman conducted them, and curiouſly examined every part. Maroraï took a particular fancy to a pair of ſheets which ſhe ſaw ſpread on one of the beds, and made a number of fruitleſs attempts to obtain them from her conductor. He propoſed a ſpecial favour as the condition; ſhe heſitated ſome time, and at laſt with ſeeming reluctance conſented; but when the victim was juſt led to the altar of Hymen, the ſhip ſtruck violently on the reef, and interrupted the ſolemnity. The affrighted lover, more ſenſible of the danger than his fair miſtreſs, flew in haſte upon deck, whither all the reſt of our people crowded from their ſeveral occupations. The tide, during a perfect calm, had driven us by inſenſible degrees towards the reef

of

of rocks; and actually ſet us upon it, before we could come into the entrance of the harbour, which was as it were within our reach. Repeated ſhocks made our ſituation every moment more terrifying; however, providentially there was no ſwell which broke with any violence on the rocks, and the ſea breeze, which muſt have brought on abſolute deſtruction to us, did not come in all day. The officers, and all the paſſengers, exerted themſelves indiſcriminately on this occaſion, hoiſted out the launch, and afterwards by heaving upon an anchor, which had been carried out to a little diſtance, ſucceeded in bringing the veſſel afloat. The natives on board, ſeeing us work ſo hard, aſſiſted us in manning the capſtan, hauling in ropes, and performing all ſorts of labour. If they had had the leaſt ſpark of a treacherous diſpoſition, they could not have found a better opportunity of diſtreſſing us; but they approved themſelves good-natured, and friendly in this, as on all other occaſions. The heat during this violent exertion of our ſtrength was immenſe; the thermometer being upwards of ninety degrees in the ſhade, and the ſun blazing in a perfectly clear ſky. The Adventure was cloſe to us, and eſcaped ſharing the ſame diſtreſſes, by dropping an anchor in time. It was another fortunate circumſtance, that the reef ſhelved in this place ſo as to admit of anchorage, which is indeed rarely the caſe, the coral rock being perpendicular in moſt parts. It was about three o'clock when

1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. when we were afloat again, after working for about an hour and a half. We now took ſome refreſhments in a hurry, and as our ſituation was ſtill extremely precarious, in caſe an eaſterly wind had come on, we manned the boats of both ſloops, and were towed off to ſea, where we felt a land-breeze gently ſwelling our ſails, about five o'clock. As ſoon as we were ſure of it, we diſpatched the boats to the aſſiſtance of the Adventure; but ſhe had already ſlipped her cables, in order to take advantage of the favourable wind, and followed us. We ſtood off and on all night, and ſaw the dangerous reefs illuminated by a number of fires, by the light of which the natives were fiſhing. One of the officers retiring to reſt, found his bed deprived of the ſheets, which in all probability the fair Maroraï had taken care of, when forſaken by her lover; though ſhe muſt have managed this little concern with conſiderable ingenuity, as ſhe had appeared on deck before any ſuſpicion had fallen upon her.

Tueſday 17. The next morning we reſumed our courſe towards the ſhore, and ſtood in along the north part of the leſſer peninſula. We were in a ſhort time ſurrounded, as the day before, by the natives, who in a great number of canoes brought us abundance of vegetable, but no animal food, and whoſe clamours were ſometimes loud enough to ſtun our ears. Theſe canoes very frequently overſet, but the natives were not much diſcompoſed by ſuch accidents, as both

both ſexes were expert ſwimmers, and re-eſtabliſhed themſelves in a moment. Seeing that I enquired for plants, and other natural curioſities, they brought off ſeveral, though ſometimes only the leaves without the flowers, and vice verſa; however, among them we ſaw the common ſpecies of black night-ſhade, and a beautiful *erythrina*, or coral-flower; I alſo collected by theſe means many ſhells, coralines, birds, &c. 1773. AUGUST.

About eleven o'clock we anchored in a little harbour called O Aitepeha, on the north-eaſt end of the ſouthern or leſſer peninſula of Taheitee, named Tiarraboo. Here the concourſe of natives ſtill increaſed, and we ſaw their canoes coming towards us from all parts. They were eager to obtain our beads, nails, and knives, for which an immenſe quantity of their cloth, mats, baſkets, and various tools, as well as abundance of coco-nuts, bread-fruit, yams, and bananas were exchanged. Many of them came on deck, and took the opportunity of conveying away a number of trifles; nay, ſome went ſo far as privately to throw over board the coco-nuts, which we had already purchaſed, to their comrades, who immediately picked them up, and ſold them to our people again. To prevent our being impoſed upon for the future in this manner, the thieves were turned out of the veſſel, and puniſhed with a whip, which they bore very patiently.

The

1773. AUGUST. The heat was as great as it had been the day before, the thermometer ſtanding at 90° in the ſhade, when the ſky was covered with clouds; the wind likewiſe dying away again at noon to a perfect calm. Notwithſtanding the waſte of fluids which the weather occaſioned, we could not ſay that we found the climate affected us too much, or was very diſagreeable. On the contrary, allowing for the violent exerciſe we had undergone at the ſtriking of the ſhip, we found ourſelves more refreſhed by the bare proximity of the ſhore, than we could have expected. The bread-fruit and yams proved a luxurious and moſt welcome ſubſtitute for worm-eaten biſcuit; while plantanes, and a fruit of the ſhape of an apple, called *e-vee* by the natives, furniſhed out a delicious deſert. Our only remaining wiſh, with regard to eatables, was to be able to purchaſe ſome hogs and fowls, which might ſupply the place of ſalt beef.

In the afternoon the captains, accompanied by ſeveral gentlemen, went aſhore the firſt time, in order to viſit O-Aheatua, whom all the natives thereabouts acknowledged as *aree*, or king. Numbers of canoes in the mean while ſurrounded us, carrying on a briſk trade with vegetables, but chiefly with great quantities of the cloth made in the iſland. The decks were likewiſe crouded with natives, among whom were ſeveral women who yielded without difficulty to the ardent ſollicitations of our ſailors.

Some

Some of the females who came on board for this purpoſe, ſeemed not to be above nine or ten years old, and had not the leaſt marks of puberty. So early an acquaintance with the world ſeems to argue an uncommon degree of voluptuouſneſs, and cannot fail of affecting the nation in general. The effect, which was immediately obvious to me, was the low ſtature of the common claſs of people, to which all theſe proſtitutes belonged. Among this whole order we ſaw few perſons above the middle ſize, and many below it; an obſervation which confirms what M. de Buffon has very judiciouſly ſaid on the ſubject of early connections of the ſexes, (ſee his Hiſtoire Naturelle.) Their features were very irregular, and in general very ordinary, except the eyes, which were always large and full of vivacity; but a natural ſmile, and a conſtant endeavour to pleaſe, had ſo well replaced the want of beauty, that our ſailors were perfectly captivated, and careleſsly diſpoſed of their ſhirts and cloaths to gratify their miſtreſſes. The ſimplicity of a dreſs which expoſed to view a well proportioned boſom and delicate hands, might alſo contribute to fan their amorous fire; and the view of ſeveral of theſe nymphs ſwimming nimbly all round the ſloop, ſuch as nature had formed them, was perhaps more than ſufficient entirely to ſubvert the little reaſon which a mariner might have left to govern his paſſions. A trifling circumſtance had given cauſe to their taking the water. One of the officers on the 1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. quarter-deck intended to drop a bead into a canoe for a little boy about ſix years old; by accident it miſſed the boat and fell into the ſea; but the child immediately leaped overboard, and diving after it brought it up again. To reward his performance we dropped ſome more beads to him, which ſo tempted a number of men and women, that they amuſed us with amazing feats of agility in the water, and not only fetched up ſeveral beads ſcattered at once, but likewiſe large nails, which, on account of their weight, deſcended quickly to a conſiderable depth. Some of them continued a long while under water, and the velocity with which we ſaw them go down, the water being perfectly clear, was very ſurpriſing. The frequent ablutions of theſe people, already mentioned in Captain Cook's former voyage, ſeem to make ſwimming familiar to them from their earlieſt childhood; and indeed their eaſy poſition in the water, and the pliancy of their limbs, gave us reaſon to look on them almoſt as amphibious creatures. They continued this ſport, and their other occupations about us, till ſun-ſet, when they all withdrew by degrees to the ſhore.

In the evening the captains with their company returned on board, without having ſeen the king, who, perhaps miſtruſting their intentions, had ſent word, that he intended to viſit us the next day. They had taken a walk along the ſhore to the eaſtward, attended by a great croud of the

the natives, who inſiſted on carrying them on their ſhoulders over a fine brook. After they had paſſed it, the natives left them, and they proceeded accompanied by one man, who guided them to an uncultivated projecting point, where different kinds of plants grew in wild luxuriance among ſeveral ſorts of ſhrubs. On coming out of the ſhrubbery they ſaw a building of ſtones, in form of the fruſtum of a pyramid; the baſe might meaſure about twenty yards in front, and the whole conſiſted of ſeveral terraces or ſteps above each other, which were ruinous and overgrown with graſſes and ſhrubs, eſpecially on the back or inland part. This the native ſaid was a burying-place and place of worſhip, *marài*, and diſtinguiſhed it by the name of *marai no-Aheatua*, the burying-place of Aheatua, the preſent king of Tiarroboo. Around it were placed perpendicularly, or nearly ſo, fifteen ſlender pieces of wood, ſome about eighteen feet long, in which ſix or eight diminutive human figures of a rude unnatural ſhape were carved, ſtanding above each other, male or female promiſcuouſly, yet ſo that the uppermoſt was always a male. All theſe figures faced the ſea, and perfectly reſembled ſome which are carved on the ſterns of their canoes, and which they call *e-tee*. Beyond the morai they ſaw a kind of thatch erected on four poſts, before which a lattice of ſticks was placed in the ground, hung with bananas and cocoa-nuts *no t' Eatua*, "for the Divinity." They ſat down to reſt themſelves

1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. ſelves under the ſhade of this roof, and their guide ſeeing them a good deal exhauſted, took ſeveral of the bananas and offered them, with the aſſurance that they were *mâa maitai*, "good eating." They accepted them after this recommendation, and finding them really as delicious as they had been deſcribed, made no ſcruple to feaſt with the gods. As the evening was now advancing, they returned to the ſea-ſhore, well pleaſed with their reception among theſe good-natured people, and brought on board a few plants, which we ſoon recognized as the productions common to tropical countries.

Wedneſd. 18. We contemplated the ſcenery before us early the next morning, when its beauties were moſt engaging. The harbour in which we lay was very ſmall, and would not have admitted many more veſſels beſides our own. The water in it was as ſmooth as the fineſt mirrour, and the ſea broke with a ſnowy foam around us upon the outer reef. The plain at the foot of the hills was very narrow in this place, but always conveyed the pleaſing ideas of fertility, plenty, and happineſs. Juſt over againſt us it ran up between the hills into a long narrow valley, rich in plantations, interſperſed with the houſes of the natives. The ſlopes of the hills, covered with woods, croſſed each other on both ſides, variouſly tinted according to their diſtances; and beyond them, over the cleft of the valley, we ſaw the interior mountains ſhattered into various peaks and ſpires,

among

among which was one remarkable pinnacle, whoſe ſummit was frightfully bent to one ſide, and ſeemed to threaten its downfall every moment. The ſerenity of the ſky, the genial warmth of the air, and the beauty of the landſcape, united to exhilarate our ſpirits. 1773. AUGUST.

The launches of both ſhips were ſent to *o Whai-urua*, to fetch the anchors which we had left there when we ſtruck on the reef. A party of marines and ſeamen were ordered on ſhore at the ſame time, to carry on a trade for proviſions, and to fill our empty caſks with freſh water. For this purpoſe they occupied the remains of an abandoned ſhed or cottage on the beach, which at once gave them ſhelter from the ſun, and ſecured them againſt the thieviſh diſpoſition of the people. Before captain Cook went aſhore he received a viſit from a man of ſome note, called o-Poòe, who brought his two ſons on board. They preſented the captain with ſome of their cloth and ſome little trifles, and in return they received knives, nails, beads, and a ſhirt, in which having dreſſed themſelves, they accompanied us to the ſhore.

Our firſt care was to leave the dry ſandy beach, which could afford us no diſcoveries in our ſcience, and to examine the plantations, which from the ſhips had an enchanting appearance, notwithſtanding the browniſh caſt which the time of the year had given. We found them indeed to anſwer the expectations we had formed of a

country

1773. AUGUST. country deſcribed as an elyſium by M. de Bougainville, (ſee the Engliſh edition, p. 228.) We entered a grove of bread-trees, on moſt of which we ſaw no fruit at this ſeaſon of winter, and followed a neat but narrow path, which led to different habitations, half hid under various buſhes. Tall coco-palms nodded to each other, and roſe over the reſt of the trees; the bananas diſplayed their beautiful large leaves, and now and then one of them ſtill appeared loaded with its cluſtering fruit. A ſort of ſhady trees, covered with a dark-green foliage, bore golden apples, which reſembled the anana in juicineſs and flavour. Betwixt theſe the intermediate ſpace was filled with young mulberry-trees *(morus papyrifera.)* of which the bark is employed by the natives in the manufacture of their cloth; with ſeveral ſpecies of arum or eddies, with yams, ſugar-canes, and other uſeful plants.

We found the cottages of the natives ſcattered at ſhort diſtances, in the ſhade of fruit-trees, and ſurrounded by various odoriferous ſhrubs, ſuch as the gardenia, guettarda, and calophyllum. The neat ſimplicity of their ſtructure gave us no leſs pleaſure than the artleſs beauty of the grove which encompaſſed them. The pandang * or palm-nut tree had given its long prickly leaves to thatch the

* *Athrodactylis.* Char. Gen. Novor. Forſter. London 1776. *Bromelia ſylveſtris.* Linn. Flor. Zeyl. *Keura.* Forſkal. Flora Arab. *Pandanus.* Rumph. Amboin.

roofs

roofs of the buildings, and theſe were ſupported by a few pillars made of the bread-tree, which is thus uſeful in more reſpects than one. As a roof is ſufficient to ſhelter the natives from rains and nightly dews, and as the climate of this iſland is perhaps one of the happieſt in the world, the houſes ſeldom have any walls, but are open on all ſides. We ſaw, however, a few dwellings conſtructed for greater privacy, which were entirely encloſed in walls of reeds, connected together by tranſverſe pieces of wood, ſo as to give us the idea of large bird-cages. In theſe there was commonly a hole left for the entrance, which could be cloſed up with a board. Before every hut, on the green turf or on dry graſs, we obſerved groups of inhabitants lying down or ſitting in the eaſtern ſtile, and paſſing their happy hours away in converſation or repoſe. Some of them got up at our approach, and joined the croud that followed us; but great numbers, eſpecially thoſe of a mature age, remained in their attitude, and only pronounced a kind *tayo* as we paſſed by them. Our attendant croud ſeeing us gather plants, were very ready to pluck and offer the ſame ſorts to us, which they found attracted our notice. Indeed a variety of wild ſpecies ſprung up amidſt the plantations, in that beautiful diſorder of nature, which is ſo truly admirable when checked by the hand of induſtry, and infinitely ſurpaſſes the trimneſs of regular gardens. Among them we found ſeveral ſpecies

1773. AUGUST.

of

1773. AUGUST. of graſſes, which though thinner than in our northern countries, yet by growing always in the ſhade, looked freſh and formed a ſoft bed of verdure. The ſoil was by their means kept ſufficiently moiſt to give nouriſhment to the trees, and both were in a thriving ſtate, owing to the reciprocal aſſiſtance which they gave each other. Various little birds dwelt in the ſhade of the bread-fruit and other trees, and had a very agreeable note, though common report among Europeans has denied the powers of harmony (I know not on what grounds) to the birds of warm climates. The heads of the talleſt coco-trees were the uſual reſidence of a kind of very ſmall perroquets of a beautiful ſapphirine blue, while another ſort of a greeniſh colour, with a few red ſpots, were more common among the bananas, and appeared frequently tame in the houſes of the natives, who ſeemed to value them for their red feathers. A king's fiſher, of a dark-green, with a collar of the ſame hue round his white throat, a large cuckoo, and ſeveral ſorts of pigeons or doves, were frequently ſeen hopping from branch to branch, and a bluiſh heron gravely ſtalked along the ſea ſide, picking up ſhell-fiſh and worms. A fine brook, rolling over a bed of pebbles, came down a narrow valley, and ſupplied our waterers at its diſcharge into the ſea. We followed its ſtream for a little while till we were met by a great croud of natives at the heels of three men, dreſſed in various pieces of their red and yellow cloth,

cloth, and provided with elegant turbans of the ſame. Each of them had a long ſtick or wand in his hand, and one of them was accompanied by a woman, whom upon enquiry we found to be his wife. We demanded what their appearance meant, and were anſwered they were the Te-apoonee; but when they obſerved we did not underſtand enough of their language to comprehend this term, they added that they were Tata-no-t'Eatooa, men belonging to the divinity, and to the Marai, or burying-place; I ſuppoſe we might call them prieſts. We ſtopped with them ſome time, but as we did not ſee that any religious, or other ceremony was performed, we returned to the beach. About noon captain Cook re-imbarked with us, and with the two ſons of O-Poe mentioned page 269, without having ſeen Aheatua, who for reaſons unknown to us, ſtill refuſed to admit us to his preſence. 1773. AUGUST.

The two young fellows ſat down to dinner with us, and partook of the vegetables, but did not touch our ſalt proviſions. After dinner, one of them took an opportunity of ſtealing a knife and a pewter ſpoon, not contented with a number of preſents which he had received from the captain, without having made any return on his part, and which ought to have prevented him from infringing the laws of hoſpitality. The theft being diſcovered, he was kicked from the deck, jumped overboard, and ſwam to the next canoe, where he ſeated himſelf, perhaps in defiance

1773. AUGUST. of our power. Captain Cook fired a muſket over his head, upon which he took to the water again, and overſet the canoe. A ſecond muſket was levelled at him, but he dived when he ſaw the flaſh, and did the ſame when the *third* was diſcharged. Captain Cook now manned his boat, and went to take the canoe, under which the man took ſhelter; but he ſoon abandoned it, and ſwam to a double canoe near the firſt, which was accordingly purſued. This canoe however got aſhore through the ſurf, and the natives on the beach took up ſtones, which they levelled at our boat's crew, who thought it adviſeable to retreat. However, a four pounder directed towards the ſhore, frightened the inhabitants ſufficiently, ſo that our people could ſeize two large double canoes, and bring them along-ſide of the ſhip.

We left the ſhip after this diſturbance, in order to take an afternoon's walk aſhore near the watering-place, and to reſtore the confidence of the people, who had entirely forſaken us on account of our open hoſtilities. We purſued a different path from that which we had taken in the morning, and found great quantities of bananas, yams, eddies, &c. planted round every cottage, inhabited by friendly good-natured people, who ſeemed however a little more ſhy or reſerved than uſual, on account of what had happened. At laſt we arrived at a large houſe, neatly conſtructed of reeds, which we were told belonged to Aheatua, who was in another diſtrict

at

at preſent. Here we ſaw a hog, and a couple of fowls, the firſt which the natives expoſed to our ſight, having hitherto been very careful to conceal them, and always refuſing to part with them, under the pretext that they were the property of the aree or king. They made uſe of the ſame excuſe at preſent, though we offered a hatchet, which in their eyes was the moſt valuable merchandiſe we had. After a ſhort ſtay, we returned the ſame way we came, and brought a ſmall collection of new plants on board. About ſun-ſet a boat was ſent off, out of the harbour, to bury in the ſea one Iſaac Taylor, a marine, who died this morning of a complication of diſorders. Ever ſince we had left England, this man had been feveriſh, conſumptive, and aſthmatic; his complaints always kept increaſing, and at laſt turned to a dropſy, which carried him off. All our people on board were now well, except one, whoſe remarkable ſcorbutic habit of body always laid him up as ſoon as we came out to ſea, where prophylactics and wort could but juſt keep him alive. However this man, as well as the Adventure's crew, who were much affected with the ſcurvy when they came in here, recovered amazingly by walking on ſhore, and eating quantities of freſh fruit. 1773. AUGUST.

Early the next morning ſome of the natives came off to us in a ſmall canoe, and begged for the reſtitution of thoſe larger ones which had been taken from them on the Thurſday 19.

1773. AUGUST. day before. Captain Cook, who perceived the trade to have ſlackened in conſequence of that ſeizure, none of the inhabitants coming to the ſhip, and few to the watering-place, returned the canoes, as the beſt means to reconcile us to the confidence of the natives; and though the effects of his indulgence were not inſtantaneous, yet in a day or two our trade was perfectly re-eſtabliſhed.

After this peaceful prelude we went on ſhore, in purſuit of botanical diſcoveries. A ſmart ſhower of rain which had fallen over night, had cooled the air conſiderably, and made our walk extremely pleaſant, before the ſun could become troubleſome. The whole country had profited by this rain, for every plant and tree ſeemed revived by it, and the groves exhaled a ſweet refreſhing ſmell. Whether it was owing to the early hour of our excurſion, or to the beauty of the morning, our ear was ſaluted by the ſong of many ſmall birds, which enlivened this delightful country. We had not walked far, when we heard a loud noiſe in the wood, which reſembled the ſtrokes of a carpenter's hammer. We followed the ſound, and at laſt came to a ſmall ſhed, where five or ſix women were ſitting on both ſides of a long ſquare piece of timber, and beat the fibrous bark of the mulberry-tree here, in order to manufacture it into cloth. The inſtrument they uſed for this purpoſe was a ſquare wooden club, with longitudinal and parallel furrows, which run ſmaller and cloſer together on the

different

different ſides *. They ceaſed a little while to give us time to examine the bark, the mallet, and the timber on which they performed their operations. They alſo ſhewed us a kind of glutinous water in a coco-nut ſhell, which was made uſe of from time to time, to make the pieces of bark cohere together. This glue, which, as we underſtood, was made of the *hibiſcus eſculentus*, is indiſpenſibly neceſſary in the manufacture of thoſe immenſe pieces of cloth, ſometimes two or three yards wide, and fifty yards long, which are compoſed of little bits of bark, taken from trees never ſo thick as the wriſt. We carefully examined their plantations of mulberry-trees, but never found a ſingle old one among them; as ſoon as they are of two years growth they are cut down, and new ones ſpring up from the root, for fortunately this tree is one of the moſt prolific in nature, and if ſuffered to grow till it flowered and could bear fruits, might perhaps totally over-run the country. The bark muſt always be taken from young trees; and theſe are carefully drawn into long ſtems, without any branches, except juſt at the top, ſo that the bark is as entire as poſſible. The method of preparing it before it comes under the mallet, we were not yet acquainted with at this time. The women employed in this manner, were dreſſed in old and dirty rags of their cloth, and had very hard and callous

1773. AUGUST.

* See Dr. Hawkeſworth's compilation, vol. II. p. 212, and plate No. 9.

hands.

1773. AUGUST. hands. We proceeded a little farther up in a narrow valley, where a well-looking man invited us to ſit down in the ſhade before his houſe. There was a little area paved with broadiſh ſtones, on which he ſpread banana leaves for us, and brought out a little ſtool made of the bread-tree-wood, cut out of one piece, on which he deſired one of us to ſit down, whom he took to be the principal perſon. Seeing us all ſeated he ran into his houſe, and brought out a quantity of bread-fruit baked, which he laid before us on freſh banana leaves. To this he added a matted baſket full of the vee, or Taheitee apples, a fruit of the *ſpondias* genus, which reſembles the anâna, or pine-apple in the taſte, and entreated us to partake of theſe refreſhments. We breakfaſted with a hearty appetite, ſharpened by the exerciſe we had taken, the fine air of the morning, and the excellence of the proviſions. We found the Taheitee method of dreſſing bread-fruit and other victuals, with heated ſtones under ground, infinitely ſuperior to our uſual way of boiling them; in the former all the juices remained, and were concentrated by the heat; but in the latter, the fruit imbibed many watery particles, and loſt a great deal of its fine flavour and mealineſs. To conclude this treat our hoſt brought us five freſh coco-nuts, which he opened by pulling the fibres off with his teeth. The cool limpid liquor contained in them he poured into a clean cup, made of a ripe coco-nut-ſhell, and offered that to each of us in our turns,

turns. The people in this country had on all occaſions been good-natured and friendly, and for beads ſometimes ſold us coco-nuts and fruit, if we called for them; but we had not yet ſeen an inſtance of hoſpitality exerciſed in ſo complete a manner during our ſhort ſtay. We therefore thought it our duty to recompenſe our friend as much as lay in our power, and preſented him with a number of tranſparent beads and iron nails, with which he was highly ſatisfied and contented. 1773. AUGUST.

We continued our walk into the country from this ſeat of patriarchal hoſpitality, notwithſtanding the uneaſineſs which many of the natives expreſſed, among the croud that followed us. When they ſaw us perſiſt in our expedition, the greateſt part of them diſperſed to their different habitations, and only a few of them attended us, who made it their buſineſs to act as our guides. We came to the foot of the firſt hills, where we left the huts and plantations of the natives behind us, and aſcended on a beaten path, paſſing through an uncultivated ſhrubbery mixed with ſeveral tall timber-trees. Here we ſearched the moſt intricate parts, and found ſeveral plants and birds hitherto unknown to natural hiſtorians. With theſe little acquiſitions we returned towards the ſea, at which our friends the natives expreſſed their ſatisfaction. We found a vaſt concourſe of inhabitants on the beach at our trading-place, and ſaw that our people had brought a great quantity of large

1773. AUGUST. large eddies and other roots, but few bread-fruits, which were now very ſcarce, only a few trees bearing them ſo late in the ſeaſon, while moſt of the others were already ſhooting forth the embryo of a new crop. The exceſſive heat of the ſun, now tempted us to bath in a branch of the adjacent river, which formed a deep pond of ſome extent; and being refreſhed with this bath we returned on board to dinner. In the afternoon we had heavy rains, attended with wind, during which the Adventure drove from her moorings, but was brought up again by a timely manœuvre. This bad weather confined us on board, where we arranged the plants and animals which we had hitherto collected, and made drawings of ſuch as were not known before. Our three days excurſions had ſupplied us only with a ſmall number of ſpecies, which in an iſland ſo flouriſhing as Taheitee, gave a convincing proof of its high cultivation; for a few individual plants occupied that ſpace, which in a country entirely left to itſelf, would have teemed with ſeveral hundred different kinds in wild diſorder. The ſmall ſize of the iſland, together with its vaſt diſtance from either the eaſtern or weſtern continent, did not admit of a great variety of animals. We ſaw no other ſpecies of quadrupeds than hogs, and dogs which were domeſtic, and incredible numbers of rats, which the natives ſuffered to run about at pleaſure, without ever trying to deſtroy them. We found however a tolerable number

of

of birds, and when the natives gave themſelves the trouble to fiſh, we commonly purchaſed a conſiderable variety of ſpecies, as this claſs of creatures can eaſily roam from one part of the ocean to the other, and particularly in the torrid zone, where certain ſorts are general all round the world. 1773. AUGUST.

If the ſcarcity of ſpontaneous plants was unfavourable to the botaniſt, ſtill it had the moſt ſalutary effects with regard to the whole company on board of both our veſſels, ſince their place was occupied by great quantities of wholeſome vegetables. We daily bought abundance of yams, eddies, and Taheitee apples; together with ſome bananas and bread-fruit, which, on account of the ſeaſon, were grown very ſcarce. The wholeſome regimen which we had by this means been able to keep, had viſibly, and I might almoſt ſay miraculouſly, operated to reſtore to their health, all thoſe who were ill of the ſcurvy at our arrival; and the only inconvenience we felt from it was a kind of flux, owing to the ſudden change of diet, with which a few of the people were afflicted. Not content with this fortunate ſupply, we could not help caſting longing eyes towards the hogs which we ſaw in great numbers on all our excurſions into the country, though the natives were always careful to hide them in low ſtyes, covered over with boards, forming a kind of platform, on which they fat or lay down. We tried all poſſible means to engage the people to ſell ſome of them to us, and offered hatchets,

1773. AUGUST. ſhirts, and other goods of value to the Taheitians, but ſtill without ſucceſs, their conſtant anſwer being, that theſe animals were the king's (*aree*'s) property. Inſtead of acquieſcing in this refuſal, and acknowledging the kind diſpoſition of the natives, who furniſhed us at leaſt with the means of recovering our ſtrength, and reſtoring our ſick, a propoſal was made to the captains, by ſome perſons in the ſhips, to ſweep away by force a ſufficient number of hogs for our uſe, and afterwards to return ſuch a quantity of our goods in exchange to the natives, as we ſhould think adequate to the ſpoil we had taken. This propoſal, which nothing but the moſt tyrannical principles, and the meaneſt ſelfiſhneſs could have dictated, was received with the contempt and indignation which it juſtly deſerved.

Friday 20. Our acquiſitions in natural hiſtory being hitherto ſo inconſiderable, we had leiſure every day to ramble in the country in ſearch of others, as well as to pick up various circumſtances which might ſerve to throw a light on the character, manners, and preſent ſtate of the inhabitants.

On the 20th towards noon, I directed my walk, in company with ſeveral officers, to the eaſtern point of the harbour. We ſoon came to a rivulet, which was wide and deep enough to admit a canoe upon it, by means of which we ferried over to the oppoſite ſhore, where we perceived a houſe of ſome extent, among the buſhes. Before it we ſaw a quantity of the finer ſorts of Taheitee cloth ſpread out on

the

the graſs, which the natives told us, had been waſhed in the river; and cloſe to the houſe, ſuſpended on a pole, we obſerved a target of a ſemicircular form, made of wicker-work, and plaited ſtrings (of the coco-nut fibres,) covered with the gloſſy bluiſh-green feathers of a kind of pigeon, and ornamented with many ſhark's teeth, diſplayed in three co-centric ſemicircles; I enquired whether it was to be purchaſed, but was anſwered in the negative, and concluded that it was only expoſed to the air, in the ſame manner as we are uſed to do from time to time, with things which we preſerve in cloſe boxes. A middle-aged man, who lay ſtretched at his eaſe in the hut, invited us to ſit down by him, and curiouſly examined my dreſs; he had long nails on his fingers, upon which he valued himſelf not a little, and which I found were a mark of diſtinction, ſince only ſuch perſons, as had no occaſion to work, could ſuffer them to grow to that length. The Chineſe have the ſame cuſtom, and pride themſelves as much in it; but whether the Taheitians derive it from them, or whether chance has led them both to the ſame idea, without any communication with each other, is poſſibly beyond the art of Needham and Des Guignes to determine. In different corners of the hut we ſaw ſome women and ſome men, ſeparately eating their dinner of bread-fruit and bananas, and both parties, as we approached them, deſired us to partake of their proviſions. The ſingular cuſtom, which forces 1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. the ſexes to ſhun each others company at their meals, is already mentioned by former voyagers, who have been equally unſucceſsful with ourſelves in diſcovering its cauſe.

We left this hut, and ſtrolled through an odoriferous ſhrubbery to another, where we found O-Taï, his wife, and children, and his ſiſters Maroya and Maroraï. The officer who had loſt his bed-ſheets was with us, but thought it to no purpoſe to enquire for them, and rather tried to ingratiate himſelf with the fair one. Beads, nails, and various trifles were preſented to her, which ſhe readily accepted, but remained inexorable to the paſſionate ſollicitations of her lover. As ſhe had in all probability obtained the poſſeſſion of the ſheets, which ſhe coveted, and for which alone ſhe could have ſubmitted to proſtitution, it ſeems nothing could afterwards tempt her to admit the tranſient embraces of a ſtranger. This is the moſt likely conſtruction we could put upon her conduct, and it became more probable to us, when we conſidered, that ſhe belonged to a family of ſome note, and that, during captain Cook's long ſtay on the iſland in the Endeavour, there had been few, if any inſtances, that women among the better ſort of people had demeaned themſelves ſo far. After a ſhort ſtay with them, I returned to our trading place, but finding all our boats gone off, ventured to embark in a ſingle canoe, without an outrigger, and was ſafely brought on board the Reſolution

ſolution for a ſingle bead, which was all I had left after this excurſion. 1773. AUGUST.

At day-break the next morning we went aſhore again, on another walk to the eaſtward. We obſerved the plain to widen, as we advanced beyond the eaſt point of Aitepèha harbour, and of courſe growing richer in bread-fruit and coco-nut trees, bananas, and other vegetable productions, on moſt of which we ſaw the buds of a future crop. The houſes of the natives were likewiſe found to be more numerous, and many ſeemed to us neater and newer than thoſe near our anchoring-place. In one of them, which was of the cloſer ſort, walled in with reeds, we ſaw a great many bundles of cloth, and caſes for targets ſuſpended from the roof, all which, as well as the houſe itſelf, we were informed belonged to Aheatua. We walked about two miles in the moſt delightful groves or plantations of fruit-trees, where the natives were juſt returning to their various employments. Among them we eaſily noticed the manufacturers of cloth, by the hollow ſound of the mallet. However, it muſt not be ſuppoſed, that the neceſſities of theſe people urgently required their conſtant application to work; for our appearance ſoon gathered a croud of them about us, who followed us all day as far as we went, and ſometimes even neglected their meals on our account. It was not without ſome intereſted motives, that they attended upon us. Their general behaviour to- Saturday 21.

wards

1773. AUGUST. wards us was good-natured, friendly, and I may ſay officious; but they watched every opportunity of conveying away ſome trifles with amazing dexterity, and many among them, whenever we returned the kind looks they gave us, or ſmiled upon them, thought that a proper time to take advantage of our good diſpoſition, and immediately with a begging tone ſaid, *tayo, pòë,* "friend, a bead!" which, whether we complied with or refuſed, did not alter their good temper. When theſe petitions became too frequent, we uſed to mock them, by repeating their words in the ſame tone, which always produced a general peal of good-humoured laughter amongſt them. Their converſation was commonly loud, and it ſeemed that our appearance was their principal topick; every new-comer was immediately made acquainted by the others with our names, which they reduced to a few vowels and ſofter conſonants, and was entertained with a repetition of what we had ſaid or done that morning. His firſt requeſt was generally to hear a muſket fired off, which we complied with on condition that he ſhould ſhew us a bird as a mark. However, we were frequently at a loſs how to behave, when he pointed out a bird at four or five hundreds yards diſtance, as they had no idea that the effects of our fire-arms were limited to a certain ſpace. As it was not prudent to let them into this myſtery, we always pretended that we could not ſee the bird, till we came near enough to ſhoot it. The firſt

exploſion

exploſion frightened them conſiderably, and on ſome produced ſuch violent conſternation that they dropped down on the ground, or ran back about twenty yards from us, where they remained till we quieted their fears by profeſſions of friendſhip, or till their more courageous brethren had picked up the bird which we had killed. But they ſoon became more familiar, and though they always expreſſed ſome ſudden emotion, yet they conquered by degrees the appearance of fear. 1773. AUGUST.

Notwithſtanding the friendly reception which we met with on all ſides, the natives were very anxious to keep their hogs out of ſight, and whenever we enquired for them ſeemed uneaſy, and either told us they had none, or aſſured us they belonged to Aheatua their king. As we perceived their reluctance to part with theſe animals, we thought it beſt to take no farther notice of them, and though we ſaw great numbers of them confined in pigſtyes almoſt in every hut, we pretended not to know that there were any, or not to care for them; this proceeding we always found had the good effect of encreaſing the confidence of the people towards us.

Having advanced a mile or two, we ſat down on a few large ſtones, which formed a kind of paved area before one of the cottages, and deſired the inhabitants to bring us ſome bread-fruit and coco-nuts, in exchange for beads. They very readily ſupplied us with a quantity of each, on which

1773. AUGUST. which we breakfaſted. The croud who followed us, ſat down at a diſtance from us, at our deſire, in order that they might have no opportunity of ſnatching up any of our arms, or other apparatus, which we were obliged to lay out of our hands, while we made our meal. To add to our good cheer, we were preſented with a coco-nut ſhell full of a kind of diminutive freſh fiſh, which the natives are uſed to eat raw, without any other ſauce than ſalt water. We taſted them, and found them far from diſagreeable; however, as we were not uſed to eat them without being dreſſed, we diſtributed them, with the remains of the fruit, to our favourites among the croud.

Thus refreſhed, we continued our walk, but turned towards the hills, notwithſtanding the importunities of the natives, who urged us to continue on the plain, which we eaſily perceived aroſe merely from their diſlike to fatigue. We were not to be diverted from our purpoſe; but leaving behind us almoſt the whole croud, we entered, with a few guides, a chaſm between two hills. There we found ſeveral wild plants which were new to us, and ſaw a number of little ſwallows flying over a fine brook, which rolled impetuouſly along. We walked up along its banks to a perpendicular rock, fringed with various tufted ſhrubberies, from whence it fell in a cryſtalline column, and was collected at the bottom into a ſmooth limpid pond, ſurrounded with many ſpecies of odoriferous flowers. This ſpot, where we had

had a proſpect of the plain below us, and of the ſea beyond it, was one of the moſt beautiful I had ever ſeen, and could not fail of bringing to remembrance the moſt fanciful deſcriptions of poets, which it eclipſed in beauty. In the ſhade of trees, whoſe branches hung over the water, we enjoyed a pleaſant gale, which ſoftened the heat of the day, and amidſt the ſolemn uniform noiſe of the waterfall, which was but ſeldom interrupted by the whiſtling of birds, we ſat down to deſcribe our new acquiſitions before they withered. Our Taheitian companions ſeeing us employed, likewiſe reſted among the buſhes, viewing us attentively and in profound ſilence. We could have been well pleaſed to have paſſed the whole day in this retirement; however, after finiſhing our notes, and feaſting our eyes once more with the romantick ſcenery, we returned to the plain. Here we obſerved a great croud of the natives coming towards us, and at their near approach perceived two of our ſhipmates, Mr. Hodges and Mr. Grindall, whom they ſurrounded and attended on their walk. We ſoon joined them, and reſolved to continue our excurſion together. A youth, of a very promiſing countenance,, who had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by ſhewing a particular attachment for theſe gentlemen, was entruſted with Mr. Hodges's port-folio, where he preſerved the ſketches and deſigns, which he had frequent opportunities of making on his walk. No favour, or mark of affection could I believe have given this youth 1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. ſo much real pleaſure, as the confidence they had placed in him, upon which he ſeemed to value himſelf among his countrymen. Perhaps this circumſtance, joined to the peaceable appearance of our gentlemen, who walked without arms of any kind, had a general effect upon all the people that ſurrounded us, as their familiarity and affection ſeemed much encreaſed. We entered a ſpacious hut together, where we ſaw a large family aſſembled. An old man, with a placid countenance, lay on a clean mat, and reſted his head on a little ſtool, which ſerved as a pillow. His head, which was truly venerable, was well furniſhed with fine locks of a ſilvery grey, and a thick beard as white as ſnow deſcended to his breaſt. His eyes were lively, and health ſat on his full cheeks. His wrinkles, which characterize age with us, were few and not deep; for cares, trouble, and diſappointment, which untimely furrow our brows, cannot be ſuppoſed to exiſt in this happy nation. Several little ones, whom we took to be his grand-children, and who, according to the cuſtom of the country, were perfectly naked, played with their aged anceſtor, while his actions and looks convinced us, that the ſimple way of living to which he had been uſed, had not yet blunted his ſenſes. Several well-made men and artleſs nymphs, in whom youth ſupplied the want of beauty, ſurrounded the old man, and as we came in ſeemed to be in converſation after a frugal meal. They deſired us to ſit down

down on the mats among them, and we did not give them time to repeat their invitation. Their curioſity, which had perhaps never before been gratified with the ſight of ſtrangers, now prompted them to examine our dreſs and our arms, without beſtowing their attention longer than a moment on any ſingle object. They admired our colour, preſſed our hands, ſeemed to wonder that we had no punctures on them, nor long nails on our fingers, and eagerly enquired for our names, which when known, they were happy to repeat. Theſe names, as they pronounced them, were not ſo like the originals that an etymologiſt could eaſily have deduced them, but in return they were more harmonious, and eaſily pronounced. Forſter was changed into *Matara*, Hodges into *Oreo*, Grindall into *Terino*, Sparrman into *Pamanee*, and George into *Teoree*. The hoſpitality which we had found under every roof, was not wanting here, and we were offered ſome coco-nuts and *e-vees* to quench our thirſt after the laſt walk. One of the young men had a flute made of a bamboo, which had but three holes; he blew it with his noſtrils *, whilſt another accompanied him with the voice. The whole muſic, both vocal and inſtrumental, conſiſted of three or four notes, which were between half and quarter notes, being neither whole tones nor ſemi-tones. The effect of theſe notes, without variety or order, was only a kind of drowſy hum, which could not indeed hurt

1773. AUGUST.

* See Hawkeſworth.

1773. AUGUST. the ear by its diſcordant ſounds, but made no pleaſing impreſſion on our minds. It is ſurpriſing that the taſte for muſic ſhould be ſo general all over the world, when the ideas of harmony among different nations are ſo diſtinct! Charmed with the picture of real happineſs, which was thus exhibited before us, Mr. Hodges filled his port-folio with ſeveral ſketches, which will convey to future times the beauties of a ſcene, of which words give but a faint idea. While he was drawing, all the natives looked on with great attention, and were highly pleaſed to find out the reſemblance between his performances and different perſons among them. Our acquaintance with their language, which we were at great pains to improve, was as yet very imperfect, and deprived us of the pleaſure which we might have received from a converſation with theſe good people. A few ſeparate words, and an interlude of dumb mimickry, was all that we had to ſupply the place of a coherent ſpeech. However, even this was ſufficient to amuſe the natives, and our docility and endeavours to pleaſe ſeemed to be at leaſt as agreeable to them, as their ſocial temper and willingneſs to give inſtruction appeared to us. The old man, without changing his attitude, and continuing to recline his head on the ſtool, aſked us ſeveral little queſtions, ſuch as the captain's name, the name of the country we came from, how long we ſhould ſtay, whether we had our wives on board, &c. It ſeemed that he was already

already appriſed of all theſe things by common report, but wiſhed to have them confirmed from our own mouths. We ſatisfied his curioſity as well as we could on theſe points, and after diſtributing little preſents of beads, medals, and other trifles to his family, we ſet forwards once more on our excurſion. The many pauſes which we made at the hoſpitable huts of the natives, always refreſhed us ſo much, that we felt no manner of inconvenience, and could with eaſe have walked round the whole iſland in the ſame manner. The plain at the foot of the mountains offered no impediment to our progreſs; on the contrary, its paths were well beaten, and its whole ſurface perfectly level, and covered in many places with a fine growth of graſſes. Not a ſingle noxious animal appeared to deter us, and not even a gnat or muſketoe hummed unpleaſantly about us, or made us apprehenſive of its bite. The bread-fruit groves, with their abundant foliage, intercepted the rays of the meridian ſun, whoſe action was greatly mitigated by a freſh ſea-breeze. The inhabitants however, who were uſed to paſs the middle of the day in repoſe, dropt off one by one in the buſhes, ſo that only a few remained with us. After we had walked about two miles farther to the ſouth eaſtward, we came to the ſea-ſhore at a place where it formed a little inlet. Here, ſurrounded on all ſides with plantations, we met with a glade or lawn, in the midſt of which we ſaw a maraï (burying-place) built up of three

1773. AUGUST.

ranges

1773. AUGUST. ranges of ſtones, like ſteps, each about three feet and a half in height, and covered with graſſes, ferns, and ſmall ſhrubs. Towards the country, at ſome diſtance from the building, there was an oblong encloſure round it made of ſtone, about three feet high, within which two or three ſolitary coco-palms and ſome young caſuarinas, with their weeping branches, gave an air of ſolemnity and pleaſing melancholy to the ſcene. At a little diſtance from the maraï, ſurrounded by a thick ſhrubbery, we ſaw an inconſiderable hut or ſhed, *(tupapow,)* where, on a kind of ſtage about breaſt high, a corpſe was placed, covered with a white piece of cloth, which hung down in various folds. Young coco-trees and bananas were ſpringing up, and dragon-trees bloſſoming around it. Near this we ſaw another hut, where a quantity of eatables lay for the divinity, *(eatua,)* and a pole was ſtuck in the ground, on which we ſaw a dead bird wrapped in a piece of a mat. In this laſt hut, which ſtood on a ſmall eminence, we obſerved a woman ſitting in a penſive attitude, who got up at our approach, and would not ſuffer us to come near her. We offered her a ſmall preſent, but ſhe refuſed to touch it. We underſtood from the natives who were with us, that ſhe belonged to the maraï, and that the dead corſe was alſo a woman's, whoſe obſequies the firſt perhaps was performing.

After

After Mr. Hodges had made ſeveral drawings we returned from this place, which had really ſomething grand in its appearance, and ſeemed calculated to favour religious meditation. In our return we kept along the ſea-ſhore, till we came to a ſpacious houſe, very pleaſantly ſituated amidſt a grove of low coco-palms, loaded with fruit. Two or three fried little fiſhes, which one of the natives ſold us for a few beads, were here ſhared among us, to ſtay our appetite, grown very keen again ſince our breakfaſt. Several of our company likewiſe bathed in the ſea, as a farther refreſhment in this warm climate, and having afterwards bought ſome pieces of cloth, (*abow*'s) of the country fabrick, dreſſed in them, after the Taheitee faſhion, to the infinite pleaſure of the natives. Our walk continued along the ſhore beyond another marai, much like the firſt, to a neat houſe, where a very fat man, who ſeemed to be a chief of the diſtrict, was lolling on his wooden pillow. Before him two ſervants were preparing his deſert, by beating up with water ſome bread-fruit and bananas, in a large wooden bowl, and mixing with it a quantity of the fermented ſour paſte of bread-fruit, (called *mahei.*) The conſiſtence of this mixture was ſuch, that it could properly be called a drink, and the inſtrument with which they made it, was a peſtle of a black poliſhed ſtone, which appeared to be a kind of baſaltes *. While this was doing, a woman who ſat down

1773. AUGUST.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 202.

near

1773. AUGUST. near him, crammed down his throat by handfuls the remains of a large baked fiſh, and ſeveral bread-fruits, which he ſwallowed with a voracious appetite. His countenance was the picture of phlegmatic inſenſibility, and ſeemed to witneſs that all his thoughts centred in the care of his paunch. He ſcarce deigned to look at us, and a few monoſyllables which he uttered, were only directed to remind his feeders of their duty, when we attracted their attention. The great degree of ſatisfaction which we had enjoyed on our different walks in this iſland, and particularly the pleaſure of this day's excurſion, was diminiſhed by the appearance and behaviour of the chief, and the reflections which naturally aroſe from thence. We had flattered ourſelves with the pleaſing fancy of having found at leaſt one little ſpot of the world, where a whole nation, without being lawleſs barbarians, aimed at a certain frugal equality in their way of living, and whoſe hours of enjoyment were juſtly proportioned to thoſe of labour and reſt. Our diſappointment was therefore very great, when we ſaw a luxurious individual ſpending his life in the moſt ſluggiſh inactivity, and without one benefit to ſociety, like the privileged paraſites of more civilized climates, fattening on the ſuperfluous produce of the ſoil, of which he robbed the labouring multitude. His indolence, in ſome degree, reſembled that which is frequent in India and the adjacent kingdoms of the Eaſt, and deſerved every mark of indignation

tion which Sir John Mandeville expreſſed in his Aſiatic travels. That worthy knight, who, top-full of chivalry, and the valourous ſpirit of his time, devoted his life to conſtant activity, was highly incenſed at the ſight of a monſter of lazineſs, who paſſed his days "withouten "doynge of ony dedes of armes," and lived "everemore "thus in eſe, as a ſwyn that is fedde in ſty, for to ben "made fatte *."

1773. AUGUST.

On

* For the ſatisfaction of my readers I ſhall here inſert the account which the knight gives of the voluptuary who attracted his cenſure, eſpecially as ſeveral little circumſtances ſerve to make the ſimilarity between him and the Taheitian chief more perfect.—"From that lond, in returnynge be ten jorneys thorge out "the lond of the grete *Chane*, is another gode yle and a great kyngdom, where "the kyng is fulle riche and myghty. And amonges the riche men of his "contree is a paſſynge riche man, that is no prynce, ne duke, ne erl; but he "hath mo that holden of him londes and other lordſchipes: for he is more "riche. For he hathe every zeer of annulle rente 300000 hors charged with "corn of dyverſe greynes and ryzs; and ſo he ledethe a fulle noble lif and a "delycate, after the cuſtom of the contree. For he hathe every day 50 fair "damyſeles, alle maydenes, that ſerven him evere more at his mete, and for to "lye by him o night, and for to do with hem that is to his pleſance. And "when he is at the table, thei bryngen him hys mete, at every tyme 5 and "5 togedre. And in bryngynge hire ſervyce, thei ſyngen a ſong. And after "that, thei kutten his mete, and putten it in his mouthe, for he touchethe "no thing, ne handlethe nought, but holdethe everemore his hondes before "him upon the table. For he hathe ſo longe nayles, that he may take no-"thing, ne handle no thing, for the nobleſſe of that contree is to have longe "nayles, and to make hem growen alle ways to ben as longe as men may.—— "And alle weys theiſe damyſeles, that I ſpak of beforn, ſyngen all the tyme "that this riche man etethe: and whan that he etethe no more of his firſt "cours, thanne other 5 and 5 of faire damyſeles bryngen him his ſeconde "cours alle weys ſyngynge as thei dide beforn. And ſo thei don contynuelly "every

1773. AUGUST. On leaving this Taheitian drone we ſeparated, and I accompanied Meſſ. Hodges and Grindall, whoſe good-natured friend, the carrier of the port-folio, had earneſtly invited us to his habitation. We arrived there towards five in the evening, and found it a ſmall but cleanly cottage, before which a great abundance of freſh leaves were ſpread on a ſtony place, and a prodigious quantity of the beſt coco-nuts and well-roaſted bread-fruit were laid out in fine order. He immediately ran to two elderly perſons, who were buſy in frightening the rats from this plentiful ſtore of proviſions, and introduced them to us as his parents. They expreſſed great joy on ſeeing the friends of their ſon, and entreated us to ſit down to the meal which lay before us. We were at firſt ſtruck with aſtoniſhment on finding it entirely prepared at our arrival, but we ſoon recollected that our friend had ſent off one of his comrades ſeveral hours beforehand, very probably with directions to provide for our entertainment. As this was the firſt regular meal to which we ſat down this day, it will eaſily be conceived that we fell to with a good appetite, and gave infinite ſatisfaction to the good-natured old people and the generous-minded youth, who all ſeemed to

" every day to the ende of his mete. And in this manere he ledethe his lif, and " ſo did thei beforn him that weren his aunceſtres, and ſo ſchulle thei that " comen aftre him." *See the Voyages and Travaylls of Sir John Maundevile, knight*, pag. 376.

think

think themſelves happy in the honour which we did to their excellent cheer. With ſuch a venerable pair miniſtring to us, if I may be allowed to indulge in a poetical idea, we ran ſome riſk of forgetting that we were men, and might have believed ourſelves feaſted by the hoſpitable Baucis and Philemon, if our inability to reward them had not reminded us of mortality. However, all the beads and nails which we could muſter amongſt us were offered to them, rather as a mark that we preſerved a grateful ſenſe of their good heart, than as any retribution. The youth went on with us to the beach oppoſite to our veſſels, and brought on board a great quantity of proviſions, which we had left unconſumed at our dinner. He was there preſented with a hatchet, a ſhirt, and various articles of leſs value by his friends, and returned that very evening on ſhore to his parents, being probably enriched beyond his warmeſt expectation. 1773. AUGUST.

The uſual trade had been carried on about the ſhips, and on the beach oppoſite to them, during our abſence, without any material incident, except Captain Cook's meeting with TUAHOW, the ſame native who had accompanied him a conſiderable way when he made the circuit of Taheitee in a boat, in the courſe of his firſt voyage *. We found him and two of his countrymen on board at our return, they having reſolved to take up their night's lodging

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 160, 162, &c.

1773. AUGUST. with us, which, though uſual at Mataväi Bay during the Endeavour's voyage, none had hitherto ventured upon in this place. Tuahow being already familiarized with our way of living, and acquainted with the various objects which commonly ſtruck his countrymen with wonder, eagerly entered into diſcourſe with us, as he found us attentive to his queſtions. He enquired after *Tabane*, Mr. Banks; *Tolano*, Dr. Solander; *Tupaya*, (Tupia) and ſeveral perſons in the Endeavour whoſe names he recollected. He rejoiced to hear that Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander were well, and having often renewed his queſtion, always received the ſame anſwer to it; upon which he aſked whether they would not come back to Taheitee, accompanying it with a look which ſtrongly expreſſed the wiſh of ſeeing them again. When he heard of Tupaya's death, he was deſirous of being informed whether it had been violent or natural, and was well pleaſed to hear from ſuch circumſtances as we could by broken words and ſigns communicate to him, that ſickneſs had put a period to his life. In return, we queſtioned him concerning the death of *Tootahàh*, who had appeared as the acting chief of the iſland in Captain Cook's former voyage. We plainly underſtood that a great naval fight had happened between that chief and old *Aheatua* *, the father of the preſent king of Tiarraboo, in which neither party had gained a deciſive advantage;

* Called *Waheatua* in Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 157, 158.

but

but that Tootahàh afterwards marching his army acroſs the iſthmus, which ſeparates the two peninſulas, had been defeated in an obſtinate engagement, in which himſelf, Tuboraï-Tamaide, and many other perſons of diſtinction on his ſide were ſlain. A peace was ſoon after concluded with *O-Too* the king of O-Taheitee*, who, after Tootahàh's deceaſe, had aſſumed the power of the ſovereignty, of which before he had only enjoyed the title. Old Aheatua, according to Tuahow's account, died but a few months after this peace, and his ſon, of the ſame name, who, according to the cuſtom of this country, had already, during his father's life-time, borne the title of *te-aree* † (the king,) and received the honours annexed to that dignity, now likewiſe ſucceeded to its more eſſential part, the management of affairs. 1773. AUGUST.

This ſubject being exhauſted, we took out the map of O-Taheitee, (engraved for captain Cooke's former voyage) and laid it before Tuahow, without telling him what it was. He was however too good a pilot, not to find it out preſently; and overjoyed to ſee a repreſentation of his own country, immediately with his finger pointed out the ſituation of all the whennuas or diſtricts upon it, naming them at the ſame time in their order, as we ſaw them written

* Called *Outou* in Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 154.

† See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 158, 159, 160, 175, where this *title* is conſtantly expreſſed as his *name*.

on

1773. AUGUST. on the chart. When he came to O-Whai-urua the next diſtrict with a harbour, to the ſouth of our preſent anchoring-place, he pulled us by the arm to look on attentively, and related that there had been a ſhip (paheï) which he called paheï no Peppe, and which had lain there five days; that the people in her had received ten hogs from the natives, and that one of the crew ran away from the ſhip, and now lived upon the iſland. From this account we concluded that the Spaniards had ſent another veſſel to examine O-Taheitee, probably firſt diſcovered by their navigators, and which of late years had been ſo frequently viſited by the Engliſh, as might juſtly rouſe their attention, on account of the proximity of their own extenſive poſſeſſions in South America. Strange as it may ſeem, the name of Peppe confirmed us in our conjectures, notwithſtanding its vaſt difference from Eſpaña, from whence we ſuppoſed it originated; becauſe we were by this time well acquainted with the cuſtom of mutilating all foreign names, which the Taheitians poſſeſs, even in a higher degree than the French and Engliſh. We put ſeveral queſtions relative to this ſhip to Tuahow, but could never obtain any farther intelligence from him, except that the man who had left it, always accompanied Aheatua, and had given him the advice not to furniſh us with any hogs. Whatever ſelf-intereſted or bigoted motives that man may have had to give Aheatua ſuch an advice, yet it ſeems to have been in reality

reality the moſt friendly and valuable which he could have offered to his protector. The way to keep the riches of his ſubjects, among which are their hogs in the country, and to prevent new wants from prevailing among a happy people, was to get rid of us as ſoon as he could, by denying us the refreſhments of which we ſtood moſt in need. It were indeed ſincerely to be wiſhed, that the intercourſe which has lately ſubſiſted between Europeans and the natives of the South Sea iſlands may be broken off in time, before the corruption of manners which unhappily characteriſes civilized regions, may reach that innocent race of men, who live here fortunate in their ignorance and ſimplicity. But it is a melancholy truth, that the dictates of philanthropy do not harmonize with the political ſyſtems of Europe! 1773. AUGUST.

Several of our people having taken a walk on ſhore, the next day returned on board with the news, that they had met with Aheatua, who was at laſt come to this diſtrict in order to give us an audience. They had been admitted into his preſence without any ceremony, and his majeſty, in the midſt of all his court, had given up one half of his ſtool (pappa), to Mr. Smith, one of our mates, who was of the party. He had at the ſame time graciouſly aſſured him, that he wiſhed to ſpeak to captain Cook, and had as many hogs to give him, as *he* had hatchets to pay for them, which was by far the moſt agreeable news we had Sunday 22.

heard

1773. AUGUST. heard for ſome time. They alſo reported that they had ſeen a man reſembling an European in colour and feature, but that upon ſpeaking to him, he had retired into the croud. Whether this was really an European, or whether the ſtory which Tuahow had told us the evening before, had wrought upon the fancy of our men we cannot determine; ſo much however is certain, that none of us ever ſaw him afterwards.

Monday 23. In conſequence of Aheatua's declaration, the captains, with ſeveral officers, Dr. Sparrman, my father, and myſelf, went on ſhore early on the 23d. We proceeded about a mile along the river from which we filled our caſks, being conducted by Opao, one of the natives, who had lodged on board. A great croud coming down towards us, thoſe who ſurrounded us pulled off their upper garments, ſo as to uncover their ſhoulders, which is a mark of reſpect due to the king. We preſently joined the croud, in the midſt of whom Aheatua ſat down on a large ſtool, cut out of ſolid wood, which one of his people had hitherto carried. He immediately recollected captain Cook, and made room for him on his ſtool, while captain Furneaux, and the reſt of us, choſe large ſtones for our ſeats. An immenſe number of natives thronged about us on all ſides, and included us in a very narrow circle, increaſing the heat to ſuch a degree, that the king's attendants were frequently obliged to keep them back, by beating them.

O-AHEATUA,

O-AHEATUA, the king of O-Taheitee-eetee, (Little Taheitee) which is otherwiſe called Tiarraboo, was a youth of ſeventeen or eighteen years of age, well-made, about five feet ſix inches high, and likely to grow taller. His countenance was mild, but unmeaning; and rather expreſſed ſome ſigns of fear and diſtruſt at our firſt meeting, which ſuited ill with the ideas of majeſty, and yet are often the characteriſtics of lawleſs power. His colour was of the faireſt of his people, and his lank hair of a light-brown, turning into reddiſh at the tips, or being what is commonly called ſandy. He wore at preſent no other dreſs than a white faſh, (marro) round the waiſt to the knees, made of the beſt kind of cloth, and his head as well as all the reſt of his body was uncovered. On both ſides of him ſat ſeveral chiefs and nobles, diſtinguiſhable by their ſuperior ſtature, which is the natural effect of the immenſe quantity of food which they conſume. One of them was punctured in a ſurpriſing manner, which we had never ſeen before, large black blotches of various ſhapes, almoſt covering his arms, legs, and ſides. This man, whoſe name was E-Tee, was alſo remarkable for his enormous corpulence, and for the deference which the aree (king) paid to him, conſulting him almoſt upon every occaſion. The king, during the time he ſat on the ſtool, which was his throne, preſerved a grave or rather ſtiff deportment, ſcarce to be expected at his years, though it ſeemed to be 1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. ſtudied and aſſumed, only to make our meeting more ſolemn. This may be looked upon as a kind of recommendation by ſome men, but it is unhappily a maſk of hypocriſy, which we ſhould hardly have expected at Taheitee. After the firſt ſalutation, captain Cook preſented Aheatua with a piece of red baize, a bed-ſheet, a broad axe, a knife, nails, looking-glaſſes, and beads; and my father gave him ſimilar preſents, among which was an aigrette or tuft of feathers fixed on a wire, and dyed of a bright crimſon; upon this his majeſty ſet a particular value, and at the ſight of it the whole croud gave a general ſhout of admiration, expreſſed by the word *awbay!* The king now enquired for Mr. Banks, which only Tuahow had done before him, and then aſked how long we intended to ſtay, expreſſing at the ſame time, that he wiſhed we might remain five months. Captain Cook's anſwer was, that as he did not receive ſufficient ſupplies of proviſions, he muſt ſail immediately. The king confined his firſt requeſt to one month, and at laſt to five days, but captain Cook perſiſted in his reſolution; Aheatua then promiſed to ſend us hogs the next day, but as this had been repeatedly ſaid without any conſequence, we took no notice of it now; for even in a ſtate ſo little refined as Tiarraboo, we found that the real benevolence of the middle claſs, which manifeſted itſelf towards us in hoſpitality and a number of good

and

and noble actions, gave us no right to truſt the ſpecious politeneſs of the court and courtiers, who fed our hopes with empty promiſes. 1773. AUGUST.

During this conference the croud, amounting at leaſt to five hundred perſons, was ſo exceſſively noiſy, that it was impoſſible at times to diſtinguiſh a word; and on thoſe occaſions ſome of the king's attendants with a Stentor's voice called out *mamoò!* (be ſilent,) and enforced his command by dealing out hearty blows with a long ſtick. The aree ſeeing that captain Cook was not to be perſuaded to prolong his ſtay in this harbour, got up, and walked down along the river with us, while his attendants carried his wooden ſtool, and the kingly preſents which he had received. On this walk he laid aſide the gravity, which was not natural to him, and talked with great affability to our common people. He deſired me to tell him the names of all the perſons from on board both ſloops, who were preſent, to which he added the queſtion, whether they had their wives on board? Being anſwered in the negative, his majeſty in a fit of good humour deſired them to look for partners among the daughters of the land, which they underſtood it was meant at preſent, in the light of a mere compliment. He ſat down ſoon after cloſe to a houſe of reeds, into which we all retired, when the ſun appeared through the clouds. Here he called for ſome coco-nuts, and began to tell the ſtory of the *Pahei no Peppe*, or Spaniſh

1773. AUGUST. ſhip, of which Tuahow had given us the firſt intimation. According to the king's account it ſeemed clear, that the ſhip had been at Whaï Urua five months before us, and had lain there ten days. He added, that the captain had hanged four of his people, and that the fifth had eſcaped the ſame puniſhment by running away. This European, whom they named O-Pahoòtu, we enquired after to no purpoſe, for a long while; till his majeſty's attendants ſeeing us very eager to become acquainted with him, aſſured us he was dead. We have ſince heard that about the time mentioned by the natives, Don Juan de Langara y Huarte, ſent out from the port of Callao in Peru, had viſited O-Taheitee, but what the particulars of that voyage are, has never tranſpired. While we remained in the houſe E-Tee, the fat chief, who ſeemed to be the principal counſellor of the king, very ſeriouſly aſked us, whether we had a God *(Eatuá)* in our country, and whether we prayed to him *(epoore?)* When we told him, that we acknowledged a Divinity, who had made every thing, and was inviſible, and that we alſo were accuſtomed to addreſs our petitions to him, he ſeemed to be highly pleaſed, and repeated our words with notes of his own to ſeveral perſons who ſat round him. To us he ſeemed to ſignify, that the ideas of his countrymen correſponded with ours in this reſpect. Every thing concurs indeed to convince us, that this ſimple and only juſt conception of the Deity, has been familiar to mankind

in

in all ages and in all countries, and that only by the exceſſive cunning of a few individuals, thoſe complex ſyſtems of abſurd idolatry have been invented, which diſgrace the hiſtory of almoſt every people. The love of empire, or the purſuit after voluptuouſneſs and indolence, ſeem to have inſpired the numerous branches of heathen prieſts with the idea of keeping the minds of the people in awe, by awakening their ſuperſtition. The natural love of the miraculous has made it eaſy for them not only to put their projects in execution, but likewiſe to weave their prejudices ſo firmly into the web of human knowledge, that to this moment the greater part of mankind pay them homage, and blindly ſuffer themſelves to be cheated in the groſſeſt manner. 1773. AUGUST.

While E-Tee was converſing on religious matters, king Aheatua was playing with Captain Cook's watch. After curiouſly examining the motion of ſo many wheels, that ſeemed to move as it were ſpontaneouſly, and ſhewing his aſtoniſhment at the noiſe it made, which he could not expreſs otherwiſe than by ſaying it "ſpoke," *(parou,)* he returned it, and aſked what it was good for. With a great deal of difficulty we made him conceive that it meaſured the day, ſimilar to the ſun, by whoſe altitude in the heavens he and his people are uſed to divide their time. After this explanation, he called it a little ſun, to ſhew us that he perfectly underſtood our meaning. We were juſt getting

1773. AUGUST. ting up to return towards the beach, when a man arrived who brought a hog along with him, which the king preſented to the captain, at the ſame time promiſing to give him another. With this ſmall beginning we reſted ſatisfied, and taking our leave, without any troubleſome ceremony, only pronouncing a hearty *tayo*, (friend,) which had more meaning in it than many a ſtudied ſpeech, we returned on board.

In the afternoon the captains went on ſhore with us again to the king, whom we found where we had left him in the morning. He took that opportunity of requeſting the captains again to prolong their ſtay at leaſt a few days; but he received the ſame anſwer as before, and was plainly told, that his refuſing to provide us with live-ſtock was the reaſon of their intended departure. Upon this he immediately ſent for two hogs, and preſented one to each of the captains, for which he received ſome iron-wares in return. A highlander, who was one of our marines, was ordered to play the bagpipe, and its uncouth muſic, though almoſt inſufferable to our ears, delighted the king and his ſubjects to a degree which we could hardly have imagined poſſible. The diſtruſt which we perceived in his looks at our firſt interview was now worn off; and if we had ſtaid long enough, an unreſerved confidence might have taken its place, to which his youth and good-nature ſeemed to make him inclinable. The ſtudied gravity which he had then affected,

fected, was likewiſe laid aſide at preſent, and ſome of his actions rather partook of puerility, among which I cannot help mentioning his amuſement of chopping little ſticks and cutting down plantations of bananas with one of our hatchets. But, inſtead of cultivating any farther acquaintance with him, we took our laſt leave towards the cloſe of the evening, and returned to the ſloops, which unmoored before night. 1773. AUGUST.

The inhabitants ſeeing us prepare for ſailing the next morning, came off in a vaſt number of ſmall canoes, loaded with coco-nuts and other vegetable proviſions, which they ſold exceſſively cheap, rather than miſs the laſt opportunity of obtaining European goods. The taſte for baubles, which unaccountably prevails all over the world in different degrees, was ſo extravagant here, that a ſingle bead was eagerly purchaſed with a dozen of the fineſt coco-nuts, and ſometimes preferred even to a nail, though the laſt might be of ſome uſe, and the bead could ſerve merely as an inſignificant ornament. We obſerved that the trade was carried on much fairer this time than at our arrival, the natives being perhaps apprehenſive that any little fraud might break off a commerce, in which they now appeared deeply intereſted. They accompanied us for this purpoſe till we were a mile or two without the reefs, and then returned to the beach, where we had left lieutenant Pickerſ- Tueſday 24.

gill

1773. AUGUST. gill with a boat, in order to take advantage of their preſent diſpoſition.

We were now able to breathe a little, after the continual hurry which had been the neceſſary conſequence of the multiplicity of new objects around us, and of the ſhort ſpace of time which we had to obſerve them. This interval of repoſe was the more acceptable, as it gave us leiſure to indulge the reflections which had crouded upon us during our ſtay. The reſult of theſe was a conviction, that this iſland is indeed one of the happieſt ſpots on the globe. The rocks of New Zeeland appeared at firſt in a favourable light to our eyes, long tired with the conſtant view of ſea, and ice, and ſky; but time ſerved to undeceive us, and gave us daily cauſe of diſlike, till we formed a juſt conception of that rude chaotic country. But O-Taheitee, which had preſented a pleaſing proſpect at a diſtance, and diſplayed its beauty as we approached, became more enchanting to us at every excurſion which we made on its plains. Our long run out of ſight of land might have been ſuppoſed at firſt to have had the ſame effect as at New Zeeland; but our ſtay confirmed inſtead of deſtroying the emotions which we had felt at the firſt ſight; even though we had no room to be ſo well pleaſed with the refreſhments we had obtained, which were not by far ſo plentiful as the fiſh and wild-fowl of New Zeeland, and ſtill obliged us to have recourſe

recourſe to ſalt proviſions. The ſeaſon of the year, which anſwered to our month of February, had naturally brought on a ſcarcity of fruits; for though it does not manifeſt itſelf here by refrigerating the air, as in countries remote from the tropics, yet it is the ſeaſon when all vegetation recovers the juices which have formed the late crop, and prepares them for a new one. At this time ſeveral trees entirely ſhed their leaves, ſeveral plants died away to the very root, and the remaining ones looked parched on account of the want of rain, which commonly takes place then, becauſe the ſun is in the oppoſite hemiſphere. The whole plain therefore was arrayed in a ſober browniſh and ſometimes ſallow colour. Only the lofty mountains preſerved richer tints in their foreſts, which are ſupplied with more moiſture from the clouds that hang on their ſummits almoſt every day. From thence, among other things, the natives brought great quantities of wild plantanes *(vehee)*, and that perfumed wood *(e-ahaï)*, with which they give their coco-nut oil *(monòë)*, a very fragrant ſmell. The ſhattered ſtate in which we ſaw the tops of theſe mountains, ſeemed to have been the work of an earthquake; and the lavas, of which many of the mountains conſiſt, and of which the natives make ſeveral tools, convinced us of the exiſtence of former volcanoes on this iſland. The rich ſoil of the plains, which is a vegetable mould, mixed with volcanic decays, and a black irony ſand, which is

1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. often found at the foot of the hills, are farther proofs of this aſſertion. The exterior ranges of hills are ſometimes entirely barren, and contain a great quantity of yellowiſh clay, mixed with iron-ochre; but others are covered with mould, and wooded like the higher mountains. Pieces of quartz are ſometimes met with here, but we never ſaw indications of precious minerals or metals of any kind, iron excepted, and of that there were but ſmall remains in the lavas which we picked up; but the mountains may perhaps contain ſome iron-ore rich enough for fuſion. As to to the piece of ſalt-petre, as big as an egg, which Captain Wallis mentions as a product of Taheitee *, with all reſpect for his nautical abilities, I beg leave to doubt of its exiſtence, ſince native ſalt-petre has never yet been found in ſolid lumps, as appears from Cronſtedt's Mineralogy.

The view of O-Taheitee, along which we now ſailed to the northward, ſuggeſted theſe curſory obſervations on its foſſil productions, while our eyes remained eagerly fixed on the ſpot which had afforded us ſuch a fund of real amuſement and inſtruction. Our reflections were only interrupted by the ſummons to dine on freſh pork, which was inſtantly obeyed with an alacrity, that ſufficiently proved our long abſtinence. We were agreeably ſurpriſed to find this pork entirely free from the luſcious richneſs which makes it reſiſt the ſtomach ſo ſoon in Eu-

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. I. p. 457.

rope;

rope; the fat was to be compared to marrow, and the lean had almoſt the tender taſte of veal. The vegetable diet which the hogs are uſed to at O-Taheitee, ſeems to be the principal cauſe of this difference, and may have had ſome influence even on the natural inſtincts of theſe animals. They were of that ſmall breed which is commonly called the Chineſe, and had not thoſe pendulous ears, which according to the ingenious count de Buffon, are the characters of ſlavery in animals. They were likewiſe much cleanlier than our European hogs, and did not ſeem to have that ſingular cuſtom of wallowing in the mire. It is certain that theſe animals are a part of the real riches of the Taheitians, and we ſaw great numbers of them at Aitepèha, though the natives took great pains to conceal them. But they are ſo far from being their principal dependence, that I believe their total extirpation would be no great loſs, eſpecially as they are now entirely the property of the chiefs. They kill their hogs very ſeldom, perhaps only on certain ſolemn occaſions; but at thoſe times the chiefs eat pork with the ſame unbounded greedineſs, with which certain ſets of men are reproached at the turtle-feaſts in England; while the common ſort rarely, if ever taſte a little bit, which is always held as a great dainty among them. Notwithſtanding this, all the trouble of breeding, bringing up, and fattening the hogs is allotted to the loweſt claſs of people. 1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. Wedneſd. 25. We were becalmed in the evening, and during a great part of the night, but had a S. E. wind the next morning, ſo that we ſtood in ſhore again, in ſight of the northern-moſt part of O-Taheitee, and of the adjacent iſle of Eimeo. The mountains here formed larger maſſes, which had a more grand effect than at Aitepeha. The ſlopes of the lower hills were likewiſe more conſiderable, though almoſt entirely deſtitute of trees or verdure; and the ambient border of level land, was much more extenſive hereabouts, and ſeemed in ſome places to be above a mile broad. Towards ten o'clock we had the pleaſure to ſee ſeveral canoes coming off from the ſhore towards us. Their long narrow ſails, conſiſting of ſeveral mats ſowed together, their ſtreamers of feathers, and the heap of coco-nuts and bananas on board, had all together a picturеſque appearance. For a few beads and nails they diſpoſed of their cargoes, and returned on ſhore to take in another. About noon our boat arrived with lieutenant Pickerſgill, who had been very ſucceſsful in trading at Aitepeha, having purchaſed nine hogs and a quantity of fruit. His majeſty, Aheatua, had been preſent at the trading-place the whole time, and after ſeating himſelf near the heap of iron wares, which our people had brought on ſhore, deſired to market for them, and was extremely equitable in giving hatchets of different kinds for hogs of proportionate ſizes. In the intervals however, he amuſed himſelf as he had done the evening

evening before, with chopping ſmall ſticks, with which our ſailors were much entertained, and after their manner made many ſhrewd obſervations on triflers. Mr. Pickerſgill having expended his ſtock in trade, put off from Aitepeha in the afternoon, and came the ſame evening to Hiddea, the diſtrict of O-Rettee (Ereti) where M. de Bougainville lay at an anchor in 1768. Here he was hoſpitably entertained by the worthy old chief, who is ſo juſtly celebrated by that gallant French navigator; and the next morning his brother Tarooree embarked with our officer, in order to viſit the ſhips which they ſaw in the offing. When he came on board we found he had a kind of impediment in his organs of ſpeech, by which means he ſubſtituted a K wherever the language required a T; a fault which we afterwards obſerved in ſeveral other individuals. He favoured us with his company at dinner, as well as another native named O-Wahow, who was the firſt that had come aboard from this part of the iſland, and to whom my father had immediately preſented a few beads and a ſmall nail, merely to try his diſpoſition. In return he produced a fiſh-hook neatly made of mother of pearl, which he gave to his new friend. A larger nail was the reward of this good-natured action; and on the receipt of this he ſent his boy to the ſhore in his canoe. Towards four o'clock the canoe returned, and brought on board this man's brother, and a preſent of a number of coco-nuts, ſeveral bunches

1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. bunches of bananas, and a clothing-mat. There was ſomething ſo generous in O-Wahow's way of acting, above all the little ideas of bartering, that we could not fail to expreſs the higheſt regard for him. A much more conſiderable preſent was returned to him, rather to confirm him in his noble ſentiments, than as a compenſation for his gift. With that he retired in the evening, promiſing to return to us again, and expreſſing ſuch extravagant emotions of joy as are commonly the effects of unexpected good fortune.

In the mean while we gradually approached the ſhore, a faint breeze helping us on, and the evening-ſun illuminating the landſcape with the richeſt golden tints. We now diſcerned that long projecting point, which from the obſervation made upon it, had been named Point Venus, and eaſily agreed, that this was by far the moſt beautiful part of the iſland. The diſtrict of Matavaï, which now opened to our view, exhibited a plain of ſuch an extent as we had not expected, and the valley which we traced running up between the mountains, was itſelf a very ſpacious grove, compared to the little narrow glens in Tiarraboo. We hauled round the point about three o'clock, and ſaw it crouded with a prodigious number of people, who gazed at us with fixed attention; but as ſoon as we came to an anchor, in the fine bay which it ſhelters, the greater part of them ran very precipitately round the whole beach, and acroſs

One-

One-tree-hill to O-Parre, the next diſtrict to the weſtward. Among the whole croud, we ſaw only a ſingle man whoſe ſhoulders were covered with a garment, and he, according to our friend O-Wahow's teſtimony, was O-Too, the king of O-Taheitee-Nue (the Greater Taheitee.) His perſon was tall, and very advantageouſly proportioned, but he ran very nimbly along with his ſubjects, which the natives on board attributed to his apprehenſions on our account. 1773. AUGUST.

Though it was near ſun-ſet when we came to an anchor, yet our decks were in a ſhort time crouded with natives of all ranks, who recognized their old friends in many of our officers and ſailors, with a degree of reciprocal joy, which cannot eaſily be deſcribed. Among them was the old, venerable O-Whaw, whoſe peaceable character and good offices to our people, are taken notice of in the account of Lieutenant Cook's firſt voyage, particularly upon the occaſion when one of the natives was murdered *. He immediately recollected Mr. Pickerſgill, and calling him by his Taheitean name, Petrodero, enumerated on his fingers, that this was the third viſit he made to the iſland, that gentleman having been here both in the Dolphin and the Endeavour. A chief, named Maratata ‡, paid captain Cook a viſit with his lady, (Tedua)-Erararee, who was a very well-looking young woman, and both received a number

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 83, 90, 91.

‡ Ibid. p. 157. Maraïtata.

of

1773. AUGUST. of preſents, though it appeared that theſe were their ſole motives for coming on board. A very tall, fat man, the father-in-law of Maratata, accompanied them, and was equally fortunate in collecting preſents amongſt us, which he took no other method to obtain, than down-right begging. They all exchanged names with us in ſign of friendſhip, every one chooſing a particular friend, to whom he was attached; cuſtoms which we had never obſerved in our former anchoring place, where the natives were infinitely more reſerved, and in ſome degree diffident of our intentions. Towards ſeven o'clock they left the ſhip, not without promiſing to return the next morning, which, from the good reception they had met with, did not ſeem to admit of a doubt.

All night the moon ſhone clear in a cloudleſs ſky, and ſilvered over the poliſhed ſurface of the ſea, while the landſcape lay before us like the gay production of a fertile and elegant fancy. A perfect ſilence reigned in the air, which was agreeably interrupted by the voices of ſeveral natives that had remained on board, and enjoyed the beauty of the night with their friends, whom they had known in a former voyage. They were ſeated at the ſides of the veſſel, and diſcourſed on ſeveral topics, making their words more intelligible by different ſigns. We liſtened to them, and found that they chiefly put queſtions concerning what had happened to our people ſince their laſt ſeparation, and gave

gave accounts in their turn of the tragical fate of Tootahah, and his friends. Gibſon, the marine, who was ſo much delighted with this iſland, in captain Cook's former voyage, that he made an attempt to ſtay behind*, was now chiefly engaged in this converſation, as he underſtood more of the language than the reſt of the crew, and was on that account greatly valued by the natives. The confidence which theſe people placed in us, and their familiar, unreſerved behaviour, gave us infinite ſatisfaction, as it contraſted ſo well with the conduct of the people of Aitepèha. We now ſaw the character of the natives in a more favourable light than ever, and were convinced that the remembrance of injuries, and the ſpirit of revenge, did not enter into the compoſition of the good and ſimple Taheitians. It muſt ſurely be a comfortable reflection to every ſenſible mind, that philanthropy ſeems to be natural to mankind, and that the ſavage ideas of diſtruſt, malevolence, and revenge, are only the conſequences of a gradual depravation of manners. There are few inſtances where people, who are not abſolutely ſunk to a ſtate of barbariſm, have acted contrary to this general peaceable principle. The diſcoveries of Columbus, Cortez, and Pizarro in America, and thoſe of Mendanna, Quiros, Schouten, Taſman ‡, and Wallis in the South Sea, agree in this particular. It is highly probable, 1773. AUGUST.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 176, 179.

‡ We except the ſavages of New Zeeland.

1773. AUGUST. that the attack which the Taheitians made upon the Dolphin, took its origin from ſome outrage unknowingly committed by the Europeans; and ſuppoſing it did not, if ſelf-preſervation be one of the firſt laws of nature, ſurely from all appearances theſe people had a right to look on our men as a ſet of invaders, and what is more than all, to be apprehenſive that even their liberty was at ſtake. When, after a fatal diſplay of ſuperior European force, they were convinced that nothing farther than a ſhort ſtay for refreſhment was intended, that the ſtrangers who came among them were not entirely deſtitude of humane and equitable ſentiments; in ſhort, when they found that Britons were not more ſavage than themſelves, they were ready to open their arms to them, they forgot that they had had a difference, and bid them partake of each kindly production of their iſle. They all exerted themſelves in acts of hoſpitality and teſtimonies of friendſhip from the loweſt ſubject to the queen, that every one of their gueſts might have reaſon to ſay, he regretted his departure from this friendly ſhore:

Invitus, regina, tuo de litore ceſſi! VIRGIL.

CHAP.

1773. AUGUST.

CHAP. IX.

Account of our Tranſactions at Mataväi Bay.

CAPTAIN Cook, in his voyage in the Endeavour, had obſerved that, in order to obtain a ſufficient ſupply of refreſhments at Mataväi Bay, it was abſolutely neceſſary to conciliate the favour of the ſovereign, unleſs peaceable meaſures were entirely to be rejected, and the tragedies of former times be repeated. With this view he reſolved to begin his operations here in the morning, by going to the province of O-Parre, where king O-Too reſided. He did not, however, leave the ſhip till Maratata and his wife had been on board agreeable to their promiſe. In return for the preſents which they had received the evening before, they gave ſome pieces of their beſt cloth to the captain, and were very proud to be admitted into the great cabin, while the reſt of their countrymen were obliged to ſtay without. As ſoon as Captain Furneaux was come on board from the Adventure, Captain Cook embarked in the pinnace with him, accompanied by Doctor Sparrman, my father, and myſelf. Maratata, without any ceremony, likewiſe came in with his wife, and immediately occupied the beſt place in the ſtern. A croud of attendants followed them, till the boat was ſo full, that our people found it impoſſible to ply Thurſday 26.

1773. AUGUST. their oars. The greater part of theſe unbidden gueſts were therefore obliged to leave it, to their viſible diſappointment; for they ſeemed to have ſet a great value upon the liberty of ſitting in our boat, which was freſh painted, and had a pleaſant green awning to ſkreen us from the ſun. We rowed acroſs the bay, and approached the ſhore near a point where a thick ſhrubbery ſurrounded a maraï of ſtone, ſuch as we had already obſerved in Aitepèha. This cemetery and place of worſhip was known to Captain Cook by the name of Tootahah's marai, but when he called it by this name, Maratata interrupted him, intimating that it was no longer Tootahah's after his death, but was known at preſent as O-Too's maraï. A fine moral for princes, daily reminding them of mortality whilſt they live, and teaching them that after death they cannot even call the ground their own which their dead corſe occupies!—The chief and his wife on paſſing by it, took their upper garment from their ſhoulders, which is a mark of reſpect indiſcriminately paid at the maraï by all ranks of people, and ſeems to annex a particular idea of ſanctity to theſe places. Perhaps they are ſuppoſed to be favoured with the more immediate preſence of the Deity, agreeably to the opinion that has been entertained of public places of worſhip at all times and among all nations.

After paſſing the maraï, we rowed for ſome time cloſe along one of the fineſt diſtricts of O-Taheitee, where the plains

plains ſeemed to be very ſpacious, and the mountains ran with a very eaſy ſlope into a long point. A prodigious number of inhabitants lined the ſhores, which were covered with graſſes, and ſhaded with numerous palms cloſe to the water's edge. Here we landed, amidſt the joyful acclamations of the multitude, and were conducted to a group of houſes, hid under ſpreading fruit-trees. Before one of the largeſt we ſaw an area twenty or thirty yards ſquare, ſurrounded by an encloſure of reeds, not above eighteen inches high, in the middle of which the king was ſeated croſs-legged on the ground, in a great circle of perſons of both ſexes, who ſeemed to be of the higheſt rank in the iſland from their ſtature, colour and deportment. Some of our ſailors laid down a number of preſents before him, which ſerved as Captain Cook's credentials. We all followed, and were intreated to ſit down around the king. The reſpect which was paid to the ſovereign by all ranks of people, and which conſiſted in uncovering the ſhoulders in his preſence, did not prevent them from thronging around us on all ſides with the greateſt eagerneſs of curioſity. The croud was beyond compariſon more numerous than at our interview with Aheatua, and the king's attendants in different corners of the area were obliged to exert themſelves in order to keep them within bounds. One in particular diſplayed his activity in a furious manner to clear the way for us, by

1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. by beating them unmercifully, breaking ſeveral ſticks on their heads, and no doubt breaking their heads too.

E come quel ch' ancor de la pazzia
Non era ben guarito interamente ;
Per allargare innanzi al Re la via,
Menava quella mazza fra la gente,
Ch' un imbriaco ſvizzero paria
Di quei, che con villan modo inſolente,
Sogliono innanzi 'l Papa il dì di feſta,
Rompere a chi le braccia, a chi la teſta, TASSONI.

Notwithſtanding this ſevere treatment, they returned as obſtinately to the charge as an Engliſh mob, but bore the inſolence of the king's officers with more patience. The king of O-Taheitee had never ſeen our people during captain Cook's firſt voyage, probably in conſequence of the political views of his uncle Tootahah, who at that time had the whole management of affairs in his hands, and who might be apprehenſive of loſing his conſequence among the Europeans, if they ſhould once know that he was not the greateſt man on the iſland. Whether Tootahah's power was to be conſidered as an uſurpation, or not, is not eaſily to be determined; ſo much however may be alledged againſt him, that the king himſelf ſeemed to us to be a man of twenty-four or twenty-five years of age. O-Too was the talleſt man whom we ſaw on the whole iſland which he governs, meaſuring ſix feet and three inches in height. His whole body was proportionately ſtrong and well-made,

without

without any tendency to corpulence. His head, notwithſtanding a certain gloomineſs which ſeemed to expreſs a fearful diſpoſition, had a majeſtic and intelligent air, and there was great expreſſion in his full black eyes. He wore ſtrong whiſkers, which with his beard, and a prodigious growth of curled hair, were all of a jetty black. His portrait is engraved from Mr. Hodges's drawing, for captain Cook's account of this voyage. The ſame habit of body, and the ſame ſingular quantity of hair, which ſtood puffed up all about the head intricately entwined and curled, characteriſed his brothers, one a youth of about ſixteen, another ten years of age, and likewiſe his ſiſters, of which the eldeſt now preſent ſeemed about twenty-ſix. The women of O-Taheitee in general, cut their hair rather ſhort; it was therefore a very uncommon appearance on the heads of theſe ladies, and may, for ought we know, be a privilege reſerved only to thoſe of the royal family. Their rank however did not exclude them from the general etiquette of uncovering the ſhoulders in the king's preſence, a ceremony which afforded the whole ſex numberleſs opportunities of diſplaying an elegant figure to the greateſt advantage. The ſimple drapery of a long white piece of cloth, like a muſlin, was to be turned an hundred different ways, according to the convenience, or the talents and fine taſte of the wearer; no general faſhions force them to diſfigure, inſtead of adorning themſelves, but an innate gracefulneſs 1773. AUGUST.

was

1773. AUGUST. was the companion of ſimplicity. The only perſon exempted from the general cuſtom of uncovering the ſhoulder was the king's *hòa* *, one of his ſervants, whom we could not better compare than to the lord in waiting, and of whom we underſtood there were twelve who officiated by turns. Some of them were the ſame gentlemen who had diſplayed their dexterity before, by dealing out hearty blows to the crowd. The number of uncles, aunts, couſins, and other relations of his majeſty, amongſt whom we were ſeated, vied with each other in beſtowing kind looks upon us, making profeſſions of friendſhip, and—begging for beads and nails. The methods to obtain theſe trifles from us were very different, and conſequently not always equally ſucceſsful. When we diſtributed a few beads to one ſet of people, ſome young fellows would impudently thruſt their hands in between them, and demand their ſhare, as though it had been their due; theſe attempts we always made it our buſineſs to diſcourage by a flat refuſal. It was already become difficult to deny a venerable old man, who with a hand not yet palſied by age, vigorouſly preſſed ours, and with a perfect reliance upon our good nature, whiſpered the petition in our ears. The elderly ladies in general made ſure of a prize, by a little artful flattery. They commonly enquired for our names, and then adopted

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 243. *eowa no l'earee*, by which is meant *e-hoa no te aree*, (a friend to the king.)

us

us as their ſons, at the ſame time introducing to us the ſeveral relations, whom we acquired by this means. After a ſeries of little careſſes, the old lady began, *Aima poe-èetee no te tayo mettua?* "Have you not a little bead for your kind mother?" Such a trial of our filial attachment always had its deſired effect, as we could not fail to draw the moſt favourable concluſions from thence in regard to the general kind diſpoſition of the whole people: for to expect a good quality in others, of which we ourſelves are not poſſeſſed, is a refinement in manners peculiar to poliſhed nations. Our other female relations in the bloom of youth, with ſome ſhare of beauty, and conſtant endeavours to pleaſe, laid a claim to our affections by giving themſelves the tender name of ſiſters; and all the world will agree that this attack was perfectly irreſiſtible. 1773. AUGUST.

In a little time we met with an ample return for our preſents, eſpecially from the ladies, who immediately ſent their attendants (Towtows) for large pieces of their beſt cloth, dyed of a ſcarlet, roſe, or ſtraw colour, and perfumed with their choiceſt fragrant oils. Theſe they put over our cloathes, and loaded us ſo well that we found it difficult to move in them. A variety of queſtions concerning Tabane (Mr. Banks), Tolano (Dr. Solander), and many of their former acquaintances, immediately followed the more material buſineſs of receiving preſents; but Tupaya (Tupia) or as he was more commonly called Parua, notwithſtanding

1773. AUGUST. the extenſive knowledge of which he ſeems to have been poſſeſſed, and which we expected ſhould have endeared him to his countrymen, was only mentioned by one or two perſons, who received the news of his death with perfect indifference. Whilſt we were engaged in this converſation, our Highlander performed on the bag-pipe to the infinite ſatisfaction of all the Taheitians, who liſtened to him with a mixture of admiration and delight. King O-Too in particular was ſo well pleaſed with his muſical abilities, which I have already obſerved were mean enough, that he ordered him a large piece of the coarſer cloth as a reward for his trouble.

As this viſit was merely a viſit of ceremony, we ſoon got up to return to our boat, but were detained a little longer by the arrival of E-Happaï* the father of the ſovereign. He was a tall, thin man, with a grey beard and hair, ſeemed to be of a great age, but was not yet entirely worn out. He received the preſents which our captains made him, in a cold careleſs manner, which is natural to old people whoſe ſenſes are conſiderably impaired. The accounts of former voyagers had already appriſed us of that ſtrange conſtitution, by virtue of which the ſon aſſumes the ſovereignty in his father's life time†, but we could not without ſurprize, behold the aged Happaï,

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II, p. 154. Whappai. † Ibid, p. 154, 243.

naked

naked to the waiſt in his ſon's preſence, conform to the general cuſtom. Thus the ideas univerſally annexed to conſanguinity, are ſuppreſſed in order to give greater weight to the regal dignity, and I cannot help thinking that ſuch a ſacrifice to political authority, argues a greater degree of civilization than has been allowed to the Taheitians by our former navigators. However, though Happaï was not inveſted with the ſupreme command, his birth and rank entitled him to deference from the common people, and to a proper ſupport from the king. The province or diſtrict of O-Parre, was therefore under his immediate orders, and ſupplied not only his wants, but thoſe alſo of his attendants. After a very ſhort ſtay with this old chief, we parted from him, and from the king his ſon, and returned on board in the pinnace, which Maratata had occupied during the whole time of our interview, priding himſelf very much on his ſuppoſed intereſt with us. During our abſence ſeveral tents had been erected on Point Venus, for the convenience of our wood-cutters and waterers, and the ſick of the Adventure. The aſtronomers of both veſſels had likewiſe fixed their obſervatory nearly on the ſame ſpot, where Mr. Green and captain Cook had obſerved the tranſit of Venus. We found a great number of inhabitants about the veſſels, and among the reſt ſeveral of the better ſort of people, who having acceſs to all parts of the ſhip, followed every body with their petitions for

1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. beads and other preſents. The captains to evade their endleſs importunities went on ſhore to the tents, and thither we accompanied them in order to ſee what natural productions the country afforded. Another excurſion of the ſame kind was made in the afternoon, but as both were confined to an inconſiderable diſtance, our diſcoveries only conſiſted of a few plants and birds which we had not ſeen at Aitepèha.

Friday 27. The next morning very early, a number of canoes came to the ſhip from Parre, and in one of the ſmalleſt, the king in perſon brought many preſents to captain Cook. A live hog, a very large fiſh called a cavalha *(ſcomber hippos)*, and an albecore ready dreſſed, about four feet long, with many baſkets of palm-leaves containing bread-fruit and bananas, were handed up to the deck ſucceſſively. Captain Cook ſtood on the ſhip's ſide, entreating his majeſty to come on board, but he did not ſtir from his ſeat, till an immenſe quantity of the beſt cloth of the country had been wrapped round the captain, encreaſing his bulk to a prodigious dimenſion. After this ceremony, Too, with a countenance which betrayed a good deal of diffidence, ventured to come upon the quarter-deck, and embraced the captain, who in conjunction with his officers and ourſelves, deviſed all poſſible means to quiet theſe apprehenſions. Our quarter-deck was now ſo crouded with the king's relations, that he was requeſted to come into the cabin;

cabin; but the deſcent between decks was ſo hazardous an enterprize according to his ideas, that he could by no means be prevailed on to attempt it, till he had ſent down his brother, a fine active youth about ſixteen years of age, who placed a perfect confidence in us. Having reconnoitred the cabin, and finding it to his liking, he made his report accordingly to the king, who immediately ventured down. He received a great number of valuable preſents from captain Cook, who began to find himſelf very warm under his load of cloth. The principal people accompanied his majeſty into the cabin, but they crouded in ſo faſt, that it was almoſt impoſſible to ſtir for them. Every one of theſe, as I have already mentioned, choſe his particular friend amongſt us, and reciprocal gifts ſealed every new connection. Captain Furneaux being arrived on board, we took an opportunity of ſitting down to our breakfaſt, when they ſeemed perfectly eaſy, having prevailed on them to ſeat themſelves on chairs, which ſtruck them with their novelty and convenience. The king paid great attention to our breakfaſt, which was a mixture of Engliſh and Taheitian proviſions, and was much ſurpriſed to ſee us drink hot-water *, and eat bread-fruit with oil †. Though he could not be perſuaded to taſte our food, ſeveral of his attendants were not ſo cautious, but eat and drank very heartily of whatever we ſet

AUGUST. 1773.

* Tea. † Butter.

before

1773. AUGUST. before them. After breakfaſt O-Too ſaw my father's ſpaniel, a fine dog, but in very bad order at that time, and very dirty from the pitch, tar, and other uncleanlineſs on board the ſhip. Notwithſtanding theſe defects, the king expreſſed a great deſire of becoming his maſter, and made a requeſt to that purpoſe, which was readily complied with. He immediately commanded one of the lords in waiting, or *hòas*, to take the dog into his cuſtody; and in conformity to his orders, this man ever after carried the dog behind his majeſty. The king ſoon after told captain Cook that he wiſhed to return on ſhore, and went on deck with all his attendants, carrying with him the preſents which he had received. Captain Furneaux took that opportunity of preſenting to him a fine pair of goats, male and female, which he had brought from on board his own veſſel the ſame morning. We ſucceeded very well in our attempt to make him comprehend the value of theſe animals, and the manner of treating them; for he promiſed that he would never kill nor ſeparate them, and take great care of their offſpring. The pinnace was now ready, and the king embarked in it, with the captains and ſeveral other gentlemen, and proceeded to the royal reſidence at O-Parre. During this paſſage he appeared highly contented, aſked a number of queſtions, and ſeemed to have entirely conquered his former fears. His enquiries chiefly concerned the goats, which had attracted all his attention, and we could

could never tell him too often what they ſhould feed upon, and how they were to be managed. As ſoon as we came on ſhore, we pointed out to him a fine ſpot of ground, covered with a good bed of graſſes, in the ſhade of bread-fruit trees, and deſired that the goats might always be kept in ſuch places. At our landing the ſhore was crouded with people, who expreſſed their joy on ſeeing their ſovereign by loud acclamations. Among them we diſcerned the late Tootahah's mother, a venerable grey-headed matron, who, on ſeeing captain Cook, ran to embrace him, as the friend of her deceaſed ſon, and wept aloud at the remembrance of her loſs. We paid the tribute of admiration due to ſuch ſenſibility, which endears our fellow-creatures to us wherever it is met with, and affords an undeniable proof of the original excellence of the human heart. 1773. AUGUST.

From hence we haſtened away to our tents at Point Venus, where the natives carried on a regular trade with vegetables of all ſorts, which ſold at very low rates, a ſingle bead being given for a baſket of bread-fruit or a bunch of coco-nuts. My father there met his friend O Wàhow, who preſented him with a great quantity of fruit, ſome fiſh, ſome good cloth, and ſome mother of pearl hooks. This preſent deſerved a compenſation, but the generous Taheitian abſolutely refuſed to take any thing, ſaying that he gave theſe things as a friend, and without any lucrative view. It ſeemed as if every thing had

1773. AUGUST. had conſpired this day to give us a favourable idea of the amiable nation among whom we reſided.

We returned on board to dinner, and paſſed the afternoon there in the occupations of deſcribing and drawing objects of natural hiſtory. The decks in the mean while were conſtantly crouded with natives of both ſexes, prying into every corner, and ſtealing whenever they found an opportunity. In the evening we beheld a ſcene new and ſtriking to ourſelves, though familiar to thoſe who had been at Taheitee before. A great number of women of the loweſt claſs, having been previouſly engaged by our ſailors, remained on board at ſun-ſet, after the departure of all their country people to the ſhore. We had obſerved inſtances of the venality of the Taheitian females at Aitepèha; but whatever might have been their condeſcenſion towards our people in day-time, they had never ventured to paſs a night on board. The women of Matavai had ſtudied the diſpoſitions of Britiſh ſeamen much better, and knew that they ran no riſk by entruſting themſelves to their care; but on the contrary might make ſure of every bead, nail, hatchet, or ſhirt which their lovers could muſter. This evening was therefore as completely dedicated to mirth and pleaſure, as if we had lain at Spithead inſtead of O-Taheitee. Before it was perfectly dark the women aſſembled on the forecaſtle, and one of them blowing a flute with the noſtrils, all the reſt danced a variety of dances

dances uſual in their country, amongſt which there were ſome that did not exactly correſpond with our ideas of decency. However, if we conſider that the ſimplicity of their education and of their dreſs, makes many actions perfectly innocent here, which, according to our cuſtoms, would be blameable, we cannot impute that degree of unbounded licentiouſneſs to them, with which the proſtitutes of civilized Europe are unhappily reproached. As ſoon as it was dark they retired below decks, and if their lovers were of ſuch a quality as to afford them freſh pork, they ſupped without reſerve, though they had before refuſed to eat in the preſence of their own countrymen, agreeably to that incomprehenſible cuſtom which ſeparates the ſexes at their meals. The quantities of pork which they could conſume were aſtoniſhing, and their greedineſs plainly indicated that they were rarely if ever indulged with that delicious food in their own families. The inſtances of ſenſibility in Tootahah's mother and in O-Wahow, and the favourable ideas which we had from thence formed of the Taheitians were ſo recent in our memories, that we were much hurt at the ſight of theſe creatures, who had entirely forgot the duties of life, and abandoned themſelves to the brutal ſway of the paſſions. That there ſhould exiſt ſo great a degree of immorality in a nation, otherwiſe ſo happy in its ſimplicity, and in the fewneſs of its wants, is a reflection very diſgraceful to human nature in general, which, viewed to its

1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. greateſt advantage here, is nevertheleſs imperfect. Is it not to be lamented, that the beſt gifts of a benevolent Creator ſeem to be the moſt liable to frequent abuſe, and that nothing is ſo eaſy to mankind as error?

Saturday 28. Early the next morning O-Too, with his ſiſter Tedua-Towraï, and ſeveral relations, came along-ſide, and ſent up a hog and a large albecore into our veſſel, but would not come on board. He had a ſimilar preſent for captain Furneaux, but refuſed to go to the Adventure till my father went with him. The ceremony of ſwaddling the captain in O-Taheitee cloth was performed again before his majeſty ventured on board; but that being over, he ſeemed to think himſelf ſafe amongſt us, and came on the deck, where captain Furneaux gave him a variety of preſents. His ſiſter Tedua-Towraï was on board the Reſolution in the mean while, and all the women paid her the ſame reſpect by uncovering the ſhoulders, which the whole nation owes to the king. The active youth *T'-Aree* WATOW, who was with the king his brother, had the ſame honours paid to him; and it appeared to us that the title *Aree*, though common to all the chiefs of diſtricts, and the nobility in general, was yet applied by way of excellence to the perſons of the royal family. O-Too ſoon left the Adventure, rejoined his ſiſter on board the Reſolution, and was accompanied by both the captains to Parre.

On

On the 29th at day-break we landed at our tents, and proceeded into the country with an intention to examine its productions. A copious dew, which had fallen during night, had refreſhed the whole vegetable creation, and contributed, together with the early hour of the morning, to make our walk extremely pleaſant. We found but few natives at the tents, ſome of whom attended us to the ford in the river, and for a bead a-piece carried us acroſs, where it was twenty yards wide, without our wetting a foot. As we entered the grove, we perceived the inhabitants in their houſes juſt getting up, and ſaw many of them performing their cuſtomary ablution in the adjacent river of Matavaï. There can be no doubt, that frequent bathing in this warm climate is extremely ſalutary, and particularly in the morning, when the water, being freſh and cool, cannot but be highly inſtrumental in bracing the fibres, which might otherwiſe become too much relaxed. The cleanlineſs which reſults from this cuſtom, is certainly one of the beſt preſervatives againſt putrid diſorders, and has the farther advantage of making theſe people enjoy the comforts of ſociety in a higher degree than thoſe ſavages who ſeem to ſhun the water, and become indifferent to each other, and loathſome to ſtrangers by their ſqualid appearance, and fetid exhalations. We walked on till we came to a little hut, the lowly dwelling of a poor widow with a numerous family. Her eldeſt ſon, Noona, a lively boy

1773. AUGUST. Sunday 29.

1773. AUGUST. about twelve years old, had always been particularly attached to the Europeans, and being extremely quick of apprehenſion, underſtood us much better at half a word, than many of his countrymen with all the geſtures we could invent, and after we had ranſacked our vocabularies. This boy, who, with a dark almoſt cheſnut-brown colour, combined a ſet of pleaſing, good-natured features, had agreed the evening before, to become our guide on this day's excurſion. At our approach we found his mother, who had provided a number of coco-nuts and ſome other proviſions for us, ſitting on the ſtones before her cottage, and her children aſſembled about her, the youngeſt of which was not above four years old. She ſeemed to be active enough, but however of ſuch an age, that we had ſome difficulty to believe her the mother of ſuch young children, in a country where we knew that the commerce of the ſexes begins at an early age. The arrival of a well-looking woman, about three or four and twenty years old, who was Noona's eldeſt ſiſter, ſoon accounted for the wrinkles on her mother's brow. Inſtead of verifying the general obſervation, that women in hot countries loſe their ſightlineſs much ſooner than with us, we had now reaſon to be ſurpriſed, that they ſhould be ſo prolific here, as to bear children during a period of almoſt twenty years. It was natural that our thoughts ſhould return to the happy ſimplicity in which the life of the Taheitians ſmoothly rolls along,

along, and which, undiſturbed by cares and wants, is the cauſe of the great population of their iſland. 1773. AUGUST.

A ſtout fellow, whom we hired for a few beads, carried the proviſions which the hoſpitable old woman had offered us, ſuſpending them in equal portions on the two extremities of a ſtrong pole, about four feet long, which he placed on his ſhoulder. Young Noona, and his little brother Toparree, about four years old, cheerfully accompanied us, after we had enriched the whole family with beads, nails, looking-glaſſes, and knives.

The firſt part of our march was a little difficult, on account of a hill on which we mounted, in hopes of meeting with ſomething to reward our trouble. But, contrary to our expectations, we found it entirely deſtitute of plants, two dwarfiſh ſhrubs, and a ſpecies of dry fern excepted. Here, however, we were much ſurpriſed to ſee a large flock of wild ducks riſing before us, from a ſpot which was perfectly dry and barren, without our being able to imagine what had brought them thither from the reeds and marſhy banks of the river, where they commonly reſided. We ſoon croſſed another hill, where all the ferns and buſhes having lately been burnt, blackened our clothes as we paſſed through them. From thence we deſcended into a fertile valley, where a fine rivulet, which we were obliged to croſs ſeveral times, ran towards the ſea. The natives had placed ſeveral ſtone weirs acroſs this rivulet, in order

to

1773. AUGUST. to raiſe the water, which might by that means be introduced into their plantations of the tarro, or eddy-root *(arum eſculentum,)* that requires a very marſhy, and ſometimes an inundated ſoil. We found two ſpecies of it, one of which has large gloſſy leaves, and roots about four feet long, but is very coarſe; the other with velvet leaves and ſmall, but more palatable roots. Both are exceſſively pungent and cauſtic, till boiled in ſeveral waters; however, hogs eat them raw without any reluctance. The valley became narrower as we advanced up along the rivulet, and the hills which included it were much ſteeper, and covered with foreſts. Every part of the level ground was, however, planted with coco-nut, apple, and bread-fruit trees, with bananas, cloth-trees, and various roots, and a number of houſes were conveniently ſituated at ſhort diſtances from each other. In different parts we met with immenſe beds of looſe pebble-ſtones in the rivulet and on its banks, which ſeemed to have been waſhed out of the mountains, and worn into round or oblong ſhapes, by the continual motion and agitation of the water. On the ſides of the hills we gathered ſeveral new plants, ſometimes at the riſk of breaking our necks, on account of the pieces of rock which rolled away under our feet. A great number of inhabitants aſſembled about us, and among them ſeveral who brought us abundance of coco-nuts, bread-fruit, and apples for ſale. We bought as much as we thought neceſſary

ceſſary for our proviſion, and hired ſome of the natives to carry it. After proceeding up about five miles from the ſea-ſide we ſat down in the ſhade of a number of trees, on a pleaſant green turf, and made our meal, which conſiſted of the fruit we had purchaſed, and of ſome pork and fiſh which we had taken from on board. The natives formed a circle round us; but thoſe who had been our guides and aſſiſtants were permitted to ſit by us, and partook of our cheer with a very good appetite. They were moſt ſurpriſed at the ſalt, which we had taken care to provide, and which they ſaw us eat with all ſorts of victuals, bread-fruit not excepted. Some of them were deſirous of taſting it, and among theſe there were a few who reliſhed it very well, becauſe they are uſed to employ ſea-water as a ſauce both to fiſh and to pork*. 1773. AUGUST.

It was about four o'clock in the afternoon, when we thought of returning to the ſea-ſide with our acquiſitions. About this time a number of inhabitants came acroſs the hills with loads of horſe-plantanes, a coarſe ſort, which grows almoſt without cultivation, and which they brought for ſale to our ſhips. We followed them along the ſide of the rivulet to a place where ſome children offered us a few little prawns picked out between the ſtones in the bed of the river. We had no ſooner taken them as a curioſity, and rewarded the children with beads, than

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 200, 201.

upwards

1773. AUGUST. upwards of fifty perſons of different ages and ſexes ſet about the ſame employment, and brought us ſo many of theſe little creatures, that we were ſoon obliged to refuſe them. In the ſpace of two hours we reached our tents on Point Venus, where we found O-Wahow, the generous native who had brought my father another preſent of proviſions. In the courſe of this walk, we had obſerved more idle perſons than at Aitepèha; the houſes and plantations appeared more ruinous and neglected, and from ſeveral people inſtead of invitations, or marks of hoſpitality, we only received importunate petitions for beads and nails. Still upon the whole we had great reaſon to be contented with our reception among them, and the liberty of roaming at pleaſure through all parts of their delightful country. We had now and then experienced their diſpoſition to theft, but had never loſt any thing of value; for our handkerchiefs, which were the eaſieſt to come at, were made of their own thinner cloth, ſo that they found themſelves diſappointed as often as they had dextrouſly picked our pockets, and with great good humour returned them to us. In my opinion this vice is not of ſo heinous a nature among the Taheitians, as amongſt ourſelves. People whoſe wants are ſo eaſily ſatisfied, and in whoſe manner of living there is ſo much equality, can have very few motives to ſteal from each other, and their open houſes without doors and bars, are ſo many proofs of mutual

ſafety

ſafety. The blame then lies in a great meaſure upon us, for bringing temptations in their way too powerful to be withſtood. They ſeem indeed not to think their tranſgreſſions of great ſignification, perhaps from a reflection that they do not materially injure us by any little larceny. 1773. AUGUST.

During our abſence the captains had paid a viſit to the king at Parre, where they were highly entertained by the ſight of a dramatic dance, which her royal highneſs Towraï performed, in a dreſs exactly deſcribed in captain Cook's former voyage, and with the ſame geſtures which are there mentioned *. Two men danced at different intervals, when the princeſs reſted, and, with many ſtrange diſtortions, ſpoke or ſung ſome words, probably relative to the ſubject of their dance, which was unintelligible to our people. The whole entertainment laſted about an hour and a half, during which Tedua Towraï diſplayed a wonderful activity, which ſurpaſſed every thing that had been ſeen at the iſle of Ulietea in the former voyage.

Early the next morning captain Cook ſent lieutenant Pickerſgill to the ſouth-weſt part of the iſland, in order to purchaſe ſome freſh proviſion, and particularly ſome hogs, of which we had hitherto received only two from the king. We continued on board the whole day, deſcribing the plants which we had found on our laſt excurſion. In the even- Monday 30.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 264, 265. See alſo the plate No. 7. though that conveys no idea of Taheitians.

1773. AUGUST. ing, about ten o'clock, we heard a great noiſe on ſhore abreaſt of our veſſels, apparently occaſioned by ſome of our men. The captains immediately ſent their boats aſhore, with proper officers, who brought on board ſeveral marines and a ſailor. They had obtained leave to take a walk from the commanding officer at the tents, but had exceeded their time, and beaten one of the natives. They were immediately ſecured in irons, as it was of the utmoſt conſequence towards continuing upon an amicable footing with this nation, to puniſh them in an exemplary manner. O-Too had promiſed to come on board with his father the next morning, but this noiſe, of which he had received advice within half an hour after it had happened, made him ſo juſtly diffident of our intentions, that he ſent his meſſenger or ambaſſador *(Whanno no t'aree* *,)* who was one of the principal lords of his court, named E-Tee, to make an apology for his non-appearance. Before he came on board, however, Dr. Sparrman went on ſhore with me near the place where the diſturbance had happened, with a view to make another excurſion into the interior parts of the country. O-Whaw †, the old man, who had on former occaſions ſhewed his pacific diſpoſition, met us on the beach, and ſpoke of the offence of the laſt night not without expreſſing ſome diſpleaſure; but when we aſſured him that the of-

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 243.

† See before, p. 412; and Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 83, 90, 91.

fenders

fenders were in irons, and would be ſeverely puniſhed, he ſeemed perfectly ſatisfied. As we had nobody from the veſſel to aſſiſt us, we deſired O-Whaw to point out a native whom we might entruſt with the botanizing apparatus. Several people having offered their ſervices, he choſe a ſtrong well-made man, who was immediately furniſhed with an empty bag, for the reception of plants, and with ſome baſkets full of Taheitee apples, which we had purchaſed on the ſpot. We croſſed One-tree-hill, and deſcended into one of the firſt vallies of O-Parre, where we were gratified with the ſight of one of the moſt beautiful trees in the world, which we called the Barringtonia. It had a great abundance of flowers, larger than lilies and perfectly white, excepting the tips of their numerous chives, which were of a bright crimſon. Such a quantity of theſe flowers were already dropped off, that the ground underneath the tree was intirely ſtrewed with them. The natives called the tree *huddoo*, and aſſured us that the fruit, which is a large nut, when bruiſed, mixed up with ſome ſhell-fiſh, and ſtrewed into the ſea, intoxicates or poiſons the fiſh for ſome time, ſo that they come to the ſurface of the water and ſuffer themſelves to be taken with the hands. It is ſingular that various maritime plants in tropical climates have ſuch a quality; the *cocculi indici*, in particular, are well known and uſed for that purpoſe in the Eaſt-Indies. We were unwilling to defer the examination of ſo remark- 1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. ble a plant till after our return on board, and therefore retired to a neat houſe, built up of reeds, round which ſeveral odoriferous ſhrubs and ſome very fine coco-trees were planted. The owner, with that hoſpitality which I have already often celebrated, ſent a boy up one of the talleſt palms to procure us ſome of the nuts, which he performed with ſurprizing agility. He tied a piece of the tough rind of a banana ſtalk to both his feet, in ſuch a manner that they could juſt encompaſs the tree on both ſides, the piece of rind ſerving as a ſort of ſtep or reſt, whilſt he lifted himſelf higher with his hands. The natural growth of the coco-palm, which annually forms a kind of elevated ring on the ſtem, certainly facilitated the boy's aſcent, but the quickneſs and eaſe with which he walked up and down were really admirable. We ſhould have ill deſerved this mark of kindneſs and attention if we had not made our hoſt a little preſent at parting, and rewarded the boy for the pleaſure which we had felt in obſerving his dexterity.

From hence we proceeded up the valley, which having no rivulet in its middle, began to riſe in proportion as we advanced. We reſolved therefore to go upon the ſteep hill on our left, and with much difficulty accompliſhed our plan. Our Taheitian friend langhed at us, when he ſaw us faint with fatigue, and ſitting down every moment to recover our breath. We heard him blow or breathe ſlowly

but

but very hard, with open mouth, as he walked behind us; we therefore tried the ſame experiment, which nature had probably taught him, and found it anſwered much better than our ſhort panting, which always deprived us of breath. At laſt we reached the ridge of the hill, where a fine breeze greatly refreſhed us, after our fatiguing aſcent. When we had walked upwards along that ridge for ſome time, expoſed to the burning rage of the ſun, reverberated from all parts of the barren ſoil, we ſat down under the ſcanty ſhade of a ſolitary *pandang*, or palm-nut tree *, which was at this time acceptable even to our friendly native. The proſpect from hence was delightful; the reef which ſurrounded O-Taheitee, the bay with the ſhips, and numerous canoes, and the whole plain of Matavaï with its beautiful objects, lay as it were under our feet, while the meridian ſun threw a ſteady and calm light on the whole landſcape. At the diſtance of about ſix leagues, the low iſland called Tedhuroa, appeared before us, forming a little circular ledge of rocks, covered with a few palms; and far beyond it the immenſe ocean bounded the view. The Taheitian who was with us, pointed out the direction of all the neighbouring iſlands which were not in ſight at preſent, and informed us of their produce, whether they were high or low, inhabited or only occaſionally viſited. Tedhuroa,

1773. AUGUST.

* *Pandanus.* Rumph. Herbar. Amboin.—*Athrodactylis.* Forſt. Nov. Gen. Plantar.—*Keura.* Forſkol.

which

1773. AUGUST. which we ſaw was of the laſt ſort, and two canoes with their ſails ſet, were at that time returning from thence, where our guide informed us they often went to catch fiſh in the lagoon. Having reſted a little while, we advanced up towards the interior mountains, which now appeared diſtinctly before us. The rich groves which crowned their ſummits, and filled the vallies between them, invited us to advance, and promiſed to reward our preſeverance with a load of new productions. But we ſoon perceived a number of barren hills and vallies which lay between us and thoſe deſireable foreſts, and found it was in vain to attempt to reach them this day. We conſulted amongſt ourſelves, whether we ſhould venture to paſs a night on theſe hills, but this was unadviſeable, on account of the uncertainty of the time when our ſhips were to ſail, and likewiſe impracticable for want of proviſions.—Our Taheitian told us, we ſhould meet with no inhabitants, dwelling, or proviſions on the mountains, and pointed out a narrow path which led down the ſteep ſide of the hill into the valley of Matavaï. We began to deſcend therefore, but found it more dangerous than when we came up: we ſtumbled every moment, and in many places were obliged to ſlide down on our backs. Our ſhoes were rather a diſadvantage to us, being made extremely ſlippery by the dry graſſes over which we had walked, while the native with his bare feet was ſurpriſingly ſure-footed. In a ſhort time we gave him our fowling-pieces,

to

to enable us to make uſe of our hands, and at laſt we re- 1773. AUGUST.
ſumed them again, and letting him go before, leaned on his arm in the moſt difficult places. When we were about half-way down, he hallooed very loud to ſome people whom he ſaw in the valley; but we did not believe at that time that they had heard him, eſpecially becauſe he received no anſwer. However, preſently after we obſerved ſeveral people coming up towards us, who aſcended very faſt, ſo as to meet us in about half an hour. They brought us three freſh coco-nuts, which, whether they were really excellent in their kind, or whether our great fatigue recommended them to our taſte, we looked upon as the beſt we had ever emptied. The natives bid us reſt a while, and told us that a little farther down they had left a number of coco-nuts, which they would not bring up leſt we ſhould drink too haſtily at firſt. Their precaution was very laudable, but our thirſt made us very impatient till they would permit us to move forward. At laſt we ſet out, and coming on a more level ground, entered a delicious little ſhrubbery, where we ſat down in the freſh graſs, and indulged with the cool nectar which our friends had provided. This draught enabled us to come down into the valley, where we were preſently ſurrounded by a croud of the natives, and prepared to return with them over the plain to the ſea-ſide; when a well-looking man, accompanied by his daughter, a young girl about ſixteen, invited us to his houſe,

1773. AUGUST. houſe which lay farther up, where he wiſhed to entertain us with a dinner. Though we were much exhauſted with fatigue, we agreed not to diſappoint him, and returned about two miles along the delightful banks of the river Matavai, through groves of coco, bread-fruit, apple, and cloth-trees, and numerous plantations of bananas and eddoes. The river formed various windings in the valley from ſide to ſide, ſo that we were obliged to croſs it ſeveral times, and our new hoſt with one of his ſervants always inſiſted upon carrying us over on their backs. At laſt we arrived at his houſe, which was ſituated on a little eminence, where the river gently murmured over a bed of pebbles. An elegant mat was ſpread for us on the dry graſs in a corner of the houſe, which was of the cloſer ſort, being walled in with reeds. We were immediately ſurrounded by a great number of our friend's relations, who ſeated themſelves near us; and his daughter, who in elegance of form, clearneſs of complexion, and agreeable features, equalled, if not ſurpaſſed the Taheitian beauties we had hitherto ſeen, together with ſome of her young companions, were very aſſiduous in their endeavours to be agreeable. The moſt efficacious remedy they employed beſides their ſmiles, to recover us from the great wearineſs which we felt, was to chafe our arms and legs with their hands, ſqueezing the muſcles gently between the fingers and the palm. Whether this operation facilitated the circulation

of

1773. AUGUST.

of the blood through the minuter veſſels, or reſtored the over-ſtrained muſcles to their natural elaſticity, I cannot determine; but its effect was certainly ſo ſalutary, that our ſtrength was perfectly reſtored, and we did not feel the leaſt remaining inconvenience from the fatiguing journey of the day. Captain Wallis mentions a ſimilar inſtance of the excellence of this remedy, and of the beneficence of the inhabitants of Taheitee *; and Oſbeck, in his voyage to China, deſcribes this operation as a common practice among Chineſe barbers, who are ſaid to be very expert at it †. Mr. Groſe too, in his voyage to the Eaſt Indies, gives a very circumſtantial account of the art of *champing*, which ſeems to be a luxurious refinement upon this wholeſome reſtorative. It deſerves to be mentioned here, that this ingenious author has given quotations from Martial and Seneca, which make it evident that the Romans were acquainted with this practice ‡.

Percurrit agili corpus arte tactatrix,
Manumque doctam ſpargit omnibus membris. MARTIAL.

We had no longer reaſon to complain of the want of appetite which had been the conſequence of our fatigue; but as ſoon as our dinner was placed before us, conſiſting

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. I. p. 463.

† See Oſbeck's and Torcen's Voyages to China, vol. I. p. 231. and II. p. 246.

‡ See Groſe's Voyage, vol. I. p. 113.

1773. AUGUST. of vegetable food, ſuitable to the frugal ſimplicity of the natives, we partook of it very heartily, and ſoon found ourſelves in as good ſpirits as we had ſet out with in the morning. We paſſed about two hours with this hoſpitable family, and during that time diſtributed the greateſt part of the beads, nails, and knives which we had brought from the ſhip to our generous hoſt, to his fair daughter, and her companions, whoſe care had reſtored our ſtrength much ſooner than we had a right to expect after ſo laborious an expedition. About three o'clock we ſet out on our return, and walked paſt numerous dwellings, whoſe inhabitants enjoyed the beauty of the afternoon in various parties, under the ſhade of their fruit-trees. In one of theſe houſes we obſerved a man at work, in preparing a red dye, for ſome cloth made of the bark of the paper-mulberry, which we commonly called the cloth-tree. Upon enquiring for the materials which he made uſe of, we found to our great ſurprize that the yellow juice of a ſmall ſpecies of fig, which they call mattee, and the greeniſh juice of a ſort of fern, or bind-weed, or of ſeveral other plants, by being ſimply mixed together, formed a bright crimſon, which the women rubbed with their hands if the whole piece was to be uniformly of the ſame colour, or in which they dipped a bamboo reed, if it was to be marked or ſprinkled in different patterns. This colour fades very ſoon and becomes of a dirty red, beſides being liable

liable to be ſpoiled by rain and other accidents; the cloth, however, which is dyed or rather ſtained with it, is highly valued by the Taheitians, and only worn by their principal people. We bought ſeveral pieces of cloth of different kinds for beads and ſmall nails, and then walked on till we arrived at the tents, which ſtood at leaſt five miles from the place where we had dined. Here we diſcharged our truſty friend whom O-Whaw had recommended, and who had behaved with a degree of attachment and fidelity to us, which from the thieviſh character of the nation we had no room to expect. This behaviour was the more meritorious as our ſituation frequently had afforded him excellent opportunities of running off with all our nails and knives, and with one of our fowling-pieces; temptations which required an uncommon degree of honeſty to withſtand. We next embarked in one of the canoes which plied between the ſhips and the ſhore, and for a couple of beads were ſafely brought on board. Here we found the captain and my father juſt returned from a long excurſion to the weſtward. E-Tee, the king's ambaſſador, who arrived on board immediately after our departure, had brought a preſent of a hog and ſome fruit, but acquainted the captain that O-Too was *matòw*, a term which at once expreſſed that he was afraid and diſpleaſed. To convince him that the outrages of laſt night were not approved of, the offenders were brought to the gangway, 1773. AUGUST.

1773. AUGUST. and received a dozen of laſhes in his preſence, to the great terror of all the Taheitians on board. Captain Cook then ordering three wether-ſheep from the Cape, which were all we had left, to be put in his boat, embarked with captain Furneaux and my father, in order to regain the confidence of O-Too, without which he knew that no proviſions were to be bought in the country. When they arrived at Parre, they were told that he was gone to the weſtward; accordingly they went after him, about four or five miles farther, and landing in a diſtrict called Tittahàh, waited ſeveral hours for him there; his fears having been ſo ſtrong, as actually to make him remove about nine miles farther from us than uſual. There was ſomething in this conduct ſeemingly too much allied to cowardiſe; but we ſhould likewiſe conſider, that the power of Europeans had formerly been diſplayed here in the terrific ſhape of deſtruction. It was three o'clock in the afternoon before he arrived with his mother; he expreſſing the moſt manifeſt ſigns of fear and diſtruſt, and ſhe with her eyes ſwimming in tears. The report of E-Tee, the preſent of a new kind of animals, and all poſſible aſſurances of friendſhip on the part of our people, ſucceeded to quiet their apprehenſions. At the king's deſire, the bagpiper was ordered to play before him, and his performance produced an effect ſimilar to that of David's harp, whoſe harmonious ſounds ſoothed the atrabilarious temper of Saul. He

ſent

ſent for a hog, which was preſented to captain Cook; and ſoon after for another, which he gave to captain Furneaux. The captains believing this to be the laſt opportunity of obtaining preſents from him, deſired that a third might be brought for *Matarra* (my father's Taheitian name.) A little pig was given him, at which our people expreſſed ſome diſlike; upon this, one of the king's relations, in the aſcending line, who are all ſtyled *Medooa* (Father,) ſtepped forward from the throng, and ſpoke very loud, with many violent geſtures, to O-Too, pointing at our people, at the ſheep they had preſented, and at the little pig which they had received. As ſoon as his ſpeech was finiſhed, the pig was taken back again, and after a ſhort interval a large hog brought in its ſtead. Our people then produced their iron wares and a variety of trinkets, which they diſtributed very freely; and in return were wrapped up in ſeveral *abòws*, or pieces of Indian cloth. They then took their leave of the whole court, and returned to their veſſels about five o'clock. 1773. AUGUST.

Preparations were made for ſailing from this iſland the next morning, whilſt the natives crouded about us with fiſh, ſhells, fruit, and cloth, of which we purchaſed all that was to be had. Lieutenant Pickerſgill returned from his excurſion to the weſtward about three in the afternoon. He had advanced beyond the fertile plains of Paparra, where SEPTEMBER. Wedneſday 1.

O-AMMO,

1773. SEPTEMBER. O-AMMO *, who had once been the king of all Taheitee, reſided with his ſon the young *T'-Aree* DERRE †. He took up his firſt night's lodging on the borders of a ſmall diſtrict, which was now the property of the famous queen O-POOREA *(Oberea.)* As ſoon as ſhe heard of his arrival ſhe haſtened to him, and met her old acquaintance with repeated marks of friendſhip. She had ſeparated from her huſband ‡ ſome time after the departure of captain Wallis, and was now entirely deprived of that greatneſs which had once rendered her conſpicuous in ſtory, and auguſt in the eyes of Europeans §. The civil wars between the two peninſulas of the iſland had ſtripped her, as well as the whole diſtrict of Paparra, of the greateſt part of her wealth, ſo that ſhe complained to the lieutenant that ſhe was poor, *(teètee,)* and had not a hog to give her friends. The next morning therefore they left her, and in their return touched at Paparra, where they ſaw Ammo, who, after parting with O-Poorea, had taken one of the handſomeſt young women of the country to his bed, and appeared to be aged and indolent. His fair one gave a hog to our people, and, with ſome of her female attendants, ſtepped into the boat at their departure, and went the whole day with them, her own canoe attending to take her back again.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 153, 154. *Oamo.*

† Ibid. vol. II. p. 154. *Terridirri.*

‡ Ibid. vol. II. p. 154. § Ibid. vol. II. p. 106.

On

On this excurſion ſhe expreſſed a great degree of curioſity, which ſeemed never to have been gratified before by the ſight of Europeans, inſomuch that ſhe was doubtful whether they were formed at all points like her own countrymen, till her eyes removed every doubt. With her they landed at Attahooroo, where a chief named POTATOW * received them very cordially, and entertained them at his own houſe during the ſecond night. He too had parted with his wife *Polatehèra*, and taken a younger to his bed, while the lady had provided herſelf with a lover or a huſband, and they all continued to live very peaceably in the ſame family. The next morning at parting Potatow promiſed to accompany Mr. Pickerſgill to Matavaï, in order to viſit captain Cook, provided he might be ſure of good treatment. Mr. Pickerſgill aſſured him of the beſt reception; but the chief, for greater ſafety, produced a few ſmall yellow feathers, tied together into a little tuft, which he deſired Mr. Pickerſgill to hold, whilſt he repeated his promiſe, "that *Tòote* (captain Cook) would be the friend "of Potatow." This done, he carefully wrapped the feathers into a bit of Indian cloth, and put it in his turban. We knew, from former accounts, that red and yellow feathers were employed by the inhabitants of this iſland to fix their attention while they prayed to the Deity; but this ceremony conveyed an idea of a ſolemn affirmation or oath,

1773. SEPTEMBER.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 170.

which

1773. SEPTEMBER. which was quite new to us. Potatow was ſo well ſatisfied of the integrity of his friends, after this ceremony, that he and his wives, and ſeveral of their attendants, carrying with them two hogs and abundance of cloth, marched towards the boat, amidſt an immenſe croud of people. He was, however, no ſooner arrived at the water's ſide, than the whole multitude eagerly preſſed him not to venture amongſt our people, and clinging to his feet endeavoured to hold him back; ſeveral women, with a flood of tears, repeatedly cried aloud that Toote would kill him as ſoon as he came on board; and an old man, who, by living at the chief's own houſe, ſeemed to be a faithful ſervant to the family, drew him back by the ſkirts of his garment. Potatow was moved; for a moment he expreſſed ſome marks of diffidence; but inſtantly arming himſelf with all the reſolution he was maſter of, he thruſt the old man aſide, exclaiming "*Toote aipa matte te tayo*," (Cook will not kill his friends!) and ſtepped into the boat with an air of undaunted majeſty, that ſtruck our Britons with aſtoniſhment. As ſoon as he was on board the ſhip, he deſcended into the cabin, accompanied by his wife *Whainee-òw*, his former wife, and her friend, and brought his preſents to captain Cook. Potatow was one of the talleſt men we had ſeen upon the iſland, and his features were ſo mild, comely, and at the ſame time majeſtic, that Mr. Hodges immediately applied himſelf to copy from them, as

from

from the nobleſt models of nature. His portrait is inſert- 1773. SEPTEMBER.
ed in captain Cook's own account of this voyage. His whole body was remarkably ſtrong and heavily built, ſo that one of his thighs nearly equalled in girth our ſtouteſt ſailor's waiſt. His ample garments, and his elegant white turban, ſet off his figure to the greateſt advantage, and his noble deportment endeared him to us, as we naturally compared it with the diffidence of O-Too. Polatehera, his former wife, was ſo like him in ſtature and bulk, that we unanimouſly looked upon her as the moſt extraordinary woman we had ever ſeen. Her appearance and her conduct were maſculine in the higheſt degree, and ſtrongly conveyed the idea of ſuperiority and command. When the Endeavour bark lay here, ſhe had diſtinguiſhed herſelf by the name of captain Cook's ſiſter, *(tuaheine no* TOOTE*;)* and one day, being denied admittance into the fort on Point Venus, had knocked down the ſentry who oppoſed her, and complained to her adopted brother of the indignity which had been offered to her. After a ſhort ſtay, being told that we intended to get under way immediately, they aſked, with every demonſtration of friendſhip and with tears in their eyes, whether we intended to return. Captain Cook promiſed to be here again in the ſpace of ſeven months, with which they reſted perfectly ſatisfied, and departed immediately to the weſtward, their own canoes having followed our boat all the way.

1773. SEPTEMBER. In the mean while a young Taheitian, of the common claſs, who was very well made, and about ſeventeen years old, having talked to the captain of going *no te whennua tei Bretane*, (to the land of Britain,) for ſeveral days paſt, had arrived on board with his father. His whole equipment conſiſted of a ſmall piece of the Indian cloth wrapped about his loins; ſo entirely did he depend upon our care and protection. Captain Cook gave his father, who ſeemed to be a middle aged man, a hatchet and ſome preſents of leſſer value, with which he deſcended into his canoe with great compoſure and firmneſs, without manifeſting any ſigns of grief. We had ſcarce cleared the reefs, when a canoe arrived with two or three natives, who demanded the youth back in the name of O-Too, and ſhewed ſome pieces of cloth which they intended as preſents to the captain: but as they could not produce the iron-work which he had beſtowed on the poor fellow's account, they were obliged to return without him. The youth, whoſe name was *Porèa*, ſpoke to them, but would not leave us, though, to terrify him, we underſtood that they preſaged his death amongſt us. However, when they were at ſome diſtance, he looked wiſhfully after them, leaned over the railing on the quarter-deck, and ſhed a flood of tears in an agony of grief. To divert him from this gloomy mood, we took him into the cabin, where he complained that he muſt ſurely die, and that his father would weep for his loſs.

Captain

Captain Cook and my father comforted him, ſaying *they* would be his fathers, upon which he hugged and kiſſed them, and paſſed from the extreme of deſpondence by a quick tranſition to a great degree of chearfulneſs. About ſun-ſet he ate his ſupper, and lay down on the floor of the cabin; but ſeeing that we did not follow his example, he got up again, and remained with us till we had ſupped. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

It was with great regret that we daparted from this delightful iſland, at a time when we were juſt become acquainted with its happy inhabitants. We had only paſſed fourteen days on its coaſt, two of which had been ſpent in removing from one port to the other. During this ſhort ſpace of time, we had lived in a continual round of tumultuous occupations, which had left us little leiſure to ſtudy the nature of the people. An immenſe variety of objects relative to their œconomy, their cuſtoms and ceremonies, all which appeared new and intereſting to us, had engaged our attention; but we afterwards found moſt of them had been obſerved by former navigators. Theſe therefore, for fear of preſuming too far on the indulgence of my readers, I have omitted in this narrative, and refer for the particular deſcriptions of the dwellings, dreſs, food, domeſtic amuſements, boats and navigation, diſeaſes, religion, and funeral rites, wars, weapons, and government, to the hiſtory of captain Cook's voyage in the Endeavour

1773. SEPTEMBER. bark, compiled by Dr. Hawkeſworth (vol. II. from page 184 to page 248). All the merit of the preceding pages concerning the iſle of Taheitee, muſt therefore conſiſt in a few gleanings and elucidations on ſeveral ſubjects. However, I am in hopes that the particular point of view in which I have beheld, and conſequently repreſented circumſtances already familiar to the reader from former accounts, will not prove unintereſting, and may in ſeveral inſtances ſuggeſt new and valuable reflections.

The breeze with which we ſailed was ſo moderate, that we continued near the ſhore the whole evening, and were able to diſtinguiſh the exuberant ſcenery of the plain, beautiful enough, even at this dead ſeaſon of winter, to vie with the richeſt landſcapes, which nature has laviſhed on different parts of the globe. Its fertile ſoil, and genial climate, which produces all ſorts of nutritive vegetables almoſt ſpontaneouſly, inſures the felicity of its inhabitants. Allowing for the imperfect ſtate of ſublunary happineſs, which is comparative at beſt, there are not, I believe, many nations exiſting whoſe ſituation is ſo deſirable. Where the means of ſubſiſtence are ſo eaſy, and the wants of the people ſo few, it is natural that the great purpoſe of human life, that of multiplying the number of rational beings, is not loaded with that multitude of miſeries which are attendant upon the married ſtate in civilized countries. The impulſes of nature are therefore followed without

1773. SEPTEMBER.

without reſtraint, and the conſequence is a great population, in proportion to the ſmall part of the iſland which is cultivated. The plains and narrow vallies are now the only inhabited parts, though many of the hills are very fit for culture, and capable of ſupporting an infinite number of people. Perhaps, in courſe of time, if the population ſhould encreaſe conſiderably, the natives may have recourſe to theſe parts, which are now in a manner uſeleſs and ſuperfluous. The evident diſtinction of ranks which ſubſiſts at Taheitee, does not ſo materially affect the felicity of the nation, as we might have ſuppoſed. Under one general ſovereign, the people are diſtinguiſhed into the claſſes of aree, manahoùna, and towtow, which bear ſome diſtant relation to thoſe of the feudal ſyſtems of Europe. The ſimplicity of their whole life contributes to ſoften theſe diſtinctions, and to reduce them to a level. Where the climate and the cuſtom of the country do not abſolutely require a perfect garment; where it is eaſy at every ſtep to gather as many plants as form not only a decent, but likewiſe a cuſtomary covering; and where all the neceſſaries of life are within the reach of every individual, at the expence of a trifling labour, ambition and envy muſt in a great meaſure be unknown. It is true, the higher claſſes of people poſſeſs ſome dainty articles, ſuch as pork, fiſh, fowl, and cloth almoſt excluſively; but the deſire of indulging the appetite in a few trifling luxuries, can at moſt

render

1773. SEPTEMBER. render individuals, and not whole nations, unhappy. Abſolute want occaſions the miſeries of the lower claſs in ſome civilized ſtates, and is the reſult of the unbounded voluptuouſneſs of their ſuperiors. At O-Taheitee there is not, in general, that diſparity between the higheſt and the meaneſt man, which ſubſiſts in England between a reputable tradeſman and a labourer. The affection of the Taheitians for their chiefs, which they never failed to expreſs upon all occaſions, gave us great room to ſuppoſe that they conſider themſelves as one family, and reſpect their eldeſt-born in the perſons of their chiefs. Perhaps the origin of their government was patriarchal, and the king might only be dignified by virtue of being conſidered as the father of his people, till by degrees the conſtitution ſettled into its preſent form. Still there remains much ancient ſimplicity in that familiarity between the ſovereign and the ſubject. The loweſt man in the nation ſpeaks as freely with his king as with his equal, and has the pleaſure of ſeeing him as often as he likes. This intercourſe would become more difficult as ſoon as deſpotiſm ſhould begin to gain ground. The king at times amuſes himſelf with the occupations of his ſubjects, and not yet depraved by the falſe notions of an empty ſtate, often paddles his own canoe, without thinking ſuch an employment derogatory to his dignity. How long ſuch an happy equality may laſt, is uncertain; ſince the indolence of the chiefs is already, notwithſtanding the exuberant

exuberant fertility of the ſoil, a ſtep towards its deſtruction. Though cultivation is a labour ſcarce felt at preſent by the towtows, to whom it is allotted; yet by inſenſible degrees it will fall heavier upon them, as the number of chiefs muſt naturally increaſe in a much greater proportion, than their own claſs, for this obvious reaſon, becauſe the chiefs are perfectly unemployed. This addition of labour will have a bad effect on their bodies, they will grow ill-ſhaped, and their bones become marrowleſs: their greater expoſure to the action of a vertical ſun, will blacken their ſkins, and they will dwindle away to dwarfs, by the more frequent proſtitution of their infant daughters, to the voluptuous pleaſures of the great. That pampered race, on the contrary, will preſerve all the advantages of an extraordinary ſize, of a ſuperior elegance of form and features, and of a purer colour, by indulging a voracious appetite, and living in abſolute idleneſs. At laſt the common people will perceive theſe grievances, and the cauſes which produced them; and a proper ſenſe of the general rights of mankind awaking in them, will bring on a revolution. This is the natural circle of human affairs; at preſent there is fortunately no room to ſuppoſe, that ſuch a change will take place for a long ſeries of years to come; but how much the introduction of foreign luxuries may haſten that fatal period, cannot be too frequently repeated to Europeans. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

1773. SEPTEMBER. ropeans. If the knowledge of a few individuals can only be acquired at ſuch a price as the happineſs of nations, it were better for the diſcoverers, and the diſcovered, that the South Sea had ſtill remained unknown to Europe and its reſtleſs inhabitants.

CHAP.

1773. SEPTEMBER.

CHAP. X.

Account of our Tranſactions at the Society Iſlands.

THE wind with which we ſailed from O-Taheitee, freſhened after ſun-ſet, and favoured our departure from that happy iſland, which we ſtill diſcerned by moon-light.

The next day, at eleven o'clock, we ſaw the iſle of Huahine, which is about twenty-five leagues from Taheitee, and was firſt diſcovered by captain Cook, on the 11th of July, 1769. A number of our people now felt the effects of their intercourſe with the women at Mataväi Bay, and had ſymptoms of a diſagreeable complaint. All the patients, however, without exception, had this diſeaſe only in a very ſlight and benign degree. The queſtion which has been agitated between the French and Engliſh navigators, concerning the firſt introduction of this evil to Taheitee, might be decided very favourably for them both, by ſuppoſing the diſeaſe to have exiſted at Taheitee previous to their arrival. The argument, that none of captain Wallis's people received the infection, does not ſeem to controvert this ſuppoſition, but only proves, that the women, who proſtituted themſelves to his crew, were free from it: which was per- Thurſday 2.

1773. SEPTEMBER. haps owing to a precaution of the natives, who might be apprehenſive of expoſing themſelves to the anger of the ſtrangers, by conferring ſuch a deſperate gift upon them *. We heard, however, of another diſeaſe of a different nature, whilſt we ſtaid upon the iſland; and which they called *o-pay-no-Peppe*, (the ſore of Peppe,) adding, that it was brought by the ſhip which they deſigned by that name, and which, according to different accounts, had either been two, three, or five months before us at Taheitee. By the account of the ſymptoms, it ſeemed to be a kind of leproſy. Nothing is more eaſy than to imagine, how the ſtrangers (Spaniards,) who viſited Taheitee in that ſhip, might be innocently charged with introducing that diſeaſe. In order to give riſe to a general error of this ſort, it is ſufficient that it broke out nearly about the time of their arrival, and that ſome diſtant connections between them and the perſons affected, could be traced. This is the more probable, as it is certain, that there are ſeveral ſorts of leperous complaints exiſting among the inhabitants, ſuch as the elephantiaſis, which reſembles the yaws; alſo an eruption over the whole ſkin, and laſtly a monſtrous rotting ulcer, of a moſt loathſome appearance. However,

* See M. de Bougainville's Voyage, Engliſh Edition, pag. 273, 274, 285, 286. and Hawkeſworth, vol. I. p. 489, 490. and vol. II. p. 232. M. de Bougainville, with the politeneſs of a well-bred man, doubts, whether the diſeaſe exiſted at Taheitee previous to his arrival or not; the Engliſh ſeaman aſſerts his opinion as fact in poſitive terms.

all

all theſe very ſeldom occur, and eſpecially the laſt; for the excellence of their climate, and the ſimplicity of their vegetable food, which cannot be too much extolled, prevent not only theſe, but almoſt all dangerous and deadly diſorders. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

Towards ſun-ſet we brought to within two leagues of Huahine; and the next day, at four o'clock, doubled the north end of that iſland, and then bore up for the harbour of O-Wharre. Huahine is divided by a deep inlet into two peninſulas, connected by an iſthmus entirely overflowed at high-water. Its hills are much inferior to thoſe of Taheitee in height, but their appearance ſtrongly indicated them as the former ſeats of a volcano. The ſummit of one of them had much the appearance of a crater, and a blackiſh ſpungy rock was ſeen on one of its ſides, which ſeemed to be lava. At ſun-riſe we beheld ſome of the other Society Iſles, called *O-Raietea* (Ulietea,) *O-Taha*, and *Borabora* (Bolabola.) The laſt forms a peak like Maâtea, but infinitely higher and more conſiderable, on the top of which there appeared alſo the crater of a volcano. There are two entrances to O-Wharre harbour; of theſe we choſe the ſouthermoſt, and having a very ſteady breeze off ſhore, our navigators tried their ſkill in working in. The entrance might be about three or four hundred yards long, and barely a hundred yards wide between two reefs. However in this ſpace we made ſix or ſeven trips with Friday 3.

1773. SEPTEMBER. amazing dexterity, each trip laſting about two or three minutes. We had not yet worked in, when the Adventure came in after us, but unfortunately approached too near one of the reefs, juſt as ſhe was putting about, and leaned on the ſide of the coral rock. We were for the preſent intent only in ſaving our own ſhip for fear of the worſt that might happen, and ſoon after came to an anchor. As ſoon as that was done, our boats were diſpatched to the aſſiſtance of our conſort, and ſhe was towed into the harbour. Her bottom being examined, it was found that ſhe had ſuffered no damage, which was likewiſe the caſe with the Reſolution, when ſhe ſtruck on the coaſt of Tiarraboo.

The appearance of the country was exactly the ſame here as at Taheitee, but upon a much ſmaller ſcale; the circumference of the whole iſle being only about ſeven or eight leagues. The plains are therefore very inconſiderable, and there are hardly any intermediate hills between them and the higher mountains, which take their riſe immediately from the ſkirts of the plain. The country, however, contained a variety of pleaſant little ſpots. Not a ſingle canoe came off to us here beyond the reefs, but we had not been long at anchor before a few of them arrived loaded with coco-nuts, bread-fruit, and large fowls. We were very glad to meet with theſe birds, having obtained only a ſingle pair at Taheitee, where they had been entirely

tirely ſwept away by former navigators. Amongſt the natives who came on board, there was one who had a monſtrous rupture or hernia, which did not ſeem to incumber him much, as he came up the ſides of the ſhip with great agility. The natives ſpoke the ſame language, had the ſame features, and wore the ſame cloth, made of bark, as thoſe of Taheitee; but none of their women appeared. They bartered very fairly for our beads and nails, and in a little time had ſold us a dozen of very large cocks, of a beautiful plumage; but it may be remarked, that they ſeldom brought the hens for ſale. Towards eleven o'clock the captains went on ſhore to a large ſhed, of which the ſides reached to the ground, and which gave ſhelter to a double canoe. Here they appointed a perſon to trade with the natives, which they did ſo regularly that we collected upwards of twenty hogs this day for large ſpike nails or ſmall hatchets, and about a dozen of dogs, which ſeemed to be the moſt ſtupid animals of their kind, but were reckoned excellent proviſion by the natives. During our firſt walk we found two plants which we had not ſeen before; and we took notice that all the bread-trees in that part had already young fruit, of the ſize of ſmall apples, which, as the natives ſaid, would not be ripe in leſs than four months. The diſtrict where we landed ſeemed to be entirely deſtitute of bananas; the natives, however, brought us ſome bunches of this fruit from other parts, which proves

1773. SEPTEMBER.

1773. SEPTEMBER. proves that they have the art of managing ſome of their plantations ſo as to produce at different ſeaſons; but theſe late crops are, as may be eaſily conceived, very trifling in quantity, and reſerved for the luxury of their chiefs.

We returned on board to dinner, and afterwards made another excurſion on ſhore, where we were told, that the chiefs of the iſland would make their appearance the next day. We were not much incommoded by the inhabitants on our rambles, our train ſeldom exceeding fifteen or twenty, except near a place of general reſort, ſuch as the ſhed where our trade was carried on. The ſmallneſs of the iſland might be the principal cauſe of the difference from what we had experienced at Taheitee; but it muſt be added, that the natives here were not well enough acquainted with our diſpoſition to expect to reap any advantage from following us; and did not, upon the whole, expreſs that degree of curioſity, nor of fear, which was inherent in the Taheitians, who had had ſufficient cauſe to dread the ſuperior power of our fire-arms.

Our Taheitian friend Porea went aſhore with us in a linen frock and a pair of trowſers, and carried captain Cook's powder-horn and ſhot-pouch. He told us that he was deſirous to be looked upon as one of our people, and therefore never ſpoke the Taheitian language, but continued to mutter ſome unintelligible ſounds, which actually impoſed upon the multitude. To favour the illuſion, he would

would no longer hearken to his Taheitian name Porea, but deſired to have an Engliſh one; the ſailors immediately called him Tom, with which he was extremely well pleaſed, and ſoon learnt the uſual anſwer of Sir, which he expreſſed Yorro. What aim he propoſed to himſelf in aſſuming this diſguiſe, we could not conceive, unleſs it was, that he expected to have greater conſequence in the character of an Engliſh ſailor, than that of a Taheitian towtow. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

The next day my father accompanied the captains to the trading-place, and from thence to the north part of the harbour, where they found the acting chief, Oree, who was the uncle of the preſent king Territarea (perhaps T'-Aree-Tarea.) They put aſhore near a houſe on the waterſide, where Oree was ſeated amidſt a number of his attendants. Two of the natives who were in the boat, ſeeing our gentlemen preparing to land, deſired them to ſit ſtill a while, till they had brought ſome plantane-ſtems, in ſign of peace and friendſhip. They preſented two of theſe to our people, and deſired them to ornament them with large nails, looking-glaſſes, medals, &c. This requeſt being complied with, the ſtems thus loaded were brought on ſhore and preſented, whilſt they bid our people pronounce to the firſt *no t'Eatua*, "for the Divinity," and to the ſecond, *na te taya O-Toote no Oree*, "from the friend, Cook, to Oree."

This

1773. SEPTEMBER. This done, our people received in their turn five plantane-ſtalks ſucceſſively under the following denominations.

1. The firſt, accompanied with a pig, *no t'Aree* "from the king," (meaning T'-aree-tarea who was a boy about ſeven or eight years old).

2. The ſecond, with another pig, *no t'Eatua*, "for the divinity."

3. The third, *no te Toimoe*. This term was entirely unintelligible to our people at that time, but it appeared from ſubſequent explanations, to ſignify "a welcome."

4. The fourth with a dog, *no te Toura*, "from the rope." Here, though the words were underſtood, the meaning was, if poſſible, more obſcure than in the preceding article, and what is worſe, we could never obtain any light upon the ſubject.

5. The laſt with a pig, *na te tayo O-Oree no Toote*, "from the friend Oree to Cook."

To conclude this ceremony, the ſame man who brought all theſe things, likewiſe preſented a red bag, containing a piece of pewter with this inſcription, "His Britannic Majeſty's ſhip, Endeavour. Lieutenant Cook commander, 1769. Huahine," together with a counter *. This teſtimony of captain Cook's firſt viſit to the iſland of Huahine, which he had left to Oree with an injunction never to part

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 253.

with

with it, was probably laid before him at preſent, to ſhew that his directions had been ſtrictly adhered to. As ſoon as he had received it, he ſtepped aſhore with all his company, and embraced Oree, who was an old man between fifty and ſixty, thin, and very blear-eyed. He received our people very cordially as known friends, and preſented ſeveral large bales of cloth to the captain; after which the inhabitants flocked in great numbers to his houſe, with abundance of fowls, hogs, and dogs, which they eagerly ſold for the trifling conſideration of nails, knives, and ſmall hatchets. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

In the mean while Dr. Sparrman and myſelf, after landing at the trading-place, proceeded to Oree's houſe by land. On this walk we ſaw great numbers of hogs, dogs, and fowls. The laſt roamed about at pleaſure through the woods, and rooſted on fruit-trees; the hogs were likewiſe allowed to run about, but received regular portions of food, which were commonly diſtributed by old women. We obſerved one of them in particular, feeding a little pig with the ſour fermented bread-fruit paſte, called mahei; ſhe held the pig with one hand, and offered it a tough pork's ſkin, but as ſoon as it opened the mouth to ſnap at it, ſhe contrived to throw a handful of the ſour paſte in, which the little animal would not take without this ſtratagem. The dogs in ſpite of their ſtupidity, were in high favour with all the women, who could not have

1773. SEPTEMBER. nurſed them with a more ridiculous affection, if they had really been ladies of faſhion in Europe. We were witneſſes of a remarkable inſtance of kindneſs, when we ſaw a middle aged woman, whoſe breaſts were full of milk, offering them to a little puppy which had been trained up to ſuck them. We were ſo much ſurpriſed at this ſight, that we could not help expreſſing our diſlike of it; but ſhe ſmiled at our obſervation, and added, that ſhe ſuffered little pigs to do the ſame ſervice. Upon enquiry however, we found that ſhe had loſt her child, and did her the juſtice amongſt ourſelves to acknowledge that this expedient was very innocent and formerly practiſed in Europe*. The dogs of all theſe iſlands were ſhort, and their ſizes vary from that of a lap-dog to the largeſt ſpaniel. Their head is broad, the ſnout pointed, the eyes very ſmall, the ears upright, and their hair rather long, lank, hard, and of different colours, but moſt commonly white and brown. They ſeldom if ever barked, but howled ſometimes, and were ſhy of ſtrangers to a degree of averſion.

We met with ſome of the birds here, which we had already ſeen at Taheitee, and alſo a blue white-bellied king's-fiſher, and a greyiſh heron. We ſhot ſome of each ſort, but found a number of people among the croud,

* The Indian women in America, whoſe milk is remarkably abundant, have frequent recourſe to this expedient to drain their breaſts. See the Canon Pauw's Recherches Philoſophiques ſur les Americains, vol. I. p. 55.

who

who annexed an idea of holineſs to theſe birds, and called them eatooas, which is the ſame name by which they deſign God. There were however at all times, at leaſt an equal, if not greater number of people who deſired us to ſhoot them, and were very ready to point them out. Neither did any of them expreſs a mark of diſapprobation after we had killed the birds. It is certain that they do not look upon them as divinities, becauſe theſe according to their ideas are inviſible; but the name of eatooa which they beſtow on them, ſeems to convey an idea of a much greater veneration, than that which protects ſwallows and other birds in England, againſt the miſchievous purſuit of unlucky boys. Here and in many other circumſtances relative to civil, political, and religious inſtitutions, we are entirely at a loſs; and on account of our ſhort continuance among theſe iſlanders, as well as for want of knowing their language, could never obtain any ſatisfactory information. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

With the acquiſitions which we had made, we continued our excurſion to the northern arm of the harbour, where Mr. Smith, one of our mates, ſuperintended the waterers. We found a number of natives aſſembled about him, who brought ſo many hogs for ſale, that we were plentifully ſupplied with freſh meat, and could ſerve it every day to both ſhips companies. Vegetables on the

1773. SEPTEMBER. other hand were ſo ſcarce here, that we rarely got plantanes, bread-fruit, and coco-nuts, but contented ourſelves with ſome good yams, which when boiled ſupplied the place of bread. Towards noon we reached Oree's houſe, after walking along a beach of ſmall white ſhell ſand, amidſt a low kind of coco-palms, affording a good deal of ſhade, which is always acceptable in theſe climates. Captain Cook had been more ſucceſsful in trading than all the other parties, ſo that when we returned into the boat, we had ſcarce room enough to ſit in it. In the afternoon we returned to Oree's houſe, where we found him ſurrounded by a great number of the principal people of the iſland. They appeared to be ſo exactly like the Taheitians, that we could perceive no difference, nor could we by any means verify that aſſertion of former navigators, that the women of this iſland were in general fairer and more handſome*; but this may vary according to circumſtances. They were however not ſo troubleſome in begging for beads and other preſents, nor ſo forward to beſtow their favours on the new comers, though at our landing and putting off, ſome of the common ſort frequently performed an indecent ceremony, which is deſcribed in the accounts of former voyagers, but without any of the preparatory circumſtances which Ooratooa had

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 254.

prac-

practiſed †. We had likewiſe much leſs reaſon to extol the hoſpitality of the inhabitants, their general behaviour being rather more indifferent, and the Taheitian cuſtom of reciprocal preſents almoſt entirely unknown. On our walks we were unmoleſted, but their conduct was bolder and more unconcerned than that of the Taheitians, and the exploſion, as well as the effects of our fowling-pieces did not ſtrike them with fear and aſtoniſhment. Theſe differences were certainly owing to the various treament which the people of both iſlands had met with on the part of Europeans. There were, however, not wanting inſtances of hoſpitality and good-will even here. A chief, named *Townùa*, entreated my father to come to his houſe, which lay in the interior part of the plain. He accepted the invitation, and was very well entertained; beſides having an opportunity of purchaſing one of thoſe targets or breaſt-plates which I have already mentioned. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

Oree came on board early the next morning with his ſons, the eldeſt of them a handſome little boy, about eleven years old, who received our preſents with great indifference; but he, as well as all the people of the iſland, were highly delighted with the bagpipe, and required it to be conſtantly played. With Oree, who now went by the name of Cookee, as he had done whilſt the Endeavour lay here *, Sunday 5.

† See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 125. See alſo vol. I. p. 438, 440. They lifted up their garments from the knee to the waiſt.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 251.

1773. SEPTEMBER. we returned on ſhore, where we diſperſed in ſearch of plants and other curioſities. In the evening we all met together again, when Dr. Sparrman, who had been entirely by himſelf towards the north point of the iſle, acquainted us that he had met with a large lagoon of ſalt-water, which extended ſeveral miles parallel to the coaſt, and had an intolerable ſtench on account of the putrid mud which lay on its ſhores. Here he had met with ſeveral plants, which are common enough in the iſles and coaſts of the Eaſt Indies, but not ſo frequent in other parts of the South Sea iſlands. A ſingle native, whom he had entruſted with his plant-bag, had proved extremely faithful to him. Whenever the doctor ſat down to deſcribe, the native ſeated himſelf behind him, and took both the ſkirts of his coat, containing his pockets, in his hand, in order, as he ſaid, to prevent the thieves from coming at them. By this means the doctor had not loſt any thing when he came on board; ſeveral of the natives, however, ſeeming to think him in their power, had beſtowed upon him ſome ill-natured looks and opprobrious names.

The next day he ventured out again entirely by himſelf, while we remained at the trading-place with captain Cook. One of the natives, named Tubaï, a tall man, dreſſed in ſeveral large pieces of the cloth of bark, ſtained with red, and who had ſeveral bundles of birds feathers hanging at his girdle, prohibited the ſale of hogs and bread-fruit, and

actually

actually ſeized a bag of nails which the captain's clerk held in his hand. However, when the latter called for aſſiſtance, he let it go again, and perceiving one of our young gentlemen trying to ſtrike a bargain for a large fowl, he took a nail from him by force, and threatened to beat him with his club. A complaint being made to captain Cook, juſt as he was going aboard in a boat, he returned aſhore, and bid Tubaï to leave the place. Upon his refuſal, the captain went up to him and ſeized two large clubs which the native had in his hand; but the latter ſtruggled with him, till captain Cook drew his hanger, on which he made off. The clubs, which were made of the caſuarina wood, were broken and the pieces thrown into the ſea, by the captain's order, while he recalled the reſt of the natives, who began to be alarmed, and were preparing to leave the trading-place. They all agreed that this Tubaï was a bad man, *(tata-eeno,)* and ſeemed to think that we had done him juſtice. However, as captain Cook was going to ſend his boat on board for a party of marines to protect our traders, the whole croud diſperſed at once and left us alone. We had not been above two minutes at a loſs to account for their behaviour, when Dr. Sparrman arrived almoſt ſtripped naked, and with the marks of ſeveral violent blows. He had been accoſted on his walk by two of the natives, who had invited him to proceed farther into the country, with many proteſtations

1773. SEPTEMBER.

of

1773. SEPTEMBER. of friendſhip, and repetitions of the word *tayo*. At once, taking the advantage of an unguarded moment, they tore from his ſide a hanger, the only weapon he had, and gave him a blow over his head as he was ſtooping to arm himſelf with a ſtone. He ſtumbled, and they tore a black ſattin waiſtcoat and ſeveral looſe parts of dreſs from him. However, diſengaging himſelf, he ran towards the beach and outſtripped them, when ſome bind-weeds caught his feet, and detained him till the villains came up. They gave him repeated blows over his temples and ſhoulders, which ſtunned him; ſtripped his ſhirt over his head, and were juſt preparing to cut his hands, becauſe the ſleeve-buttons held the ſhirt, when he fortunately opened them with his teeth, and they made off with their booty. Not above fifty yards farther on, ſome natives were at dinner, who, ſeeing him paſſing by, came out and invited him to ſtop, but he hurried on towards the ſea. In his way, however, he met two natives, who immediately took off their own cloth, *(abòw,)* dreſſed him in it, and attended him to the trading-place. Theſe honeſt people were rewarded to the beſt of our power with various preſents, and we all hurried on board to reinforce our party. Dr. Sparrman being dreſſed again, accompanied us to Oree's houſe to whom we made our complaint. The old chief immediately reſolved to aſſiſt captain Cook in the ſearch after the thieves, but his noble reſolution filled all his relations with

with terror. Upwards of fifty people of both ſexes began to weep when he ſtepped into the boat; ſome with the moſt pathetic and moving geſtures tried to diſſuade him; and others held him back and embraced him; but he was not to be prevailed upon, and went off with us, ſaying, that he had nothing to apprehend, becauſe he was not the guilty perſon. My father offered to remain on ſhore as an hoſtage, but he would not admit of it, and took only one of his relations in the boat with him. We rowed up a deep creek oppoſite the ſhips, where this villainy had been committed, and afterwards took a long walk into the country to no purpoſe; for all Oree's meſſengers, who were ſent to apprehend the robbers, did not perform their duty. At laſt we returned to the boat, where Oree re-embarked with us, notwithſtanding the tears of an old lady and of her handſome daughter. The young woman, in a fit of frantic grief, took up ſome ſhells and cut herſelf on the head with them, but her mother tore them out of her hands, and actually accompanied Oree to the ſhip. Here he dined with us very heartily, but the woman, according to the cuſtom of the country, would not touch our proviſions. After dinner we brought him back to his houſe, which was crouded with different groups of the principal families on the iſland, who ſat on the ground, and many of whom ſhed tears plentifully. We ſat down amongſt theſe diſconſolate people, and with all the Tahei- 1773. SEPTEMBER.

1773. SEPTEMBER. tian oratory we were maſters of, endeavoured to ſooth them into content and good humour. The women, in particular, ſhewed a great ſenſibility, and could not recover for a long while. At laſt we ſucceeded to appeaſe their violence of grief; and, as ſome of us could not behold their diſtreſs, without admiring the excellence of their hearts, we naturally ſympathized with them, with a degree of ſincerity which entirely regained their confidence. It is indeed one of the happieſt reflections which this voyage has enabled us to make, that inſtead of finding the inhabitants of theſe iſles wholly plunged in ſenſuality, as former voyagers have falſely repreſented them, we have met with the moſt generous and exalted ſentiments among them, that do honour to the human race in general. Vicious characters are to be met with in all ſocieties of men; but for one villain in theſe iſles, we can ſhew at leaſt fifty in England, or any civilized country.

In a little time the trade went on as briſkly as ever, and we were particularly fortunate in obtaining a ſupply of vegetables. Towards evening two of Oree's meſſengers arrived with the hanger and a part of Dr. Sparrman's waiſtcoat, which were reſtored to him, and with theſe ſoon after we returned on board.

In the morning, at day-break, the captains went to Oree's houſe, and returned the piece of pewter on which the commemoration of the firſt diſcovery was engraved.

At

At the ſame time they gave him a piece of copper, with this inſcription: HIS BRITANNICK MAJESTY'S SHIPS RESOLUTION AND ADVENTURE, SEPTEMBER 1773. to which they added a number of medals, and deſired him to ſhew it to any ſtrangers that happened to touch here. As ſoon as they were on board again, the ſeamen hove the anchor, and we got under ſail, in company with the Adventure. The quantity of live ſtock which we had purchaſed during our three days ſtay was amazing, and ſhewed how great a value the natives had ſet upon our iron-work. The Reſolution alone had two hundred and nine live hogs, thirty dogs, and about fifty fowls on board, when ſhe ſailed, and the Adventure had not much leſs. We were ſcarce got under way when Oree arrived along-ſide in a ſmall canoe, and came on board; he acquainted us that the robbers, and the things they had carried off, were taken, and deſired both the captains, as well as Dr. Sparrman, to come on ſhore, in order to ſee the villains puniſhed. But unfortunately his ſtory was miſunderſtood, and we loſt an opportunity of ſeeing their method of inflicting puniſhments. Captain Cook believing that Oree ſpoke of ſome of his countrymen who were embarked in the Adventure againſt his will, immediately diſpatched his boat to bring them back; but that veſſel being a great way ahead, and we driving out to ſea very faſt, Oree became impatient, took a cordial leave of us all, and returned on ſhore in his little 1773. SEPTEMBER.

1773. SEPTEMBER. canoe, with only one of his countrymen to aſſiſt him. A little while after our boat returned from the Adventure, and brought on board *O-Maï*, the only native who had embarked in that veſſel with a view to go to England. He ſtaid on board our ſhip till we reached Raïetea, whither we now directed our courſe. As ſoon as we were come to an anchor there, he returned on board the Adventure, and afterwards came to England in her, and has for ſome time engroſſed the attention of the curious. He ſeemed to be one of the common people at that time, as he did not aſpire to the captain's company, but preferred that of the armourer and the common ſeamen. But when he reached the Cape of Good Hope, where the captain dreſſed him in his own clothes, and introduced him in the beſt companies, he declared he was not a *towtòw*, which is the denomination of the loweſt claſs, and aſſumed the character of a *hòa*, or attendant upon the king. The world hath been amuſed at times with different fabulous accounts concerning this man, among which we need only mention the ridiculous ſtory of his being a "Prieſt of the Sun;" a character which has never exiſted in the iſlands from whence he came. His ſtature was tall, but very ſlim, and his hands remarkably ſmall. His features did not convey an idea of that beauty which characterizes the men at O-Taheitee; on the contrary, we do him no injuſtice to aſſert that, among all the inhabitants of Taheitee and the Society Iſles,

Iſles, we have ſeen few individuals ſo ill-favoured as himſelf. His colour was likewiſe the darkeſt hue of the common claſs of people, and correſponded by no means with the rank he afterwards aſſumed. It was certainly unfortunate that ſuch a man ſhould be ſelected as a ſpecimen of a people who have been juſtly extolled by all navigators, as remarkably well-featured and coloured, conſidering the climate in which they live. The qualities of his heart and head reſembled thoſe of his countrymen in general; he was not an extraordinary genius like Tupaia, but he was warm in his affections, grateful, and humane; he was polite, intelligent, lively, and volatile. For a further account of O-Maï, I refer the reader to the preface, where I have mentioned his ſtay in England, his progreſs in knowledge, and his equipment at his return. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

Having left Huahine we ſailed to the weſtward, and doubled the ſouth end of an iſland, diſcovered by captain Cook in 1769, which all the natives of Taheitee, and the Society Iſles call O-Raietea, but which (upon what foundation I know not) is named Ulietea in captain Cook's charts *. The next morning we anchored in an opening of the reef, and ſpent the whole day in warping into Hamaneno harbour. The country hereabouts afforded a proſpect much reſembling Taheitee; for the iſland being about three times the ſize of Huahine, had much broader Wedneſday 8.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 255, 260.

plains,

1773. SEPTEMBER. plains, and loftier hills. The natives ſurrounded us in a number of canoes, and brought a few hogs; but our people looked at them with a careleſs indifference, and offered very low prices, being difficult to pleaſe, ſince their ſucceſs at Huahine. In one of the canoes a chief came on board, named Oruwherra, a native of the adjacent iſle of Borabora (Bolabola.) He was very athletic, but his hands very ſmall, and the punctuation, which the natives call tattow, conſiſted of the moſt ſingular ſquare blotches on his arms, and of large black ſtripes acroſs the breaſt, belly, and back. His loins and thighs were uniformly black. He brought ſome green branches, and a little pig which he preſented to my father, being neglected by every body elſe. Having received a few iron-tools as a return, he deſcended immediately into his canoe, and was paddled to the ſhore. But in a little time, another canoe arrived from him with coco-nuts and bananas, which his ſervants offered to his new friend, refuſing at the ſame time to accept of any retribution. The pleaſure which we felt from this circumſtance, can eaſily be conceived. Philanthropy is never better rewarded, than when its objects are endowed with good and amiable qualities.

In the afternoon another chief, a native of the ſame iſle of Borabora, came on board, and exchanged names with my father. His name was Herea, and his perſon the moſt corpulent we ever ſaw in the South Sea iſlands; round his waiſt

waiſt he meaſured no leſs than fifty-four inches, and one of his thighs was thirty-one inches and ¾ in girth. His hair was likewiſe remarkable; for it hung down in long black wavy treſſes to the ſmall of his back, and in ſuch quantity that it encreaſed the apparent bulk of his head conſiderably. His corpulence, his colour, and his punctures, like thoſe of Oruwherra, were very diſtinguiſhing marks of his rank, to which indolence and luxury are annexed here as well as at Taheitee. It may perhaps want ſome explanation, how both theſe chiefs, who were natives of the adjacent iſle of Borabora, could have any authority and poſſeſſions on Raietea. Already, in captain Cook's former voyage, it was known that O-Poonee the king of Borabora, had conquered not only the iſle of Raietea, but likewiſe that of O-Taha, which is included in the ſame reef, and that of Mowrua which lies about fifteen leagues to the weſtward *. The warriors who had ſerved under him in theſe expeditions had been rewarded with ample poſſeſſions, and a great number of his ſubjects had received grants in the conquered iſlands. The king of Raietea Oo-Ooroo, was however confirmed in his dignity, though his power was confined to the diſtrict of Opoa; but at Taha, Poonee had placed a viceroy, named Boba, who was nearly related to him. Many of the natives of the conquered iſlands had retreated to Huahine and Taheitee,

1773. SEPTEMBER.

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 266, 267.

pre-

1773. SEPTEMBER. preferring a voluntary exile, to a ſubmiſſion to the conqueror, and hoping one day to reſcue their country from oppreſſion. It ſeems, this was the motive which prompted Tupaïa and O-Maï, who were both natives of Raietea, to embark in Britiſh ſhips, as both of them always expreſſed a hope of obtaining a quantity of our fire-arms. Tupaia might perhaps have carried his ſcheme into execution, if he had lived; but O-Maï's underſtanding was not ſufficiently penetrative, to acquire a competent idea of our wars, or to adapt it afterwards to the ſituation of his countrymen. He was, however, ſo fond of the thought of freeing his country from the Borabora men, that he has frequently ſaid, in England, if captain Cook did not aſſiſt him in the execution of his plan, he would take care that his countrymen ſhould not ſupply him with refreſhments. In this opinion he perſiſted till near the time of his departure, when he was perſuaded to adopt more peaceable principles. We were at a loſs to conceive the motives which could have induced a native of one of theſe iſlands to become a conqueror. If we believed the accounts of the Borabora men, their native iſland was as fertile and deſireable as theſe of which they had taken poſſeſſion; therefore nothing but a ſpirit of ambition could have ſtimulated them to contentions. Such a ſpirit ill agreed with the ſimplicity and generous character of the people, and it gave us pain to be convinced, that

that great imperfections cannot be excluded from the beſt of human ſocieties. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

On the day after our arrival, the captains went on ſhore with us to a large houſe, cloſe to the water's ſide, which he knew to be the reſidence of Orèa, the chief of the diſtrict. We found him ſitting in his houſe, with his wife, ſon, daughter, and a great number of perſons of diſtinction. Immediately after our arrival we ſat down by them, and were ſhut in on all ſides by a thick croud of the natives, who made the place exceſſively hot. Orèa was a middle-ſized, luſty man, with a very lively intelligent countenance, and thin rediſh-brown beard. He joked and laughed very heartily with us, and entirely baniſhed all kinds of ceremony and affectation. His wife was an elderly woman, but his ſon and daughter, about twelve and fourteen years old. The latter was of a very white colour, and her features had not much of the general character of the nation, particularly her noſe, which was remarkably well-ſhaped, and her eyes, which gave her ſome reſemblance to a Chineſe. Her ſtature was low, but her body elegantly proportioned, and her hands graceful beyond deſcription; only the legs and feet were too large for the reſt of the figure, and the cuſtom of cutting the hair ſhort, appeared to be a great diſadvantage. Her manners were very engaging, and ſhe had a pleaſing ſoft voice, like moſt of her countrywomen, ſo that ſhe could not be refuſed, when ſhe aſked Thurſday 9.

1773. SEPTEMBER. for beads or other trinkets. As it did not agree with our occupations, to ſtay in the houſe, we took a walk into the groves, where we ſhot a few birds, and collected ſome plants. We found here, to our great ſatisfaction, that confidence and familarity amongſt the common people, which we had not experienced at Huahine, and we were happy at the ſame time not to be importuned by them, in the begging ſtrain of the Taheitians. In the afternoon we made another excurſion, and ſhot ſeveral king-fiſhers. As ſoon as we had ſhot the laſt, we met Orèa, and his family walking through the plain with captain Cook; the chief took no notice of the bird which we had in our hands, but his fair daughter lamented the death of her eatua, and ran from us, when we attempted to touch her with it. Her mother, and moſt of the women, ſeemed likewiſe to be grieved at this accident, and at ſtepping into the boat, the chief deſired us with a very ſerious air, not to kill the king-fiſhers and herons on his iſland, allowing at the ſame time the liberty of ſhooting any other ſorts of birds. We tried again to diſcover the nature of their veneration for theſe two ſpecies, but all our enquiries were as fruitleſs as they had been before.

We walked to the top of one of the neighbouring hills
Friday 10. the next day, and found ſeveral new plants in the vallies, between them. The ſoil at the top was a kind of ſtone marle; on the ſides we found ſome ſcattered flints, and a few

few ſmall pieces of a cavernous or ſpungy ſtone-lava, of a whitiſh colour, which ſeemed to contain ſome remains of iron. This metal, which is of general and extenſive utility, is diſperſed through almoſt all parts of the world, by the benevolent hand of nature, and may perhaps even here be contained in the mountains, in great quantity. The lava indicated the exiſtence of former volcanoes in this iſland, which we had indeed ſuſpected, becauſe all the adjacent iſles, we had hitherto ſeen, ſtrongly, and ſometimes evidently bore the marks of changes by ſubterraneous fire. One of the natives who had attended us, and carried ſome refreſhments, pointed out the direction of ſeveral iſlands in the neighbourhood, but which lay out of ſight. About due weſt, he ſaid, the iſle of Mopeehàh was ſituated, and about S. by W. another, named Whennua-òwrah. Both theſe, according to his accounts, were not inhabited, and conſiſted only of circular ledges of coral, with palms on them, but were occaſionally viſited from this and the adjacent iſles. They ſeem to be Lord Howe's Iſland, and the Scilly Iſles, diſcovered by captain Wallis. We deſcended about noon, and found that captains Cook and Furneaux had juſt left the ſhore, after ſeeing a great dramatic dance, or heèva, performed by ſome of the principal women in the iſland. We haſtened on board, as the day proved very hot, and found both our veſſels ſurrounded by a great number of canoes, in which were ſeveral perſons of diſtinction

1773. SEPTEMBER.

1773. SEPTEMBER. of both ſexes, who brought vaſt quantities of cloth, made of the mulberry-tree's bark, and offered them in exchange for ſmall nails. Our beads were much valued by the ladies as ornaments, but by no means current like the nails, ſo that we could not even purchaſe fruit with them. The Taheitians ſet a much higher value on theſe trifles, which have no intrinſic worth; may we not conclude therefore, that a greater degree of general opulence is the cauſe of their particular affection for trinkets, eſpecially as affluence commonly tends to luxury?

The heat of the day prevented us from going on ſhore till near ſun-ſet. We landed at the watering-place, where we found a little *tupapow*, or ſhed, under which a dead body was depoſited on a ſtage, and a thick grove of various ſhady trees ſurrounded it on all ſides. As I had never ſeen the remains of the dead careleſsly expoſed to all kinds of accidents in theſe iſlands, I was a little ſurpriſed to find the ground ſtrewed with ſculls and bones about this ſhed; nor could I meet with any native at this time, from whom I could receive the leaſt information on this ſubject. I rambled about here for ſome time entirely alone, all the inhabitants having repaired to the chief's houſe, where the drums gave notice of another heeva, or public dance; for they are ſo fond of this amuſement, that they croud together from a conſiderable diſtance to have the pleaſure of ſeeing it performed. The ſtillneſs of the evening, and the

the beauty of the ſpot made this walk extremely pleaſant, while the abſence of the inhabitants encouraged ſome ideas of an enchanted country. Before we returned to our boat, we met, however, with a few of the natives, amongſt whom one, a very intelligent man, gave us an account of nine iſlands in the neighbourhood, with moſt of which we were unacquainted. Their names were, 1. *Mopeehàh*, 2. *Whennua-Oùrah*, 3. *Adeéha*, 4. *Towtèepa*, 5. *Wouwòu*, 6. *Oobòrŏo*, 7. *Tubŏoài*, 8. *Awhàow*, and 9. *Rorotòa*. The two firſt we had already heard of in the morning, but of the reſt he aſſerted that they all had their own inhabitants, except Adeèha, which is occaſionally viſited. Oobòrroo he ſaid was a whennua or high land, but all the reſt he called mòtoo, that is low iſlands, or ſuch as conſiſt of ledges of coral. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

Our curioſity was ſo much raiſed by theſe accounts, that we applied for farther information to the chief Orèa, who came on board the next morning with his ſon Tehaïura, and ſeveral other chiefs. They enumerated the firſt, ſecond, ſeventh and ninth iſlands of the preceding account; but their relations differed in this reſpect, as they told us the ſecond was regularly inhabited. Beſides theſe they ſpoke of two more, one called Woreèo or Woureèa, a large iſland, and Oreèmatàrra another, both which had ſettled inhabitants. The accounts of the ſituation and diſtances of theſe iſles were ſo various and ſo vague, that we could

1773. SEPTEMBER. could by no means depend upon them, for we never met with any man who had viſited them; however, they ſerved to convince us, that the natives of the Society Iſles have ſometimes extended their navigation farther than its preſent limits, by the knowledge they have of ſeveral adjacent countries. Tupaya, the famous man who embarked at Taheitee in the Endeavour, had enumerated a much more conſiderable liſt of names, and had actually drawn a map of their reſpective ſituations and magnitudes, of which lieutenant Pickerſgill obligingly communicated a copy to me. In this map we found all the names above-mentioned, except Ooborroo and Tuboòai: but if his drawing had been exact, our ſhips muſt have ſailed over a number of the iſlands which he had laid down. It is therefore very probable that the vanity of appearing more intelligent than he really was, had prompted him to produce this fancied chart of the South Sea, and perhaps to invent many of the names of iſlands in it, which amounted to more than fifty.

The chief and his ſon breakfaſted with us, and went aſhore with a number of preſents in return for ſome of theirs. We followed ſoon after, and were invited by him to become ſpectators of a dramatic dance or heeva; which was the more readily accepted by us, as we had never ſeen one before. The place where it was performed was an area, about twenty-five yards long and ten wide, encloſed between two houſes which ſtood parallel to each other.

The

1773. SEPTEMBER.

The one was a ſpacious building, capable of containing a great multitude of ſpectators; but the other was only a narrow hut, which was ſupported on a row of poſts, and open towards the area, but perfectly cloſed up with reeds and mats on the oppoſite ſides; one corner of it was matted on all ſides, and this was the dreſſing-room of the performers. The whole area was ſpread with three large mats of the beſt workmanſhip, ſtriped with black on the edges. In the open part of the ſmaller hut we ſaw three drums of different ſizes, cut out of ſolid wood, and covered with ſhark's ſkin, which were continually ſtruck with the fingers only by four or five men with amazing dexterity. The largeſt of theſe drums was about three feet high and one in diameter. We had already ſat ſome time under the oppoſite roof, amidſt the principal ladies of the iſland, when the actreſſes appeared. One of them was Poyadua, the fair daughter of the chief Orèa, and the other a tall well ſhaped lady, of very agreeable features, and likewiſe a very fair complexion *. Their dreſs was remarkably different from the uſual faſhion of theſe iſlands. It conſiſted of a piece of the brown cloth, of the country fabrick; or, inſtead of that, of a piece of blue European cloth, cloſely wrapped round the breaſt, ſo as to reſemble the cloſe dreſſes which our ladies wear; a kind of ruff of four rows of their cloth, alternately red and

* That is, conſidering her as a native of the Society Iſles.

white,

1773. SEPTEMBER. white, reſted on their hips, being tied on with a ſtring; and from thence a great quantity of white cloth deſcended to the feet, forming an ample petticoat, which we expected, from its length, would be a conſiderable impediment to their agility, as it fairly trailed on the ground on all ſides. The neck, ſhoulders, and arms were left uncovered, but the head was ornamented with a kind of turban, about eight inches high, made of ſeveral ſkains of plaited human hair, which they call tamòw. Theſe being laid above each other in circles, which enlarged towards the top, there was a deep hollow left in the middle, which they had filled up with a great quantity of the ſweet-ſcented flowers of the *(gardenia)* Cape jaſmine. But all the front of the turban was ornamented with three or four rows of a ſmall white flower, which formed little ſtars, and had as elegant an effect on the jetty black hair as if it had been ſet out with pearls. They moved to the ſound of the drums, and to all appearance under the direction of an old man, who danced with them, and pronounced ſeveral words, which, from the tone of his voice, we took to be a ſong. Their attitudes and geſtures were much varied, and ſometimes might admit of being conſtrued into wantonneſs; but they were entirely free from that poſitive degree of groſs indecency which the chaſte eyes of Engliſh ladies of faſhion are *forced* to behold at the opera. The movement of their arms is certainly very graceful, and the continual geſticulation of their

their fingers has ſomething extremely elegant. The only action which gives offence to all our ideas of gracefulneſs and harmony, is the frightful cuſtom of writhing their mouths into the ſtrangeſt diſtortions, which it was impoſſible for any one of us to imitate. They ſcrewed their mouth into a ſlanting direction, and at laſt threw the lips into a waving or undulated form, which ſeemed to us to be performed by means of an habitual and ſudden convulſion. After they had danced for about ten minutes, they retired into the part of the houſe which I called their dreſſing-room, and five men, dreſſed in mats, took their place, performing a kind of drama. This conſiſted of dancing in an indecent manner, and of a dialogue which had ſome cadence, and in which they ſometimes pronounced a few words ſhouting all together. This dialogue ſeemed to be cloſely connected with their actions. One of them kneeled down, and another beat him and plucked him by the beard, repeating the ſame ceremony with two others; but the laſt ſeized and beat him in his turn with a ſtick. After this they withdrew, and the drummers gave notice of the ſecond act of dancing, which the two ladies performed with little variation from the firſt. The men took their turn a ſecond time; the ladies ſucceeded them again, and concluded with a fourth act. Then they ſat down to reſt themſelves, appearing fatigued to a great degree, and in a moſt profuſe perſpiration; one of them in particular, being 1773. SEPTEMBER.

1773. SEPTEMBER. rather luſtier and of a lively diſpoſition, had a ſuffuſion of red in her cheeks, which was the ſtrongeſt proof of her fair complexion. The other, Orèa's daughter, had performed her part to admiration, notwithſtanding the fatigue of the preceding day, when ſhe had acted both in the morning and evening. The officers of both ſhips, who were preſent, and ourſelves, loaded them with a great variety of beads and ornaments, which they had ſo well deſerved.

In the afternoon Oo-òoroo, the king of the iſle of Raietea, came on board with Orèa and ſeveral ladies, to viſit captain Cook. He brought a hog as an introductory preſent, and was well repaid with a great quantity of European goods. Among the ladies was one of the dancers, named Teina or Teinamai, who had performed in the morning, and whoſe complexion we had much admired. She now appeared to much greater advantage than in the cumbrous dreſs which ſhe wore during the ceremony. Her own hair, which fortunately was not cut, formed finer ebon ringlets than ever the luxuriant fancy of a painter produced, and a narrow fillet of white cloth was careleſsly paſſed between them. Her eyes were full of fire and expreſſion, and an agreeable ſmile ſat in her round face. Mr. Hodges took this opportunity of drawing a ſketch of her portrait, which her vivacity and reſtleſs diſpoſition rendered almoſt impoſſible. This was, perhaps, the reaſon

that

that he was leſs ſucceſsful than uſual, as the repreſentation which is inſerted in captain Cook's own account of this voyage, is infinitely below the delicacy of the original, notwithſtanding the excellence of Mr. Sherwin's engraving. But though it has loſt the reſemblance to Teinamai, it may ſerve as a ſpecimen of the generality of features in this and the neighbouring iſlands, and gives a tolerable idea of a Taheitian boy about ten years old. Towards ſun-ſet, all our noble viſitors returned aſhore, extremely well pleaſed with the reception which they had met with; a number of women of the loweſt rank, however, remained on our decks, with a complaiſance equal to that of the Taheitian girls, (ſee pag. 336.) 1773. SEPTEMBER.

It was remarkable that they were not without ſome degree of vanity, as they never gave themſelves any other name than that of *tedùa*, (lady,) which is the title of their female nobility, and which, by way of eminence, is particularly applied to the princeſſes of theſe iſlands. If the king's ſiſter happened to paſs by while we ſat in a houſe at Taheitee, the natives who ſurrounded us were warned to uncover their ſhoulders, by ſome one who ſpied her at a diſtance, ſimply ſaying *tedua harremai*, (the lady comes hither!) or elſe they only ſaid *aree!* which on ſuch occaſions always denoted one of the royal family. Our ſailors, who did not underſtand the language, took it for granted that

1773. SEPTEMBER. their dulcineas were all of one name, which frequently occaſion ſome pleaſant miſtakes.

Sunday 12. Monday 13. We ſpent the two next days in various rambles along the ſhores, in which we found many deep creeks towards the northern part, with marſhes at the bottom, where wild-ducks and ſnipes reſided in great plenty. Theſe birds were more ſhy than we expected, which we ſoon learnt was owing to their being much purſued by the natives, who looked upon them as dainty bits. On the firſt of theſe days we were likewiſe entertained with another heeva or dramatic dance, by the ſame perſons who had performed it before. It was in every reſpect the ſame with that which we ſaw on the 11th, only its duration was much ſhorter.

Tueſday 14. On the 14th, at day-break, captain Cook ſent his launch, and captain Furneaux another boat, to the iſle of O-Tahà, which was two or three leagues diſtant, and incloſed in the ſame reef within which we lay at anchor. They were in hopes of purchaſing ſome fruit there, which was very ſcarce at Raietea, and to that purpoſe provided lieutenant Pickerſgill and Mr. Rowe the mate of the Adventure, with a quantity of beads and nails. Dr. Sparrman and my father, unwilling to miſs this opportunity of examining another iſland, likewiſe embarked with them.

OREA, the chief of this part of the iſland, having invited us to come and dine on ſhore, the captains, with ſeveral officers and paſſengers of both ſhips, and myſelf, went on

on ſhore about noon, taking with us a little pepper and ſalt, ſome knives, and a few bottles of wine. A great part of the chief's ſpacious houſe was ſpread with quantities of leaves, which ſerved as a table-cloth, round which we ſeated ourſelves, with the principal inhabitants. We had not waited long, before one of the common people arrived with a hog ſmoking on his ſhoulders, roaſted whole, and wrapped in a large bundle of plantane-leaves, which he threw upon the floor in the midſt of us: a ſecond toſſed a ſmaller to us in the ſame manner; and theſe were followed by ſeveral others bringing baſkets, full of bread-fruit, bananas, and the fermented paſte of bread-fruit, called mahei. Our hoſt now deſired us to help ourſelves, and in a ſhort time we had cut the two hogs in pieces. All the women, and the common ſort of people, applied to us with a begging tone for portions, and what we diſtributed was handed from our neighbours, to the remoteſt perſons in the croud. The men conſumed their ſhare with every mark of a good appetite, but the women carefully wrapped theirs up, and preſerved it till they ſhould be alone. The eagerneſs with which they repeated their importunities, as well as the envious looks of the chiefs, whenever we granted the requeſt, convinced us, that the commonalty were in this iſland deprived of all ſorts of luxuries and dainties. We all agreed that the pork which was ſet before us, taſted infinitely better, than if it had been

1773. SEPTEMBER.

dreſſed

1773. SEPTEMBER. dreſſed after the European manner. It was much juicier than our boiled, and beyond compariſon more tender than roaſted meat. The equal degree of heat with which it ſtews under-ground, had preſerved and concentrated all its juices. The fat was not luſcious and ſurfeiting, and the ſkin inſtead of being hard as a ſtone, which is always the caſe with our roaſted pork, was as tender as any other part. After dinner our bottles and glaſſes were brought in, and our friend Orèa drank his ſhare without flinching, which appeared to us rather extraordinary, ſince almoſt all the natives of theſe iſlands expreſſed a great diſlike to our ſtrong liquors. Sobriety is a virtue almoſt univerſal with them, and particularly among people of inferior rank. They are however acquainted with an intoxicating beverage, which is much admired by ſome of the old chiefs. It is made in the moſt diſguſtful manner that can be imagined, from the juices contained in the root of a ſpecies of pepper-tree. This root is cut ſmall, and the pieces chewed by ſeveral people, who ſpit the macerated maſs into a bowl, where ſome water (milk) of coco-nuts is poured upon it. They then ſtrain it through a quantity of the fibres of coco-nuts, ſqueezing the chips, till all their juices mix with the cocoa-nut-milk; and the whole liquor is decanted into another bowl. They ſwallow this nauſeous ſtuff as faſt as poſſible; and ſome old topers value themſelves on being able to empty a great number of bowls. I was preſent

preſent at the whole proceſs one of the firſt days after our arri- 1773. SEPTEMBER.
val at this iſland. Our paſſenger, Porea, who was not ſo reſerved with the natives here as he had been at Huahine, brought one of his new acquaintances into the captain's cabin, and immediately ſat down with him to perform the operation. He drank about a pint, which in leſs than a qnarter of an hour made him ſo dead drunk, that he lay down on the floor without motion; his face was inflamed, and his eyes ſwelled out of his head. A ſound ſleep of ſeveral hours was neceſſary to reſtore him to his ſenſes; but as ſoon as he had recovered them, he appeared thoroughly aſhamed of his debauch. The pepper-plant is in high eſteem with all the natives of theſe iſlands as a ſign of peace; perhaps, becauſe getting drunk together, naturally implies good fellowſhip. It ſeems, however, that drunkenneſs here is puniſhed, like all other exceſſes, by diſeaſe. The old men who make a practice of it are lean, covered with a ſcaly or ſcabby ſkin, have red eyes, and red blotches on all parts of the body. They acknowledge theſe evils to be the conſequence of drinking; and to all appearance, the pepper-plant, which they call awa, tends to produce leprous complaints.

As ſoon as we had dined, our boat's crew and ſervants feaſted on the remains; and the ſame croud who had profited by our liberality before, now paid their court to them. The ſailors were complaiſant only to the fair ſex; and giving

1773. SEPTEMBER.

ing way to their natural diſpoſition for ſenſuality, for every piece of pork required the performance of an indecent denudation. To complete our entertainment this day, the chief gave orders for performing another heeva, and we were admitted (behind the ſcenes) to ſee the ladies dreſſing for that purpoſe. They obtained ſome ſtrings of beads on this occaſion, with which we took it into our heads to improve upon their ornaments, much to their own ſatisfaction. Among the ſpectators we obſerved ſeveral of the prettieſt women of this country; and one of them was remarkable for the whiteſt complexion we had ever ſeen in all theſe iſlands. Her colour reſembled that of white wax a little ſullied, without having the leaſt appearance of ſickneſs, which that hue commonly conveys; and her fine black eyes and hair contraſted ſo well with it, that ſhe was admired by us all. She received at firſt a number of little preſents, which were ſo many marks of homage paid at the ſhrine of beauty; but her ſucceſs, inſtead of gratifying, only ſharpened her love of trinkets, and ſhe inceſſantly importuned every one of us as long as ſhe ſuſpected we had a ſingle bead left. One of the gentlemen fortunately happened to have a little padlock in his hand, which ſhe begged for as ſoon as ſhe had perceived it. After denying it for ſome time, he conſented to give it her, and locked it in her ear, aſſuring her that was its proper place. She was well pleaſed for ſome time; but finding it too heavy, deſired

fired him to unlock it. He flung away the key, giving her to underſtand at the ſame time, that he had made her the preſent at her own deſire, and that if ſhe found it incumbered her, ſhe ſhould bear it as a puniſhment for importuning us with her petitions. She was diſconſolate upon this refuſal, and weeping bitterly, applied to us all to open the padlock; but if we had been willing, we were not able to comply with her requeſt for want of the key. She applied to the chief; and he as well as his wife, ſon and daughter, joined in praying for the releaſe of her ear; they offered cloth, perfume-wood, and hogs, but all in vain. At laſt a ſmall key was found to open the padlock, which put an end to the poor girl's lamentation, and reſtored peace and tranquility among all her friends. Her adventure had however this good effect, that it cured her and ſome of her forward country-women of their idle habit of begging. In the evening we returned on board, highly pleaſed with the hoſpitality and general good diſpoſition of the natives towards us. We were therefore ſurpriſed the next morning, that not a ſingle canoe would come off to us, and going to Orèa's houſe, in order to enquire the reaſon of this ſudden change of behaviour, we to our farther aſtoniſhment found it abandoned by him and his family. A few of the natives, who came to us with a good deal of diffidence, told us that he had retired towards the north point of the iſland, being afraid that we meant to take him priſoner. It was imme- 1773. SEPTEMBER.

1773. SEPTEMBER. diately reſolved upon to follow, in order to undeceive him, and give him freſh aſſurances of friendſhip. We rowed along ſhore for ſeveral miles, till we came to the place to which he had retired. At our interview all were in tears, ſo that we were obliged to have recourſe to a variety of careſſes, to inſpire them with new confidence towards us, and our beads, nails, and hatchets, were not the leaſt efficacious arguments. They told us they believed captain Cook would confine them, in order to force their countrymen to bring back thoſe people who were run away from us to O-Taha. We now ſaw through their miſtake, and aſſured them that our party had not run away, but was ſent on purpoſe, and would certainly return this night. Orèa not yet ſatisfied, named each of the principal perſons in that party ſingly, and enquired concerning every one, whether he would come back, and the poſitive anſwers which we returned, at laſt quieted his apprehenſions. While we were ſitting in a circle with them, Porea our Taheitian, who intended to go to England, came running to the captain, returned the powder-horn, which he had hitherto carried for him, and ſaid he would come back to us preſently. We waited in vain a good while, and at laſt were obliged to return on board without him; nor did we ſee him again during the little time we remained on the iſland. From the natives we could gather but little information, and the captain fearing leſt they ſhould take new alarm,

if

if he intereſted himſelf too ſtrongly in his behalf, entirely dropped the enquiry. After dinner I accompanied him to the ſhore again, on a viſit to Orèa. A very handſome youth, about ſeventeen years of age, who went by the name of O-Hedeedee, and who appeared to be of the better ſort of people by his complexion and good garments, addreſſed himſelf to me, expreſſing a deſire to embark for England. I was not inclined to believe at firſt, that he would forſake the eaſy way of life, which perſons of his rank enjoyed in theſe iſlands, and ſmiling at his propoſal, told him the diſagreeable circumſtances to which he expoſed himſelf by leaving his country. But, though I repreſented to him the rigours of climate which we had to endure, and the bad proviſions to which he ſhould be reduced in time, he was not to be diſſuaded from his reſolution, and a number of his friends joined with him to deſire his admittance into our ſhip. Upon this I preſented him to captain Cook, and he having granted his requeſt, we all returned on board together. Before ſun-ſet our boats returned from O-Taha, where they had collected a load of bananas and coco-nuts, and a few hogs. They landed there on the 14th in the morning, after a few hours ſail, in a fine bay on the eaſt ſide, called O-Hamene. The country and its inhabitants perfectly reſembled thoſe of the other iſlands in this archipelago. Their productions, vegetable and animal, were in general the ſame, varying only in the abundance or

1773. SEPTEMBER.

1773. SEPTEMBER. ſcarcity of ſome articles. Thus, for inſtance, the tree, which our ſailors called the apple-tree, *(ſpondias,)* was plentiful at Taheitee, extremely rare at Raietea and Huahine, and not very common at Tahà; fowls were hardly to be met with at Taheitee, but common in the Society Iſles; and rats, which infeſted Taheitee in numberleſs myriads, were not quite ſo numerous at O-Tahà; ſtill leſs frequent at Raietea, and ſeen in very inconſiderable numbers at Huahine.

After our party had dined in O-Hamene harbour, they removed to the next creek to the north, and walked to the houſe of a chief named O-Tàh, where the natives ſaid there would be a heeva or public dance. The crowd increaſed prodigiouſly as they approached it, and in their way they ſaw a woman at a conſiderable diſtance, dreſſed in a ſingular habit *, and blacked all over. They were told ſhe performed the burial rite, or mourned for a dead perſon. They found the aree, who was an elderly man, ſitting on a wooden ſtool, of which he offered one half to my father. The dance was begun ſome time after by three young girls, the eldeſt not exceeding ten, and the youngeſt about five years of age. The uſual muſic was performed on three drums, and in the intervals of the dance three men performed ſomething of a pantomime drama, which repreſented travellers aſleep, and thieves dextrouſly convey-

* This is to be deſcribed in the ſequel.

ing

ing away their goods, round which they had, for greater ſecurity, placed themſelves. During their performance the croud made way for ſeveral people who advanced towards the houſe in pairs, but ſtopped at the entrance. They were well dreſſed, with ſaſhes of their red cloth round their loins, and ſkains of the tamòw or plaited hair round their heads, and the whole upper part of their body was naked and anointed with coco-nut oil. Some among them were grown men and ſome boys. O-Tàh called them the O-Da-widdee *, which, from the geſtures he made to explain himſelf, our people underſtood to be mourners. When they appeared the area of the entrance was ſpread with cloth of bark, which was, however, taken up immediately and given to the drummers. One of the latter quarrelled with another native, and they fought, pulling each other by the hair, and giving ſome hearty blows. However, that the entertainment might not be interrupted, another drummer was ſubſtituted, and the boxers turned out of the houſe. Towards the end of the dance the croud made way, and the O-Da-widdee appeared once more, but ſtood ſtill, as they had done at firſt, without performing any other particular rite. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

A great number of canoes were hauled up along the ſhore before the chief's houſe, and in one of them, which

* Mahine and Omai called them by the name of Hea-biddhee and explained the word to ſignify relations.

had

1773. SEPTEMBER. had a roof or covering, there was a dead corſe, for which the mourning rites were inſtituted. Our gentlemen were obliged, therefore, to lay up their boats a little farther on, where they paſſed the night under ſhelter of a good houſe, whilſt it blew and rained exceſſively hard.

The next morning the chief, O-Tah, went into the boat with them, and they ſailed round the north point of the iſle, ſeeing a number of long low iſlands, covered with palm and other trees, which lay in the reef. They bought a quantity of good bananas about ten o'clock, and dined a little farther to the ſouthward, near the houſe of the greateſt chief in the iſland, whoſe name was Boba, and who governed it as a viceroy for O Poonee, the king of Borabora, (Bolabola) but was not on the iſland at that time. After dinner they miſſed a bag, which contained a number of nails, ſome looking-glaſſes, and ſeveral ſtrings of beads, being their whole ſtock in trade. After a ſhort debate, the officers reſolved to ſeize as much of the property of the inhabitants as poſſible, in order to force them to a reſtitution. They immediately began at the place where they traded, and took away a hog, ſome mother of pearl ſhells, and a quantity of cloth, not without being obliged to threaten with fire-arms. The party was then divided; ſome guarded the boats, ſome the goods which were ſeized, and ſome, with the lieutenant at their head, advanced into the country in queſt of greater ſeizures. The

old

old chief, O-Tah, accompanied them, and was under the ſtrongeſt influence of fear, which manifeſted itſelf like that of the dogs in the fable *. Wherever they came the inhabitants hurried away before them, and drove their hogs into the mountains. The officer ordered three muſkets to be fired to frighten them, upon which a chief, who had one leg and foot ſwelled to an enormous ſize by the *elephantiaſis*, returned and ſurrendered his hogs and ſeveral large bales of cloth. Our people next proceeded to Boba's houſe, which they ſtripped of two targets and a drum, and with theſe ſpoils they retired to the houſe which they had occupied before. O Tàh left them in the evening, but returned ſoon after with the ſtolen bag, containing about one half of the nails, beads, &c. which were taken away with it, and paſſed the night among our party. Early the next morning the proprietors of the goods which our people had ſeized, were told that every thing ſhould be reſtored on condition that they procured the remaining beads and nails. In the mean time they advanced towards O-Herurua Bay on the S. W. part of the iſland, and, on their way, the chief, O-Tàh, together with the other chief with the elephant's leg, who walked as well as any one of the reſt, produced moſt of the miſſing iron and trinkets, which had been hid in buſhes; upon which our people gave up the cloth, hogs, targets, &c. which had

1773. SEPTEMBER.

* See Phædr. Fab.

hitherto

1773. SEPTEMBER. hitherto remained in their hands, and rewarded the owner of the hut, where they had paſſed the night, as well as the old chief, for their fidelity and kindneſs. The beads which they had recovered, enabled them to purchaſe a quantity of bananas in the diſtrict of Herurua, and afterwards in a bay called A-Poto-Poto, or the Round Bay, where they ſaw one of the largeſt houſes in all the Society Iſles. It was full of inhabtiants, many of whom lodged with their families in different parts of it; the whole appearing to be rather a public building, erected for the caſual ſhelter of travellers, like the carvanſaras of the Eaſt, than a private dwelling-houſe. Here they dined, and after diſpoſing of every bead and nail which they had brought with them, ſet out on their return to the ſhips, where they arrived about four o'clock in the afternoon, thoroughly wet by the waves which beat into their boats.

The next morning, the chief Orèa with his family came to take leave of us, and the ſhip was filled with the friends of O-Hedeedee, who embarked with us, bringing him cloth of the country fabric, and a ſea-proviſion of their balls of fermented bread-fruit (mahei) which they are very fond of, and which is one of the moſt nutritive ſubſtances in the world. The daughter of Orèa, who had never ventured to viſit us before, came on board on this occaſion, to beg for the green awning of the captain's boat, which had mightily ſtruck her fancy. She received abundance of preſents, but the

the captain could not poſſibly grant her requeſt. The trade for their tools, cloth, &c. was very briſk all round the ſhip about this time, till the anchor was weighed. Our friends parted from us, with the ſincereſt expreſſions of grief, and ſhedding floods of tears, reproached ſome of us with a want of ſenſibility. Our civilized education in general tends to ſtifle the emotions of our heart; for as we are too often taught to be aſhamed of them, we unhappily conquer them by cuſtom. On the contrary, the ſimple child of nature, who inhabits theſe iſlands, gives free courſe to all his feelings, and glories in his affection towards the fellow-creature. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

Molliſſima corda
Humano generi dare ſe natura fatetur,
Quæ lacrymas dedit; hæc noſtri pars optima ſenſûs. JUVENAL.

A VOYAGE ROUND THE WORLD.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

Run from the Society Iſles to the Friendly Iſles, with an Account of our Tranſactions there.

1773. SEPTEMBER. WE cleared the reefs of Hamaneno towards ten o'clock, and ſteered to the W. S. W. having the iſlands of Raietea, Tahà, and Borabora in ſight. Only one month had elapſed ſince our arrival at Taheitee, and yet we found ourſelves recovered from the effects of a long uncomfortable cruize in cold wet climates, and during the worſt of ſeaſons; and all thoſe who had the ſtrongeſt ſymptoms of the ſcurvy at that time, were now as perfectly reſtored to their health as the reſt. The vegetables of this delightful group of iſlands had, in all likelihood, principally effected our cure, eſpecially as we left our firſt place of refreſhment, Aitepèha, in a tolerable ſtate of convaleſcence,

cence, though we had not then taſted any freſh animal food. Our proſpect for the next month to come promiſed a continuance of health, for we carried with us between two and three hundred hogs in each ſhip, beſides a number of fowls and ſome dogs, together with a great quantity of bananas, which formed a kind of orchard on our poop. It is true the want of room occaſioned the death of ſeveral hogs, and the obſtinacy of the old dogs in refuſing to take any ſuſtenance, deprived us of the greateſt number of thoſe animals. But we ſoon took an effectual method of ſaving our proviſions by killing all the hogs which were weakened by confinement, and ſtrewing the meat with ſalt. By this means it was preſerved, and remained palatable and juicy without being ſo unwholeſome as the pickled meat we brought from England, which was now ſo penetrated with ſalt, that if we attempted to ſweeten it in water, we extracted all the remaining juices. The only inconvenience which the ſtay among theſe iſles had brought upon our ſeamen, was a complaint which aroſe from their own intemperance, in carrying on a free connection with common women. But this, though many of them were affected with it, was fortunately of ſo ſlight a nature, that it did not, in general take them from their duty, and yielded quickly to the gentleſt remedies. 1773. SEPTEMBER.

Our young friend Hedeèdee, whom we had taken with us inſtead of the Taheitian Porèa, felt himſelf much affect-

1773. SEPTEMBER. ed with the ſea-ſickneſs, occaſioned by the motion of the ſhip, to which he was not accuſtomed. He told us, however, as we were looking at the high peak of Borabòra, that he was born in that iſland, and was nearly related to O-POONEE, the great king who had conquered Tahà and Raietea. He acquainted us, at the ſame time, that his own name was properly Mahine, he having exchanged it for that of Hedeedee with a chief in Eimeo; a cuſtom which, as I have already obſerved in another place, is common in all theſe iſlands. His relation, king O-Poonee, was at preſent, according to his account, at Mowrùa, an iſland which we paſſed in the afternoon. It conſiſted of a ſingle mountain, of a conic form, riſing into a ſharp point; and from the reports of the inhabitants of Raietea, ſome of whom had frequently viſited it, we had reaſon to conclude that its productions are perfectly ſimilar to thoſe of all the other iſles in this group.

Our poor friend did not recover his appetite till the next afternoon, when he feaſted on part of a dolphin of twenty-eight pounds weight, which had been caught by one of our ſeamen. We offered to have it dreſſed for him immediately, but he aſſured us it taſted much better raw; and accordingly we provided him with a bowl of ſea-water, in which he dipped the morſels as in a ſauce, and eat them with great reliſh, alternately biting into a ball of maheï, or ſour bread-fruit paſte, inſtead of bread. Before he ſat down

down to his meal, however, he ſeparated a little morſel of the fiſh and a bit of the mahei, as an offering to the Eatua or Divinity, pronouncing a few words at the ſame time, which we underſtood to be a ſhort prayer. He performed the ſame ceremony two days after, when he dined on a raw piece of ſhark. Theſe inſtances ſerved to convince us, that his countrymen have certain fixed principles of religion, and that a kind of ceremonial worſhip takes place among them, which they have perhaps preſerved ever ſince their firſt ſeparation from their anceſtors on the continent. SEPTEMBER. 1773. Monday 20.

We continued our courſe without any event worthy of of notice till the 23d, in the morning, when a low iſland appeared on our larboard bow. We ſteered towards it, and about noon found it was divided into two parts; the latitude which we obſerved at that time was 19° 8′ ſouth. We ſoon diſtinguiſhed a quantity of ſhrubs and tufted trees upon it, over which roſe a prodigious number of cocopalms. By the help of our glaſſes we obſerved that the ſhore was ſandy, but here and there over-run with verdure, which probably was occaſioned by the common bindweed of theſe climates (*convolvulus Braſilienſis*). A reef as we apprehended, connected the two parts of the iſland together, which notwithſtanding its agreeable appearance, ſeemed to be entirely uninhabited. Captain Cook gave it the name of Hervey's Iſle, in honour of the preſent earl of Briſtol. A bird which reſembled a ſand-piper in its flight, and Thurſday 23.

note,

1773. SEPTEMBER. note, had appeared about the ſhip, the day before we made this iſland, and might be ſaid to have announced its proximity, but though we obſerved another of the ſame ſort
Sunday 26. on the 26th, which actually ſettled in the rigging, yet we did not fall in with another iſland. We held a weſterly courſe from Hervey's Iſle, which lies in 19° 18′ ſouth latitude and 158° 54′ weſt longitude from Greenwich, till
OCTOBER. Friday 1. the firſt of October, when we ſaw land before us about two o' clock in the afternoon. In four hours time we came within two or three leagues of it, and found it of a moderate height; the hills were covered with trees, and offered a pleaſing, though not magnificent proſpect. At the ſouth-weſt extremity we obſerved a ſmall rocky iſlet, and to the northward a low land of greater extent. From thence we judged, that the iſle before us was the ſame which Abel Janſſen Taſman named Middleburg Iſle, in 1643, and that the other to the north, was that of Amſterdam, diſcovered by the ſame navigator. We lay to
Saturday 2. all night, and with day-break paſſed round the S. W. point of Middleburg Iſle, and ranged its weſtern coaſt. There appeared to be ſome low land at the bottom of the hills, which contained plantations of fine young bananas, whoſe vivid green leaves contraſted admirably with the different tints of various ſhrubberies, and with the brown colour of the coco palms, which ſeemed to be the effect of winter.

The

1773. OCTOBER.

The light was ſtill ſo faint, that we diſtinguiſhed ſeveral fires glimmering in the buſhes, but by degrees we likewiſe diſcerned people running along the ſhore. The hills which were low, and not ſo high above the level of the ſea as the Iſle of Wight, were agreeably adorned with ſmall clumps of trees ſcattered at ſome diſtance, and the intermediate ground appeared covered with herbage, like many parts of England. It was not long before we perceived ſome of the inhabitants buſied in launching ſeveral canoes, and paddling towards us. We threw a rope into one of theſe canoes which ran up cloſe to us, and one of the three people in her came on board, and preſented a root of the intoxicating pepper-tree of the South Sea Iſlands, touched our noſes with his like the New Zeelanders, in ſign of friendſhip, and then ſat down on the deck without ſpeaking a word. The captain preſented him with a nail, upon which he immediately held it over his own head, and pronounced *fagafetai*, which was probably an expreſſion of thankſgiving. He was naked to the waiſt, but from thence to the knees he had a piece of cloth wrapped about him, which ſeemed to be manufactured much like that of Taheitee, but was covered with a brown colour, and a ſtrong glue, which made it ſtiff, and fit to reſiſt the wet. His ſtature was middle-ſized, and his lineaments were mild and tolerably regular. His colour was much like that

of

1773. OCTOBER. of the common Taheitians *, that is, of a clear mahogany or chefnut brown; his beard was cut ſhort or ſhaven, and his hair was black, in ſhort frizzled curls, burnt as it were at the tips. He had three circular ſpots on each arm, about the ſize of a crown piece, conſiſting of ſeveral concentric circles of elevated points, which anſwered to the punctures of the Taheitians, but were not blacked; beſides theſe, he had other black punctures on his body. A ſmall cylinder was fixed through two holes in the lap of his ear, and his left hand wanted the little finger. He continued his ſilence for a conſiderable while, but ſome others, who ventured on board ſoon after him, were of a more communicative turn, and after having performed the ceremony of touching noſes, ſpoke a language which was unintelligible to us at that time. In the mean while we arrived at the N. W. point of the iſland, where we ſtruck ſoundings on a good bottom, in an open road, and let go our anchors about nine in the morning. We were preſently ſurrounded by a number of canoes, each containing three or four

* As I ſhall frequently mention the inhabitants of Taheitee, and of the Society Iſlands, in compariſon with other iſlanders, it will be proper to obſerve, that ſince the natives both of Taheitee and of the Society Iſlands, are perfectly alike in moſt reſpects, I ſhall indifferently call a cuſtom Taheitian, or uſual at the Society Iſlands, which is common to them both. Therefore, unleſs I expreſly put theſe terms in contradiſtinction to each other, I wiſh to have them underſtood in general as ſynonymous.

people,

people, who offered great quantities of their cloth for ſale. The canoes were ſmall, about fifteen feet long, very ſharp built, and decked or covered at each extremity. Moſt of them had out-riggers made of poles, like the ſmall canoes at Taheitee, but the workmanſhip of theſe boats was infinitely preferable, as they were joined together with an exactneſs which ſurpriſed us, and the whole ſurface had received an excellent poliſh. Their paddles had ſhort broad blades, ſomething like thoſe of Taheitee, but more neatly wrought, and of better wood. They made a great deal of noiſe about us, every one ſhewing what he had to ſell, and calling to ſome one of us, who happened to look towards them. Their language was not unpleaſing, and whatever they ſaid, was in a ſinging kind of tone. Many were bold enough to come on board, without expreſſing the leaſt heſitation, and one of theſe ſeemed to be a chief, or a man of ſome quality, and was accordingly treated with a number of preſents, which he ſeverally laid on his head, when he received them, ſaying *fagafetai* every time. Our Engliſh cloth and linen he admired moſt, and iron wares in the next degree. His behaviour was very free and unconcerned; for he went down into the cabin, and whereever we thought fit to conduct him. He likewiſe told us, upon our enquiry, that the iſland near which we lay at anchor, (the ſame which Taſman called Middleburg) was called Ea-Oowhe among his country-men; and that the 1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. other to the north (or Taſman's Amſterdam iſland) bore the name of Tonga-Tabboo. We conſulted ſeveral of the natives, in order to have greater certainty on this point, and always received the ſame names in anſwer.

After breakfaſt, the captains went on ſhore with us and the chief, who had continued on board all that time. A bed of coral rocks ſurrounded the coaſt, towards the landing-place; but many canoes occupied the deep channels between theſe rocks, and a great number of inhabitants in them as well as on the ſhore, ſhouted for joy at our approach. The canoes immediately came along ſide the boat, and the natives threw great bales of cloth into it, without aſking for any thing in return; while many of both ſexes ſwam about perfectly naked, holding up ſome trifles, ſuch as rings of tortoiſe-ſhell, fiſh-hooks of mother of pearl, and the like, for ſale. As ſoon as we could make way through the throng of canoes, we approached as near as poſſible to the ſhore, and were carried to it out of our boat, for which the natives very readily offered their backs. The people thronged about us with every expreſſion of friendſhip, and offered a few fruits, with a variety of arms and utenſils. The cordial reception which we met with, was ſuch as might have been expected from a people well acquainted with our good intentions, and accuſtomed to the tranſitory viſits of European ſhips. But theſe kind iſlanders had never ſeen Europeans among them, and could only have heard

of

of Taſman who viſited the adjacent Amſterdam iſland, by imperfect tradition. Nothing was therefore more conſpicuous in their whole behaviour than an open, generous diſpoſition, free from any mean diſtruſt. This was confirmed by the appearance of a great number of women in the croud, covered from the waiſt downwards, whoſe looks and ſmiles welcomed us to the ſhore. Mr. Hodges deſigned this memorable interview in an elegant picture, which has been engraved for captain Cook's account of this voyage. The ſame candour with which I have made it a rule to commend the performances of this ingenious artiſt, whenever they are characteriſtic of the objects which he meant to repreſent, obliges me to mention, that this piece, in which the execution of Mr. Sherwin cannot be too much admired, does not convey any adequate idea of the natives of Eaoowhe or of Tonga Tabbo. The plates which ornamented the hiſtory of captain Cook's former voyage, have been juſtly criticiſed, becauſe they exhibited to our eyes the pleaſing forms of antique figures and draperies, inſtead of thoſe Indians of which we wiſhed to form ſome idea. But it is alſo greatly to be feared, that Mr. Hodges has loſt the ſketches and drawings which he made from NATURE in the courſe of the voyage, and ſupplied the deficiency in this caſe, from his own elegant ideas. The connoiſſeur will find Greek contours and features in this picture, which have never exiſted in the South Sea. He

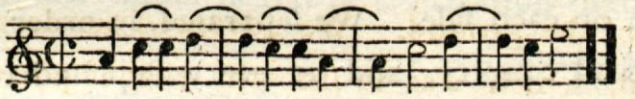
1773. OCTOBER.

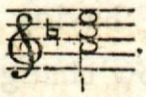
1773. OCTOBER. will admire an elegant flowing robe which involves the whole head and body, in an iſland where the women very rarely cover the ſhoulders and breaſt; and he will be ſtruck with awe and delight by the figure of a divine old man, with a long white beard, though all the people of Ea-oowhe ſhave themſelves with muſcle-ſhells.

We ſoon left the landing-place, and followed the chief, who invited us up into the country. The ground from the water's ſide roſe ſomewhat ſteep for a few yards, above which it flattened into a beautiful green lawn, ſurrounded by tall trees and tufted ſhrubberies, and open only to the ſea. At the bottom of it, which might be about one hundred yards from the landing-place, we ſaw a very neat well-looking houſe, of which the roof ſloped down within two feet of the ground. We advanced acroſs the delightful green, which was ſo ſmooth, that it put us in mind of the fineſt ſpots in England, and were entreated to ſit down in the houſe, which was moſt elegantly laid out with mats of the beſt workmanſhip. In one corner of it we ſaw a moveable partition of wicker-work ſtanding upright, and, from the ſigns of the natives collected, that it ſeparated their bed-place. The roof, ſloping down on all ſides, was formed of a great number of ſpars and round ſticks very firmly connected, and covered with a ſort of matting made of banana leaves.

We

We were no ſooner ſeated in the houſe, ſurrounded by a conſiderable number of natives, not leſs than a hundred, than two or three of the women welcomed us with a ſong, which, though exceedingly ſimple, had a very pleaſing effect, and was highly muſical when compared to the Taheitian ſongs. They beat time to it by ſnapping the ſecond finger and thumb, and holding the three remaining fingers upright. Their voices were very ſweet and mellow, and they ſung in parts. When they had done they were relieved by others, who ſung they ſame tune, and at laſt they joined together in chorus. A very ingenious gentleman, who was on this voyage with us, has favoured me with one of the tunes which he heard in this iſland, which may ſerve as a ſpecimen to the muſical part of my readers. 1773. OCTOBER.



In this little ſpecimen the muſic is in the minor key, (a flat third.) They varied the four notes without ever going lower than A or higher than E; ſinging them rather ſlow, and ſometimes ending with the chord  .

The kindneſs of the people was expreſſed in every look and geſture, and they freely offered us ſome coco-nuts, of which we found the liquor very palatable. We were likewiſe regaled with a moſt delicious perfume in this place, which the breeze wafted towards us. It was a conſiderable time

1773. OCTOBER. time before we diſcovered from whence it proceeded; but at laſt having looked at ſome ſhady trees at the back of the houſe, we perceived they were of the lemon tribe, and covered with beautiful branches of white flowers, which ſpread this fragrant ſmell. The natives ſoon brought us ſome of the fruits, which we knew to be of the kind called ſhaddocks in the Weſt-Indies, and pomplemoſes at Batavia and the adjacent Eaſt-Indian iſles. Their ſhape was perfectly globular, their ſize almoſt as large as a child's head, and their taſte extremely pleaſant.

On both ſides of the lawn we took notice of a fence or encloſure made of reeds, diagonally plaited in an elegant taſte. A door, which conſiſted of ſeveral boards, and was hung on a rope inſtead of hinges, gave admittance into a plantation on each ſide. We ſeparated, in order to examine this beautiful country, and at every ſtep had reaſon to be well pleaſed with our diſcoveries. The door was ſo contrived as to ſhut after us without any aſſiſtance, and the encloſures were over-run with climbers, and eſpecially a bind-weed, having flowers of a beautiful ſky-blue. The proſpect now changed into an extenſive garden, where we ſaw a number of tufted ſhaddock-trees, tall coco-palms, many bananas, and a few bread-fruit trees. In the midſt of this ſpot the path led us to a dwelling-houſe, like that on the lawn, ſurrounded by a great variety of ſhrubs in bloſſom, whoſe fragrance filled the air. We roamed through

theſe

theſe buſhes, and collected a variety of plants which we had never met with in the Society Iſles. The inhabitants ſeemed to be of a more active and induſtrious diſpoſition than thoſe of Taheitee, and inſtead of following us in great crouds wherever we went, left us entirely by ourſelves, unleſs we entreated them to accompany us. In that caſe we could venture to go with our pockets open, unleſs we had nails in them, upon which they ſet ſo great a value that they could not always reſiſt the temptation. We paſſed through more than ten adjacent plantations or gardens, ſeparated by encloſures, communicating with each other by means of the doors before mentioned. In each of them we commonly met with a houſe, of which the inhabitants were abſent. Their attention to ſeparate their property ſeemed to argue a higher degree of civilization than we had expected. Their arts, manufactures, and muſic were all more cultivated, complicated, and elegant than at the Society Iſlands. But, in return, the opulence, or rather luxury, of the Taheitians ſeemed to be much greater. We ſaw but few hogs and fowls here, and that great ſupport of life, the bread-tree, appeared to be very ſcarce. Yams, therefore, and other roots, together with bananas, are their principal articles of diet. Their cloathing too, compared to that of Taheitee, was leſs plentiful, or at leaſt not converted into ſuch an article of luxury as at that iſland. Laſtly, their houſes, though neatly conſtructed, and always

1774. OCTOBER.

placed

1773. OCTOBER. placed in a fragrant ſhrubbery, were leſs roomy and convenient. We made theſe reflections as we advanced towards the landing place, where ſeveral hundred natives were aſſembled; and their appearance immediately ſtruck us with the idea, that if they did not enjoy ſo great a profuſion of the gifts of nature as the Taheitians, thoſe gifts were perhaps diſtributed to all with greater equality. We advanced among them, and were accoſted with careſſes by old and young, by men and women. They hugged us very heartily, and frequently kiſſed our hands, laying them on their breaſt, with the moſt expreſſive looks of affection that can be imagined. The general ſtature of the men was equal to our middle ſize, from five feet three to five feet ten inches. The proportions of the body were very fine, and the contours of the limbs extremely elegant, though ſomething more muſcular than at Taheitee, which may be owing to a greater and more conſtant exertion of ſtrength in their agriculture and œconomy. Their features were extremely mild and pleaſing, and differed from the Taheitian faces, in being more oblong than round; the noſe ſharper, and the lips rather thinner. Their hair was generally black and ſtrongly curled, and the beard ſhaven or rather clipt by means of a couple of ſharp muſcle ſhells, (*mytili.*) The women were, in general, a few inches ſhorter than the men, but not ſo ſmall as the lower claſs of women at Taheitee and the Society Iſles. Their body was exquiſitely pro-

proportioned down to the waiſt, and their hands and arms were to the full as delicate as thoſe of the Taheitian women; but like them they had ſuch large feet and legs as did not harmonize with the reſt. Their features, though without regularity, were as agreeable as we had in general obſerved them at the Society Iſles; but we recollected many individuals there, eſpecially of the principal families, to which none of theſe could be compared. The complexion of both ſexes here was the ſame, a light cheſnut-brown, which had commonly the appearance of perfect health. That difference of colour and corpulence, by which we immediately diſtinguiſhed the ranks at Taheitee, was not to be met with in this iſland. The chief, who had viſited us on board and accompanied us to the ſhore, was in nothing different from the common people, not even in his dreſs; it was only from the obedience which was paid to his orders that we concluded his quality. The cuſtom of puncturing the ſkin and blacking it, was in full force among the men, and their belly and loins were very ſtrongly marked in configurations more compounded than thoſe of the Taheitians. The tendereſt parts of the body were not free from theſe punctures, the application of which, beſides being very painful, muſt be extremely dangerous on glandulous extremities, and juſtly excited our aſtoniſhment. 1773. OCTOBER.

——— et picta pandit ſpectacula cauda! HOR.

1773. OCTOBER.

The women, however, were exempted from this cuſtom of diſfiguring themſelves, and had only a few black dots on their hands. But beſides theſe, both ſexes had three ſpots on the arms, conſiſting of concentric circles of punctures, without any blacking, which I have mentioned before. The men in general went almoſt naked, having only a ſmall bit of cloth round the loins. Some, however, wore a dreſs nearly reſembling that of the women. This was a long piece of cloth made of bark, in the ſame manner as the Taheitee cloth, but afterwards painted chequer-wiſe, or in patterns nearly reſembling our painted floor-cloths, and covered with a ſize, which turned the wet for a long while. This they wrapped round their waiſt, the men nearly about their middle, the women more immediately under the breaſt, and in both it commonly deſcended below the knees. Inſtead of the cloth they likewiſe ſubſtituted mats, extremely well wrought, in form reſembling thoſe of Taheitee, and ſometimes, though rarely, covered even their ſhoulders and breaſts with them. The men frequently wore a ſtring round their necks, from which a mother of pearl ſhell hung down on the breaſt. The women often had looſe necklaces, conſiſting of ſeveral ſtrings of ſmall ſhells, intermixed with ſeeds, teeth of fiſhes, and in the middle of all the round *operculum*, or cover of a ſhell, as large as a crown-piece. Both their ears were perforated, and ſometimes with two holes, and a little cylinder cut out

of

of tortoiſe-ſhell or bone, was ſtuck through both the holes. Sometimes theſe cylinders were only of reed, filled with a red ſolid ſubſtance, painted and lacquered with different colours in regular compartments. The moſt ſingular circumſtance which we obſerved among theſe people was, that many of them wanted the little finger on one and ſometimes on both hands; the differences of ſex or age did not exempt them from this amputation; for even amongſt the few children, whom we ſaw running about naked, the greater part had already ſuffered this loſs. Only a few grown people, who had preſerved both their little fingers, were an exception to the general rule. We immediately conjectured that the death of a near relation or friend might require theſe ſtrange mutilations, in the ſame manner as is cuſtomary among the Hottentots, in Africa *; the Guaranos, in Paraguay; and the Californians; and our enquiries, though unſucceſsful at firſt, afterwards confirmed the conjecture. Another ſingularity, which we obſerved to be very general among theſe people, was a round ſpot on each cheek-bone, which appeared to have been burnt or bliſtered. Some had it quite recent, in others it was covered with a ſcurf, and many had a very ſlight mark of its former exiſtence. We could never learn how and for what purpoſe it was made; but we ſuppoſed it could only be

1773. OCTOBER.

* See Kolben's account of the Cape of Good Hope; alſo the Recherches Philoſophiques ſur les Americains, par M. Pauw, vol. II. p. 224, 229.

1773. OCTOBER. uſed like the Japaneſe *moxa*, as a remedy againſt various complaints.

Notwithſtanding the engaging manners of the natives, we foreſaw that we ſhould make but a very ſhort ſtay among them, becauſe our captains could not obtain refreſhments in any conſiderable quantity; which might be owing not ſo much to their ſcarcity upon the iſland, as to the difficulty of making our goods current for ſuch valuable articles, when they could obtain them in exchange for arms and utenſils. They had brought indeed a few yams, bananas, coco-nuts, and ſhaddocks for ſale, but they ſoon dropt that branch of trade. Our people purchaſed an incredible number of fiſh hooks made of mother of pearl, barbed with tortoiſe-ſhell, but in ſhape exactly reſembling the Taheitee fiſh-hooks, called witte-witte *; ſome of which were near ſeven inches long. They likewiſe bought their ſhells, which hung on the breaſt, their necklaces, bracelets of mother of pearl, and cylindrical ſticks for the ear. They had the neateſt ornamental combs that can be imagined, conſiſting of a number of little flat ſticks about five inches long, of a yellow wood like box, moſt firmly and elegantly connected together at the bottom by a tiſſue of the fibres of coco-nut, ſome of which were of their natural colour, and others dyed black. Theſe fibres were likewiſe employed

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 218. Alſo Parkinſon's Journal, p. 77, and Tab. XIII. fig. 25.

in

in making a great variety of baſkets, wrought with regular compartments of two colours, brown and black, or ſometimes all brown, and ornamented with rows of round flat beads, which were made by cutting pieces of ſhells into that ſhape. The taſte and the workmanſhip of theſe baſkets were elegant in the higheſt degree, and varied into different forms and patterns. Thoſe little ſtools, which ſerve as pillows for the head, were much more frequent here than at Taheitee; flattiſh bowls, in which they place their meat, and ſpatulas with which they mix up the bread-fruit paſte, were likewiſe in great abundance, and made of the club-wood (*caſuarina equiſtifeolia*), which had this name from ſupplying all the iſlanders in the South Sea with weapons. The clubs of the people of this iſle, were of an infinite variety of ſhapes, and many of them ſo ponderous that we could ſcarce manage them with one hand; the moſt common form was quadrangular, ſo as to make a rhomboid at the broad end, and gradually tapering into a round handle at the other. But many were ſpatulated, flattiſh, and pointed; ſome had long handles and a blade which reſembled the blade of a fleam; others were crooked, knobbed, &c. But by far the greateſt part were carved all over in many chequered patterns, which ſeemed to have required a long ſpace of time, and incredible patience, eſpecially when we conſider, that a ſharp ſtone, or a piece of coral, are the only tools which the natives

1773. OCTOBER.

can

1773. OCTOBER. can employ in this kind of work. All the different compartments were wrought and divided with a regularity which quite ſurpriſed us, and the whole ſurface of the plain clubs was as highly poliſhed, as if our beſt workmen had made them with the beſt inſtruments. Beſides clubs, they had ſpears of the ſame wood, which were ſometimes plain, ſharp-pointed ſticks, and ſometimes barbed with a ſting-ray's tail. They had likewiſe bows and arrows, of a peculiar conſtruction. The bow which was ſix feet long, was about the thickneſs of a little finger, and when ſlack, formed a ſlight curve. Its convex part was channelled with a ſingle deep groove, in which the bow ſtring was lodged, and which was likewiſe big enough ſometimes to contain the arrow made of reed, near ſix feet long, and pointed with hard wood. When the bow was to be bent, inſtead of drawing it ſo as to encreaſe the natural curvature, they drew it the contrary way, made it perfectly ſtrait, and then formed the curve on the other ſide. The bow-ſtring by this means never needed to be tenſe, as the arrow received ſufficient moment by changing the natural bent of the bow; the recoil of which was never violent enough to hurt the arm. Our ſeamen, unacquainted with the nature of theſe weapons, broke ſeveral of them by drawing them like other bows. The immenſe quantity of arms belonging to the natives, correſponded very ill with the pacific diſpoſition, which had ſtrongly ſhone

ſhone through their whole behaviour towards us, and which ſtill manifeſted itſelf in their readineſs to diſpoſe of them. It is probable that they have ſometimes quarrels amongſt themſelves, or wage war with the neighbouring iſlands, but we could by no means diſcover any thing from their converſation or ſigns, which might have ſerved to throw a light on this ſubject. The ſeveral articles above enumerated, together with all their ſorts of cloth, their elegant mats, which for workmanſhip and variety excelled even thoſe of Taheitee, and a great many other trifles too tedious to mention, they brought to ſell, and with great eagerneſs exchanged for ſmall nails, and ſometimes for beads. But in reſpect of the latter their taſte was different from that of the Taheitians; for the latter always choſe thoſe that were tranſparent, but the people of Ea-oowhe would take no other than black opaque beads, with red, blue, and white ſtripes. We traded with them till dinner-time, and then re-embarked in order to return on board the ſhips; but were obliged to ſit down contented with the loſs of a grapnel, which the natives had contrived to ſteal almoſt as ſoon as it was let down into the water. Their kind looks and acclamations followed us till we returned on board, where a number of them traded in their canoes with the ſame ſorts of goods which we had purchaſed on ſhore. We ſaw ſeveral perſons among them afflicted with leprous complaints, in ſome of which the diſorder had riſen to a high

1773 OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. high degree of virulence; one man in particular had his whole back and ſhoulders covered with a large cancerous ulcer, which was perfectly livid within, and of a bright yellow all round the edges. A woman was likewiſe unfortunate enough to have all her face deſtroyed by it in the moſt ſhocking manner; there was only a hole left in the place of her noſe; her cheeks were ſwelled up and continually oozing out a purulent matter; and her eyes ſeemed ready to fall out of her head, being bloody and ſore. Theſe were ſome of the moſt miſerable objects I recollect ever to have ſeen; and yet they ſeemed to be quite unconcerned about their misfortunes, traded as briſkly as any of the reſt, and what was moſt nauſeous, had proviſions to ſell.

After dinner Dr. Sparrman remained on board with me, in order to arrange our acquiſitions of the morning, and my father again accompanied the captains to the ſhore, with a view to collect a freſh ſupply. They returned about ſunſet, and my father gave the following account of this excurſion.

" At the landing-place the natives welcomed us with ſhouts as in the morning, and the croud being as numerous as ever, the trade was carried on very briſkly, but proviſions were ſcarce, and ſhaddocks in particular not at all to be had, as the ſeaſon was not yet ſufficiently advanced. Mr. Hodges, myſelf, and one ſervant, left the trading-place with

two

two of the natives, whom we engaged to become our guides in caſe of neceſſity, and walked up the hill to view the interior part of the country. Our walk lay through a number of rich plantations or gardens, encloſed as before mentioned with fences of reeds, or with quick-hedges of the beautiful coral flower, *(erythrina corallodendron.)* Beyond theſe we entered into a lane between two encloſures, and obſerved bananas and yams planted in rows on both ſides, with as much order and regularity as we employ in our agriculture. This lane opened into a fine extenſive plain, covered with rich graſſes. Having croſſed it, we met with a moſt delightful walk about a mile in length, formed of four rows of coco-nut trees, which ended in another lane between plantations of great regularity, ſurrounded by ſhaddocks and other trees. It led through a cultivated valley to a ſpot where ſeveral paths croſſed each other or met in one. Here we ſaw a fine lawn covered with a delicate green turf, and ſurrounded by large ſhady trees on all ſides. In one corner of it there was a houſe, which was empty at preſent, its inhabitants being probably by the water's ſide. Mr. Hodges ſat down to draw this delightful ſpot. We breathed the moſt delicious air in the world, fraught with odours which might have revived a dying man; the ſea breeze played with our hair and gently cooled us; a number of ſmall birds twittered on all ſides, and many amorous doves cooed harmoniouſly in the deepeſt ſhade of 1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. the tree under which we were ſeated. The tree was remarkable for its roots, which came out of the ſtem near eight feet above the ground, and for its pods of more than a yard long, and two or three inches broad. This ſecluded ſpot, ſo rich in the beſt productions of nature, where we ſat ſolitary with no other human being beſides our two natives, ſtruck us with the idea of enchanted ground, which being the creation of our own gay fancy, is commonly adorned with all poſſible beauties at once. In fact, there could not have been a more deſirable ſpot for a little place of retirement, according to the elegant imagination of Horace, if it had only been ſupplied with a cryſtal fountain or a little murmuring rill! But water is unfortunately the only bleſſing denied this charming little iſland. To the left of this ſpot we diſcovered a ſhady walk, that brought us to another graſſy lawn, at the bottom of which we perceived a little mount with two huts upon it. A number of reeds ſtuck into the ground, at the diſtance of one foot aſunder, encompaſſed this riſing, and ſeveral caſuarinas, with their ſlender branches and thread-like leaves, were planted before it. The natives, whom we had engaged to accompany us, would not approach this mount; but we advanced and looked into the huts, though with great difficulty, becauſe the bottom of the roof was not above a ſpan from the ground. We found a corſe in one of theſe huts, which had been lately depoſited; but the other was empty.

empty. Thus the caſuarina or club-wood *(tòa)*, here, as in the Society Iſlands, pointed out the repoſitories of the dead. Its dull browniſh-green colour, and its long ſpreading branches, where the leaves are thinly ſcattered and hang weeping down, certainly become theſe melancholy places to the full as well as the funereal cypreſs. It is therefore probable that the ſame train of ideas, which conſecrated the latter in one part of the world to ſhade the tombs, might fix upon the former in theſe regions for a ſimilar purpoſe. The mount on which the huts were placed was formed of ſmall pieces of coral rock, like gravel, accumulated without any particular order. From thence we proceeded a little farther, and ſtill found the ſame elegant plantations and the ſame kind of houſes in the middle as before. Our natives conducted us through one of them, where they entreated us to ſit down, and procured ſome coco nuts, which proved extremely refreſhing. At our return we found our boats juſt ready to put off, and embarked with them immediately. We had only ſeen a few of the natives on our walk, who paſſed unconcernedly by us towards the place where the captains traded; and I believe we ſhould have been entirely left to ourſelves if we had not engaged two of them to become our conductors. The diſcharge of our guns, and their effect, neither excited their admiration nor their fear; but they always appeared kind and courteous towards us. Their women were, in general, 1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. reſerved, and turned with diſguſt from the immodeſt behaviour of ungovernable ſeamen, ſome of them however appeared to be of eaſy virtue, and beckoned to our people with laſcivious geſtures."

The next morning early the captain went on ſhore with us, and preſented the chief with a variety of garden ſeeds, explaining by ſigns how uſeful they would prove to him. This was as yet our only mode of converſation, though we had picked up a number of words, which, by the help of the principles of univerſal grammar, and the idea of dialects, we eaſily perceived had a great affinity with the language ſpoken at Taheitee and the Society Iſles. O-Mai and Mahine (or O-Hedeèdee,) the two natives of Raietea and Borabora who embarked with us, at firſt declared that the language was totally new and unintelligible to them; however, when we explained to them the affinity of ſeveral words, they preſently caught the peculiar modification of this dialect, and converſed much better with the natives than we could have done after a long intercourſe with them. They were extremely well pleaſed with this country, but ſoon perceived its defects, and told us there was but ſcanty proviſion of bread-fruit, few hogs and fowls, and no dogs, which was really the caſe. In return, however, they liked the abundance of ſugar-canes and of intoxicating pepper, of which the drink had been offered to captain Cook.

As

As ſoon as the captains had delivered their preſent, they returned to the ſhips, and the chief came on board with us. Our anchor was weighed, our ſails were ſpread to the wind, and we forſook this happy iſland when we had ſcarce diſcovered its beauties. The chief, after ſelling a number of fiſh-hooks for nails and beads, hailed one of the canoes which were paſſing by, and left us with looks which ſpoke his friendly, open diſpoſition. 1773. OCTOBER.

We now ſailed along the weſtern ſhore of Taſman's Amſterdam iſland, which the natives called Tonga-Tabboo, and found it a very low flat land, compared with that which we had left. The middle of this iſland is nearly in 21° 11′ S. latitude, and 175° W. longitude. Its higheſt elevation above the level of the ſea, appeared to the eye never to exceed ſix or ſeven yards perpendicular. On the other hand, its extent was much more conſiderable than that of Eaoowhe, and by the help of our ſpying-glaſſes, we diſcovered the ſame regular plantations which we had ſo much admired there, and ſaw the ſhores crouded with inhabitants, who gazed at us, probably with as much attention as we beſtowed upon them. When we were about half way between both iſlands, or nearly three leagues from each, we were met by ſeveral canoes full of men, who attempted to come along-ſide, but as we happened to be too far to windward, they could only fetch the Adventure, where they came on board.

In

1773. OCTOBER. In the afternoon we approached the northernmoſt end of the iſland, and perceived ſome ſmall iſles connected by reefs to the eaſtward. Their ſituation and that of the ſhoal to the north-weſt, where the ſea broke with great violence, convinced us that we were now arrived at the very place where Taſman anchored in 1643, and which he called Van Diemen's Road. Here we dropped an anchor upon a rocky bank, and were immediately ſurrounded with numbers of the natives, ſome in canoes, and ſome ſwimming, though we lay about a quarter of a mile from the ſhore. We found them to be of the ſame nation which inhabited Ea-oowhe, and their mercantile turn prompted them to bring an immenſe quantity of their cloth, mats, nets, utenſils, arms, and ornaments, which they eagerly exchanged for beads and nails. The ſhips were no ſooner moored, than a prohibition was made againſt purchaſing curioſities, and the natives were told to bring coco-nuts, bread-fruit, yams, and bananas, as well as hogs and fowls, of which we had already learnt the names. We purchaſed a ſmall quantity of proviſions the ſame evening, to give an example to the reſt of the inhabitants, who were obliged to take their merchandize on ſhore again. The good effects of this ſtep appeared the next morning, when the natives returned from ſhore at day-break, and had loaded their canoes with vegetables and fowls. Many of them came on board as freely as if we had been old acquaintances, and did not

appear

appear to have the leaſt idea of diſtruſt. One of them, a well made man, with a handſome open countenance, ſeemed to have ſome authority among them, like the chief whom we had ſeen on Ea-oowhe. He deſcended into the cabin, acquainted us that his name was Attahha, and received ſeveral preſents, among which he ſat a high value on iron, and on red European broad-cloth. After breakfaſt he went on ſhore with us in the pinnace. A coral reef ſurrounded the coaſt, at the diſtance of a muſket-ſhot, and a ſingle narrow paſs admitted us within it, where we found the water ſo full of rocks and ſo ſhallow, that we were obliged to be carried out of the boat. A party of the marines were poſted on the beach in caſe of danger, to protect the captain's clerk, who traded for proviſions. The natives did not expreſs either ſurprize or diſlike at this proceeding, perhaps becauſe they were unacquainted with its meaning. They received us with acclamations of joy as at Ea-oowhe, and deſired us to ſit down with them on the rocks along ſhore, which conſiſted of coral, and were covered with ſhell ſand. We purchaſed ſeveral beautiful parroquets, pigeons, and doves, which they brought to us perfectly tame; and our young Borabora-man Mahine (or Hedèedee) traded with great eagerneſs for ornaments made of bright red feathers, which he aſſured us had an extraordinary value at Taheitee and the Society Iſlands. Here they were commonly paſted to aprons uſed in their dances, and made of the fibres of

1773. OCTOBER.

COCO-

1773. OCTOBER.

coco-nut, or fixed upon banana leaves, forming rhomboidal frontlets or diadems, &c. With a degree of extaſy which gave the greateſt weight to his aſſertion, he ſhewed us that a little piece of feathered-work, as broad as two or three fingers, would purchaſe the largeſt hog in his iſland. Both this youth and O-Mai were much pleaſed with the inhabitants of theſe iſlands, and began to underſtand their language tolerably well.

We left the beach after the firſt acquaintance with the natives, and aſcended a few feet into a wild foreſt conſiſting of tall trees, intermixed with ſhrubberies. This wood though narrow, being in many places not above one hundred yards wide, was continued along the ſhore of Van Diemen's road, being more or leſs open in various parts. Beyond it the whole iſland was perfectly level. We walked acroſs a piece of uncultivated land, about five hundred yards wide, which adjoined to the wood. Part of it appeared to have been planted with yams, but the reſt was full of graſs, and had a little ſwamp in the middle, where the purple water-hen, or *poule ſultane*, reſided in great numbers. As ſoon as we left this, we entered into a lane about ſix feet wide, between two fences of reed, which encloſed extenſive plantations on each ſide. Here we met many of the natives, who were travelling to the beach with loads of proviſions, and courteouſly bowed their heads as they paſſed by us in ſign of friendſhip, generally pronouncing ſome monoſyllable or other,

other, which ſeemed to correſpond to the Taheitian *tayo*. The encloſures, plantations, and houſes were exactly in the ſame ſtyle as at Ea-oowhe, and the people had never failed to plant odoriferous ſhrubs round their dwellings. The mulberry, of which the bark is manufactured into cloth, and the bread-tree, were more ſcarce than at the Society Iſles, and the apple of thoſe iſlands was entirely unknown, but the ſhaddock well ſupplied its place. The ſeaſon of ſpring, which revived the face of all nature, adorning every plant with bloſſoms, and inſpiring with joyful ſongs the feathered tribe, doubtleſs contributed in a great meaſure to make every object pleaſing in our eyes. But the induſtry and elegance of the natives, which they diſplayed in planting every piece of ground to the greateſt advantage, as well as in the neatneſs and regularity of all their works, demanded our admiration, whilſt it gave us room to ſuppoſe, that they enjoyed a conſiderable degree of happineſs. 1773. OCTOBER.

One of the lanes between the encloſures led us to a little grove, which we admired for its irregularity. An immenſe caſuarina tree far out-topped the reſt, and its branches were loaded with a vaſt number of blackiſh creatures, which we took for crows at a diſtance, but which proved to be bats when we came nearer. They clung to the twigs, by the hooked claws, which are at the extremity of their webbed fingers and toes; ſometimes they hung with the head downwards, and ſometimes the reverſe. We ſhot

1773. OCTOBER. at them, and brought down ſix or eight at once, beſides wounding ſeveral others which held faſt on the tree. They were of the kind which is commonly called the vampyre *, and meaſured from three to four feet between the expanded wings. A great number of them were diſturbed at our firing, and flew from the tree very heavily, uttering a ſhrill piping note; ſome likewiſe arrived from remote parts at intervals to the tree, but the greateſt number remained in their poſition, and probably go out to feed only by night. As they live chiefly upon fruit, it is likely that they commit great depredations in the orchards of the natives, ſome of whom being preſent when we fired, ſeemed very well pleaſed with the death of their enemies. We had ſeen ſome of them who had caught theſe bats alive, and placed them in a cage of wickerwork very ingeniouſly contrived, with an entrance like that of a fiſh-baſket, where the animal could eaſily be put in, but could not come out again. They likewiſe aſſured us the bats were very mordacious, for which purpoſe they ſeemed indeed to be well provided with large ſharp teeth.

We had already obſerved at Taheitee, at the Society Iſlands, and even at Ea-oowhe, that wherever we met with a caſuarina, a burying-place was at hand. Therefore, at ſight of this venerable tree, which was hung with ill-omened creatures, we immediately conjectured that it would

* La Rougette, of M. de Buffon. Vampyrus of Linné, and Pennant.

lead

lead us to a cemetery or place of worſhip, and the event ſhewed that we were not miſtaken. We found a beautiful green lawn, encloſed on all ſides by ſhady buſhes and trees, amongſt which caſuarinas, pandangs, and wild ſago-palms appeared with their various tints of green. A row of Barringtonias, as big as the loftieſt oaks, formed one ſide of it, and ſtrewed it with their large bluſhing flowers. At the upper end of it, there was a riſing two or three feet high, ſet out with coral-ſtones cut ſquare. The area above was covered with a green ſod, like the reſt of the lawn. Two ſteps, likewiſe of coral rock, led up to this part, in the midſt of which a houſe was ſituated, exactly like that which we ſaw at Ea-oowhe. Its length was about twenty, the breadth fifteen, and the height of the ridge ten feet. The roof deſcended ſloping nearly to the ground, and was made of banana leaves. We entered into this building with only one of the natives, the reſt keeping at ſome diſtance. We found the floor covered with broken pieces of white coral rock, and in one corner a heap of blackiſh pebbles, about eight feet long, which was elevated a foot above the white ſtones. The native told us that a man lay buried there, and pointing to the place where his little finger had formerly been cut away, he plainly ſignified that when his *maduas* or parents * died, they mutilated their hands. We found two pieces of wood a foot long, carved

1773. OCTOBER.

* Perhaps any relations in the aſcending line.

1773. OCTOBER. into ſome reſemblance of the human figure, like thoſe which are called *e-tee* at Taheitee, but they were treated in the ſame manner, that is without the leaſt degree of reſpect or veneration, being frequently trod upon and kicked about. Theſe burying-places, which are called *a-Fayetooca* in the language of the country, are always delightfully ſituated on green lawns, and ſurrounded with the fineſt groves. That which I have here deſcribed, was drawn by Mr. Hodges, and an exact repreſentation of it is inſerted in captain Cook's own account of this voyage.

We continued our walk through the plantations, and met with very few inhabitants, they being almoſt all gone towards the trading-place. Thoſe we ſaw paſſed by us, or continued their occupations without ſtopping on our account. Neither curioſity, nor diſtruſt and jealouſy excited them to prohibit our farther progreſs; on the contrary, they always ſpoke in a kind tone to us, which ſufficiently characterized their diſpoſition. We looked into many of the houſes and found them empty, but always laid out with mats, and delightfully ſituated among odoriferous ſhrubs. Sometimes they were ſeparated from the plantations by a little fence, through which a door, like thoſe of Ea-oowhe, gave admittance, which could be ſhut on the inſide. In that caſe only the area, which this fence encloſed around the hut, was planted with the odoriferous grove, which is ſo much in requeſt with the natives. A walk of three miles

miles brought us to the eaſtern ſhore of the iſland, where it forms a deep angle, which Taſman called Maria Bay. Where we fell in with it, the ground ſloped imperceptibly into a ſandy beach; but as we walked along towards the north point, we found it roſe perpendicularly, and in ſome places it was excavated and overhanging. It conſiſted, however, entirely of coral, which is a ſtrong proof of ſome great change on our globe, as this rock can only be formed under water. Whether it was left bare by a gradual diminution of the ſea, or perhaps by a more violent revolution which our earth may formerly have ſuffered, I ſhall not venture to determine. So much, however, may be aſſumed as a certainty, that if we ſuppoſe a gradual diminution of the ſea, at the rate which they pretend to have obſerved in Sweden *, the emerſion of this iſland muſt be of ſo modern date, that it is matter of aſtoniſhment how it came to be covered with ſoil, herbage, and foreſts; ſo well ſtocked with inhabitants, and ſo regularly adorned as we really found it. We picked up a quantity of ſhells at the foot of the ſteep rock, where we ſometimes waded in water to the knees upon a reef, on account of the flood tide which was advancing. We likewiſe met with ſeveral natives returning from the trading-place, who ſold us a number of fiſh-hooks and ornaments, a fiſh-net made like our caſting-nets, knit of very firm though ſlender threads, ſome

1773. OCTOBER.

* See the Memoirs of the Swediſh Academy of Sciences at Stockholm.

mats

1773. OCTOBER. mats and pieces of cloth. We likewiſe purchaſed of them an apron, conſiſting of many wheels or ſtars of plaited coco-nut fibres, about three or four inches in diameter, cohering together by the projecting points, and ornamented with ſmall red feathers and beads cut out of ſhells. Finding that the water encreaſed too faſt upon us, we looked out for an aſcent to the top of the rock, and having with ſome difficulty found one, we re-entered the plantations, where we obſerved the weeds rooted out with great care and laid in heaps to dry. After a long walk, during which we miſſed our way, and engaged one of the natives to become our guide, we entered a long narrow lane between two fences, which led us directly to the *Fayetòoca* or burying-place we had left before. Here we found captains Cook and Furneaux, and Mr. Hodges, with a great number of natives, ſeated on the fine lawn. They were in converſation with an old blear-eyed man, who had a good deal of weight among the reſt of the people, and was always accompanied by a number of them wherever he went. We were told that he had conducted our gentlemen to two *fayetòocas*, and had pronounced a ſolemn ſpeech or prayer, with his face directed to the building, but at times turning to captain Cook, and addreſſing the words to him, in a queſtioning tone. In theſe moments he always made a ſhort pauſe, as if he expected an anſwer, and ſeeing a nod enſue, proceeded with his ſpeech. Sometimes, however, his memory

mory ſeemed to fail, upon which he was prompted by another man who ſat near him. From this ceremony, and the place where it was performed, we conjectured that he was a prieſt. However, as far as we could ſee into their religious notions, it did not appear that they practiſed any kind of idolatry; neither did they ſeem to have any particular veneration for birds like the Taheitians, but to worſhip a ſupreme inviſible Being. What may have induced them, as well as the people of Taheitee and the Society Iſles, to unite their repoſitories of the dead and their places of worſhip in one, remains in obſcurity. The religious tenets of a people are the laſt things which ſtrangers become acquainted with, whoſe knowledge of the language is commonly too imperfect. Beſides this, the dialect of the church frequently differs from the common dialect, and thus religion is veiled in myſteries, eſpecially where there are prieſts to take advantage of the credulity of mankind. 1773. OCTOBER.

From this place we returned to the ſea ſhore, where a briſk trade for vegetables, fowls, and hogs was carried on. Here we bought a large flat ſhield or breaſt-plate, of a roundiſh bone, white and poliſhed like ivory, about eighteen inches in diameter, which appeared to have belonged to an animal of the cetaceous tribe. We likewiſe found a new muſical inſtrument, conſiſting of eight, nine, or ten ſlender reeds, about nine inches long, joined to each other by ſome fibres of coco-nut core. The length of its reeds

ſeldom

1773. OCTOBER. ſeldom varied much, and the long and ſhort ones were placed promiſcuouſly; a notch was formed at the top of each, and the method of playing was only to ſlide the inſtrument backwards and forwards along the lips. It had commonly not above four or five different notes, and we never met with one which included a whole octave. Its reſemblance to the ſyrinx, or Pan's flute of the civilized Greeks, dignified it much more than any muſic which it contained. From the method of playing it, the lovers of muſic will eaſily conceive that this divine art is entirely in its infancy among the inhabitants. The vocal part, which is the ſame as we had already obſerved it at Ea-oowhe, is very far from being unharmonious, and the women beat time to it by ſnapping their fingers very exactly; but its whole extent is only of four notes, and therefore cannot admit of any variety. They had likewiſe a flute of a bamboo-reed, nearly of the thickneſs of a German flute, which they played with the noſtrils, like the Taheitians. They commonly had ornamented it with various little figures, burnt in, and pierced four or five holes in it, whereas the Taheitian flute had but three in all. The method of ornamenting wood by burning figures into it, was frequently obſerved in their bowls and various other utenſils.

It was near ſun-ſet when we returned on board with our collection, and found the veſſels ſtill ſurrounded by many canoes, and the natives ſwimming about extremely vocife-

vociferous. Among them were a conſiderable number of women, who wantoned in the water like amphibious creatures, and were eaſily perſuaded to come on board, perfectly naked, without profeſſing greater chaſtity than the common women at Taheitee, and the Society Iſles. Our ſeamen took advantage of their diſpoſition, and once more offered to our eyes a ſcene worthy of the Cyprian temples. A ſhirt, a ſmall piece of cloth, nay a few beads, were ſometimes ſufficient temptations, for which ſome of the women of Tonga-Tabboo, proſtituted themſelves without any ſenſe of ſhame. This lubricity was, however, very far from being general, and we had reaſon to believe that not a ſingle married woman was guilty of infidelity. If we had been acquainted with the diſtinction of ranks as at Taheitee, it is highly probable, that we ſhould have obſerved no other proſtitutes than ſuch as belonged to the loweſt claſs of people. Still it remains an unaccountable ſingularity in the character of the nations of this part of our globe, that they ſuffer any of their unmarried women to admit the promiſcuous embraces of a multitude of lovers. Can they imagine, that after giving ſuch an unlimited courſe to the impulſes of nature, they will make better wives, than the innocent and the chaſte? But it is in vain that we endeavour to find reaſons for the arbitrary whims of mankind. Their opinions in reſpect of the ſex in particular, have been infinitely various in all ages and countries.

1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. In ſome parts of India, no man of conſequence will condeſcend to marry a virgin; in Europe ſhe who has loſt that character is univerſally rejected. Turks, Arabs, Tartars, and Ruſſians are jealous even of an imaginary characteriſtic of virginity, which the native of Malabar beſtows upon his Idol.

None of theſe women ventured to ſtay on board after ſun-ſet, but returned to the ſhore to paſs the night, like the greater part of the inhabitants, under the ſhade of the wild wood which lined the coaſt. There they lighted numerous fires, and were heard converſing during the greateſt part of the night. It ſeems their eagerneſs to continue the trade with us, would not permit them to return to their dwellings, which were probably ſituated in the remoteſt part of the iſland. Our goods were in great repute with them. Nails, which the natives commonly hung on a ſtring round the neck, or ſtuck through the ear, were very current for fowls, and ſmaller ones for bunches of bananas, and cocoanuts. Their fowls were the largeſt we had ever ſeen, and extremely well-taſted. Their plumage was commonly very gloſſy, and beautifully coloured with red and gold. Our ſailors bought numbers of them, in order to enjoy the barbarous amuſement of ſeeing them fight. From the time of our leaving Huahine, they had daily followed the cruel occupation of tormenting theſe poor birds, by trimming their wings, and incenſing them againſt each other. They had

had ſo well ſucceeded with thoſe of Huahine, that ſome of them fought with the moſt deſperate fury of true game-cocks; but they were well diſappointed with thoſe which they purchaſed at Tonga-Tabboo, and as they could not make them fight, they were forced to eat them in revenge. 1773. OCTOBER.

Early the next morning, the captain's friend Attahha or Attagha (ſee p. 447.) came on board in one of the firſt canoes, and breakfaſted with us. He was dreſt in mats, one of which, on account of the coolneſs of the morning, he had drawn over his ſhoulders. He reſembled all other uncivilized people in the circumſtance that his attention could not be fixed to one object for any ſpace of time, and it was difficult to prevail on him to ſit ſtill, whilſt Mr. Hodges drew his portrait. An excellent print, executed by Mr. Sherwin, has been made from his drawing, which expreſſes the countenance of this chief, and the mild character of the whole nation, better than any deſcription. It is inſerted in captain Cook's account of this voyage, and repreſents Attahha in the action of thankſgiving, laying a nail on his head, which he had received as a preſent. After breakfaſt, the captains and my father prepared to return to the ſhore with him; but juſt as he was going out of the cabin, he happened to ſee a Taheitian dog running about the deck; at this ſight he could not conceal his joy, but clapped his hands on his breaſt, and turning to the captain, repeated the word *goorree* * Tueſday 5.

* *Ooree* ſignifies a dog at Taheitee; and *ghooree* at New Zeeland.

1773. OCTOBER. near twenty times. We were much ſurpriſed to hear that he knew the name of an animal which did not exiſt in his country, and made him a preſent of one of each ſex, with which he went on ſhore in an extaſy of joy. That the name of dogs ſhould be familiar to a people, who are not poſſeſſed of them, ſeems to prove either that this knowledge has been propagated by tradition from their anceſtors, who migrated hither from other iſlands, and from the continent; or that they have had dogs upon their iſland, of which the race, by ſome accident, is become extinct; or laſtly, that they ſtill have an intercourſe with other iſlands where theſe animals exiſt.

I remained on board all this day, to arrange the collection of plants and birds which we had made upon our firſt excurſion, and which was far from deſpicable, conſidering the ſmall ſize of the iſland. The natives continued to croud about our veſſels in a number of canoes, whilſt many were ſwimming to and from the ſhore, who were probably not rich enough to poſſeſs a canoe. Theſe embarkations were of different conſtruction. The common ſmall trading-canoes were ſharp-bottomed, and ended in a ſharp edge at each extremity, which was covered with a board or deck, becauſe their narrow form frequently expoſed theſe parts to an entire ſubmerſion, which would have filled them with water without this precaution. They commonly had a ſlight out-rigger or balancer, made of a few poles, to prevent

vent their overſetting. The body of the canoe conſiſted of ſeveral planks, of a hard brown wood, ſewed together with ſtrings made of the fibrous coco-nut core, and ſo artfully joined that they appeared to be remarkably tight. The Taheitians ſimply bore holes in each plank, through which they paſs their ſtrings; but by this means their canoes are always leaky. At Tongo-Tabboo they dub the inſide of the plank in ſuch a manner as to leave a projecting liſt or rim cloſe to the edge, and through this they paſs their threads. Along the deck or narrow board at each extremity are placed ſeven or eight knobs, which ſeem to be an imitation of the little fins, *(pinnulæ ſpuriæ,)* on the belly of bonitos, albecores, or mackarels; and I cannot but conjecture that the natives have taken theſe ſwift fiſhes for their models in the conſtruction of their boats. Though theſe canoes are commonly fifteen or eighteen feet long, yet they are as neatly and ſmoothly poliſhed as our beſt cabinet-work, which muſt appear the more ſurpriſing when we conſider that the tools of the natives are only wretched bits of coral, and raſps made of the ſkins of rays. Their paddles were equally well poliſhed, of the ſame wood as the canoe, and had ſhort rhomboidal broad blades, like thoſe of Taheitee. The other ſort of canoes were conſtructed for ſailing, and perſons ſkilled in nautical matters acknowledge that they were admirably well adapted for this purpoſe. We ſaw one of them in Maria Bay, conſiſting of two joined together,

1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. together, of which the planks were ſewed in the ſame manner as in the common canoe; but they were covered all over, and had a kind of elevated ſtage or platform, like the Taheitian war-canoes *. Some of them may carry one hundred and fifty men; and their ſails, which are latine, are made of ſtrong mats, in which the rude figure of a tortoiſe or a cock, &c. is ſometimes repreſented †. As a farther detail would be tedious to moſt readers, and inſtructive only to mariners, I omit it in this place, and refer thoſe who wiſh to be better acquainted with the ſubject to the accurate figures with which Mr. Hodges has ornamented captain Cook's account of this voyage. I ſhall only obſerve, that it appears probable from the good conſtruction of the ſailing-boats, that the inhabitants of theſe iſlands are more experienced mariners than thoſe of Taheitee and the Society Iſles.

Among the great numbers of people who ſurrounded our ſhips, we obſerved ſeveral whoſe hair ſeemed to be burnt at the ends, and were ſtrewed with a white powder. Upon examination we found that this powder was nothing elſe than lime, made of ſhells or coral, which had corroded or burnt the hair. The taſte of powdering was at its height

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 221.

† The figure of a canoe in Schouten's voyage, gives a very good idea of one of the ſailing-boats of Tonga-Tabboo. See Dalrymple's Collection, vol. II. pag. 17, 18.

in

in this iſland. We obſerved a man who had employed a blue powder, and many perſons of both ſexes who wore an orange powder, made of turmerick. St. Jerom, who preached againſt the vanities of the age, very ſeriouſly reprehends a ſimilar cuſtom in the Roman ladies: "*Ne irrufet crines, et anticipet ſibi ignes Gehennæ!*" Thus, by an admirable ſimilarity of follies, the modes of the former inhabitants of Europe are in full force among the modern antipodes; and our inſipid beaux, whoſe only pride is the invention of a new faſhion, are forced to ſhare that ſlender honour with the uncivilized natives of an iſle in the South Seas. 1773. OCTOBER.

My father did not return from his excurſion till the evening, having proceeded a conſiderable way towards the ſouth end of the iſland. At noon a ſmart ſhower had obliged him to retire into a plantation and to take ſhelter in a houſe. Fortunately for him the owner of this cottage was at home, and immediately invited him to ſit down on the clean mats which covered the floor, whilſt he went to provide ſome refreſhments. In a few moments he brought ſeveral cocoanuts, and having opened his oven under ground, took out ſome bananas and fiſhes, wrapped in leaves, which were perfectly well done and delicious to the taſte. The manner of cooking proviſions is therefore exactly the ſame as at Taheitee; nor are the natives leſs inclinable to acts of hoſpitality and benevolence, though theſe virtues were not ſo frequently

1773. OCTOBER. frequently exerciſed towards us, becauſe we commonly found the country quite deſerted, the inhabitants being drawn together towards our trading-place. The hoſpitable man was rewarded with nails and beads, with which he performed the *fagafetai*, by laying them on his head, and accompanied my father back to the beach, carefully carrying a number of ſpears and clubs for him, which he had purchaſed on the road.

Wedneſd. 6. The harmleſs diſpoſition of theſe good people could not ſecure them againſt thoſe misfortunes, which are too often attendant upon all voyages of diſcovery. Our goods tempted them at leaſt as much as they had tempted the Taheitians, and they were conſequently equally diſpoſed to pilfer. The captains had not been long on ſhore the next day, when one of the natives took an opportunity of ſtealing a jacket out of our boat. In a few moments no leſs than ſeven ſhot were fired, without the captain's orders, though in his preſence, at the thief, who firſt dived in the water, and at laſt ran into the croud, by which means ſeveral innocent people were wounded. Notwithſtanding this ſeverity, the good-nature of the people was ſuch, that they did not forſake the trading-place, or take umbrage at our proceeding, but heard with unconcern the balls whiſtling about their ears. A few hours afterwards, one of them was equally nimble on board our ſhip, and luckily ſlipping into the maſter's cabin ſtole from thence ſeveral mathematical books,

a ſword,

a ſword, a ruler, and a number of trifles of which he could never make the leaſt uſe. He was ſeen making his eſcape in a canoe, and a boat being diſpatched after him, he threw all the ſtolen effects overboard. Theſe were picked up by another of our boats, whilſt the firſt continued in the purſuit of the thief. Our men fired a muſket into the ſtern of his canoe, upon which he and ſome others with him jumped into the ſea. The thief was ſtill hunted with incredible eagerneſs, but diſplayed a moſt wonderful agility, diving ſeveral times under the boat, and once unſhipping the rudder. At laſt one of our people darted the boat-hook at him, and catching him under the ribs, dragged him into the boat; but he watched his opportunity, and notwithſtanding his loſs of blood, leaped into the ſea again, and eſcaped to ſome canoes, which came from the ſhore to his aſſiſtance. It is remarkable that even ſuch a diſpoſition for cruelty, as had been diſplayed in the purſuit of this poor wretch, did not deprive us of the confidence and affection of his country-men. The captains brought Attagha and another chief on board with them to dinner, and the trade was carried on as quietly as if nothing had happened. The chief who came with Attagha appeared to be of a ſuperior rank, becauſe the latter, who uſed to ſit at table with us on former occaſions, now retreated a few ſteps, ſat down on the floor, and could not be prevailed upon to eat in his ſight. He was a blear-eyed, elderly man, and having a great in- 1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. fluence on the people in the canoes, was called the admiral by our ſea-men. His dreſs did not in the leaſt indicate his ſuperior dignity, probably becauſe theſe iſlanders are little acquainted with the refinements of luxury, though on the other hand they ſeem to behave with great ſubmiſſion to their men of rank, directly contrary to what we had obſerved at the Society Iſles. The reſpect which Attagha paid to the other chief, was however trifling in compariſon of that which we heard of on ſhore after dinner. Here we found a well-looking middle-aged man, ſitting on the ground at the trading-place, and all the croud forming a circle about him. Some of our ſportſmen acquainted us, that they had met with him near Maria Bay, where the other natives paſſing by had proſtrated themſelves on the ground before him, kiſſed his feet, and put them on their necks. Upon enquiry, they had been repeatedly told, that he was the chief of the whole iſland, in the ſame manner as Cookee (captain Cook) was chief of our ſhips, and that they called him Ko-Haghee-too-Fallango *. Whether this was his name or his title I cannot determine, as we never heard it mentioned again by the natives; but they all agreed in telling us, that he was their † Areeghee or king. They added that his name was Latoo-Nipooroo, of which we concluded

* *Ko* is the article in theſe Iſlands and at New Zeeland, which anſwers to the Taheitian O or E.

† The ſame word in the Taheitee dialect is pronounced *Aree*.

that

that the former part (Latoo) was a title, it being ſame which Schouten and Le Maire, the Dutch navigators in the year 1616, found at the Cocos, Traytors, and Horne iſlands, which are ſituated in this neighbourhood, only a few degrees to the northward *. We were confirmed in this opinion by the great correſpondence of the vocabularies, which theſe intelligent ſeamen have left us, with the language which was ſpoken at Tonga-Tabboo, and ſtill more ſo by the entire ſimilarity in the behaviour and cuſtoms of theſe iſlanders. The captains walked up to the Latoo, and made him a number of preſents, which he received with ſo much gravity and ſeeming indifference, as bordered upon ſtupidity. Amongſt other things they put a ſhirt on him, with a great deal of trouble, becauſe his behaviour was moſt aukwardly paſſive. He did not return any thanks for the preſents which he received, till an old woman ſitting behind him, had repeatedly excited him to expreſs his gratitude. Upon this he held each ſeparate article over his head, and pronounced the word *fagafetai*, like the meaneſt of his ſubjects. The prieſt, who had led our captains to the places of worſhip, on the firſt day after our arrival, was ſeated in the ſame circle, and drank vaſt quantities of the intoxicating pepper-water †, which was

1773. OCTOBER.

* See Dalrymple's Hiſtorical Collection of Voyages and Diſcoveries in the South Pacific Ocean, 2 vols. quarto, 1771. London. Vol. II. p. 27, 28, &c.

† Called *awa* at Taheitee, and *kawa* at Tonga-Tabboo, and Horne Iſland.

1773. OCTOBER.

ſerved in little ſquare cups made of banana-leaves curiouſly folded. At his deſire, we were very politely preſented with this dainty beverage, and in pure civility taſted of it. It had a nauſeous inſipid taſte, which was afterwards followed by a ſtrong pungency, and its colour was ſomewhat milky. The holy man took ſuch large and frequent draughts of this ſtuff every evening, as to become perfectly intoxicated. No wonder then that his memory failed him, when he was at prayer (ſee p. 454.) that his whole habit of body was lean and ſcabby, his face wrinkled, and his eyes red, and "purging thick amber *." He had great authority among all the people, and a number of ſervants attended to ſupply him with repleniſhed cups. The preſents which he received from us, he retained in his own cuſtody, whereas Attagha and ſeveral other chiefs, gave up to their ſuperiors whatever the captains had preſented to them. The prieſt had a daughter, who received many preſents from our people. She was extremely well featured, and fairer than moſt of the women of this country, who ſeemed to pay her ſome degree of deference. A fairer complexion, and ſofter features than thoſe of the common people, are the natural effects of an eaſy inactive life, unexpoſed to the blaze of a tropical ſun, and pampered with a profuſion of the beſt productions of the country. Muſt we not conclude therefore that the beginnings of luxury will be introduced even here under the cloak of

* Shakeſpeare.

re-

religion, and that another nation will be added to the many dupes of voluptuous prieſt-craft? So ſmall a ſpark as the cunning of a ſingle man may in time kindle a dreadful and irreſiſtible fire! The obedience and ſubmiſſion with which theſe people revere their chiefs, are evident proofs that their government, though perhaps not perfectly deſpotic, is yet far from being democratical; and this kind of political conſtitution ſeems likely to facilitate the introduction of luxury. This ſeems to hold good likewiſe in regard to many iſlands in the weſtern part of the Pacific Ocean, ſince the faithful deſcriptions of Schouten, Le Maire, and Taſman, who viſited them, correſpond in every material particular with our own obſervations. The general diſpoſition for trading, and the kind and friendly reception which ſtrangers have almoſt conſtantly met with in every iſland belonging to this group, prevailed upon us to give theſe diſcoveries of Schouten and Taſman the name of the FRIENDLY ISLANDS. Schouten's boats were indeed attacked at Cocos, Traitors, Hope, and Horne Iſlands; but theſe atttacks were inconſiderable, though ſeverely puniſhed on the part of the Dutch navigator, who, after the firſt diſturbance at Horne Iſland, lay there nine days in perfect good underſtanding with the natives. Taſman, who twenty-ſeven years afterwards ſaw ſeveral iſlands near ſix degrees to the ſouthward of thoſe which Schouten had viſited, was received with every demonſtration of peace and friendſhip, though

1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. though he was the firſt European that diſcovered them. Whether this behaviour was only a conſequence of the intelligence which the natives of Tonga-Tabboo and Anamocka, (Anſterdam and Rotterdam Iſlands,) might have received from thoſe of Cocos, Hope, and Horne Iſlands, concerning the ſuperior ſtrength of the ſtrangers and the havock which they had made; or whether it was the natural effect of their peaceable diſpoſition, I cannot venture to determine, though I am inclined to adopt the former opinion. Captain Wallis probably ſaw Cocos and Traitors Iſlands in 1767, which he called Boſcawen's and Keppel's Iſles; but his people did the natives no hurt, except frightening them with the diſcharge of a ſingle muſket. M. de Bougainville ſaw ſome of the north-eaſtermoſt iſles belonging to this group, of which the inhabitants had the ſame general character. He called his diſcovery the *Archipel des Navigateurs*, juſtly enough, as many ſhips have fallen in with it. Since Taſman's time, no other navigator has had any intercourſe with the iſle of Amſterdam, which he diſcovered, previous to our arrival. During a ſpace, therefore, of one hundred and thirty years, they have not materially changed their manners, dreſſes, way of living, diſpoſition, &c. &c. Our ignorance of their language prevented our obtaining poſitive proof that they ſtill preſerved, by tradition, the memory of former viſitors; but they poſſeſſed ſome nails, which muſt have been brought to the iſland in Taſman's time.

We

We purchaſed one of theſe nails, which was very ſmall and almoſt conſumed with ruſt, but had been carefully preſerved by being fixed on a wooden handle, probably to ſerve the purpoſes of a googe or borer, and is now depoſited in the Britiſh Muſeum. We likewiſe bought ſome ſmall earthen pots, perfectly black with ſoot on the outſide, and ſuſpected them to be memorials of Taſman's voyage; but afterwards we rather believed that they were manufactured by the natives themſelves. The accounts of Schouten, Taſman, and M. de Bougainville agree with ours, in reſpect of the agility with which the natives committed petty thefts. Taſman and captain Wallis have likewiſe obſerved their cuſtom of cutting off the little finger; and according to Schouten's and Le Maire's circumſtantial narratives, the natives of Horne Iſland were as ſubmiſſive to their king as thoſe of Tonga-Tabboo. The experience of the ſuperior power of the ſtrangers, made them reſpectful even to ſervility towards the Dutch; their king proſtrated himſelf before a Dutch purſer, and their chiefs placed their necks under his foot *. Theſe exceſſive marks of ſubmiſſion ſeem to border upon meanneſs and cowardice; but *we* never had reaſon to ſuppoſe them tinctured with theſe vices. Their behaviour towards us was commonly accompanied with that freedom and boldneſs which the rectitude of intentions 1773. OCTOBER.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Hiſtorical Collection of Voyages in the Pacific Ocean, vol. II. p. 41.

inſpires;

1774. OCTOBER. inſpires; and though really polite, was never unbecoming. Here, however, as in all other ſocieties of men, we found exceptions to the general character, and had reaſon to lament the behaviour of vicious individuals. Dr. Sparrman and myſelf having left the beach where the Latoo attracted the attention of all our people, entered the wood in purſuit of farther diſcoveries in our branch of ſcience. The firſt diſcharge of my fowling-piece at a bird brought three natives towards us, with whom we entered into converſation, as far as our ſuperficial knowledge of their tongue would permit. Soon after, Dr. Sparrman ſtepped aſide into a thicket in ſearch of a bayonet, which he had loſt from the end of his muſket. One of the natives, finding the temptation of the moment irreſiſtible, graſped my fowling-piece, and ſtruggled to wreſt it from me. I called to my companion, and the two other natives ran away, unwilling to become accomplices in this attack. In the ſtruggle our feet were entangled in a buſh, and we both fell together; but the native, ſeeing he could not gain his point, and perhaps dreading the arrival of Dr. Sparrman, got up before me, and took that opportunity of running off. My friend joined me immediately; and we concluded, that if there was ſomething treacherous or vicious in the behaviour of this fellow, our ſeparation was alſo imprudent, becauſe it had furniſhed him with an opportunity to exerciſe his talents. We continued ſtrolling about for ſome time, without any

any ſiniſter accident, and returned to the trading-place on the beach, where we found almoſt all the people whom we had left. Many of them were now ſeated in different little groups, which appeared to be ſo many ſeparate families, and conſiſted of perſons of various ages and ſexes. They were all in converſation, of which no doubt the arrival of our ſhips furniſhed the topics; and many of their women amuſed themſelves either with ſinging or playing at ball. There was a young girl in particular, whoſe features were more regular than common, her eyes ſparkling with vivacity, her whole frame admirably proportioned, and, what was moſt remarkable here, her long jetty hair hanging down in graceful curls on her neck. This girl, lively and eaſy in all her actions, played with five gourds, of the ſize of ſmall apples, perfectly globular; ſhe threw them up into the air one after another continually, and never failed to catch them all with great dexterity, at leaſt for a quarter of an hour. The muſical ladies again performed the ſame tune which we had already heard at Ea-oowhe, the different voices falling in with each other very harmonioufly, and ſometimes joining all together as in chorus. Though I never ſaw the natives of theſe iſlands dance, yet we may add this amuſement to the liſt of thoſe which they are acquainted with, from their own accounts and geſtures whenever they ſold us their aprons made of ſtars of coco-nut core, and ornamented with ſhell-work and red feathers, or ſuch

1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER.

as were curiouſly wrought of mats in reſemblance of fret-work. From theſe geſtures I have great reaſon to ſuppoſe that their dances are of a dramatic kind, and public, like thoſe which I have ſpoken of in the Society Iſles, (ſee pag. 398.) Schouten and Le Maire likewiſe ſtrongly confirm this ſuppoſition by their account of the dances at Horne Iſland *. It appeared, upon the whole, that the cuſtoms and language of theſe iſlanders have a great affinity with thoſe of the Taheitians, and that it would not therefore be very ſingular to find a coincidence even in their amuſements. The greateſt differences between theſe two tribes, who muſt have originated from the ſame ſtock, ſeem to be owing to the different nature of their iſlands. The Society Iſles are well furniſhed with wood, and the tops of their mountains are ſtill covered with inexhauſtible foreſts. At the Friendly Iſles this article is much ſcarcer, the ſurface (at leaſt of thoſe which we have ſeen) being almoſt entirely laid out in plantations. The natural conſequence is, that the houſes are lofty and of immenſe extent in the firſt group of iſlands; but much ſmaller and leſs convenient in the laſt. In one the canoes are numerous, I may almoſt ſay innumerable, and many of a vaſt ſize; and, in the other, very few in number, and much ſmaller. The mountains of the Society Iſles continually attract the vapours from the atmoſphere, and many rivulets deſcend

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Collection of Voyages, vol. II. p. 47.

from

from the broken rocks into the plain, where they wind their ſerpentine courſe and glide ſmoothly to the ſea. The inhabitants of thoſe iſlands take advantage of this gift of bountiful nature, and not only drink of the ſalutary element, but likewiſe bathe ſo frequently in it that no impurity can long adhere to their ſkin. It is very different with a people who are abſolutely denied this bleſſing, and who muſt either content themſelves with putrid ſtagnant rain-water in a few dirty pools, or go entirely without it. They are obliged to have recourſe to expedients in order to preſerve a certain degree of cleanlineſs, which may preclude various diſtempers. They therefore cut off their hair, and ſhave or clip their beards, which doubtleſs makes them look more unlike the Taheitians than they would otherwiſe do. Still theſe precautions are not ſufficient, eſpecially as they have no fluid for drinking in any quantity. The body is therefore very ſubject to leprous complaints, which are perhaps irritated by the uſe of the pepper-root water or *awa*. Hence alſo that burning or bliſtering on the cheek-bones which we obſerved to be ſo general among this tribe, that hardly an individual was free from it, and which can only be uſed as a remedy againſt ſome diſorders. The ſoil of the Society Iſles in the plains and vallies is rich, and the rivulets which interſect it, ſupply abundance of moiſture. All ſorts of vegetables therefore thrive with great luxuriance upon it, and require little attendance or cultivation. This

1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. profuſion is become the ſource of that great luxury among the chiefs which we do not meet with at Tonga-Tabboo. There the coral rock is covered only with a thin bed of mould, which ſparingly affords nouriſhment to all ſorts of trees; and the moſt uſeful of all, the bread-fruit tree, thrives imperfectly on the iſland, as it is deſtitute of water, except when a genial ſhower happens to impregnate and fertilize the ground. The labour of the natives is therefore greater than that of the Taheitians, and accounts for the regularity of the plantations, and the accurate diviſion of property. It is likewiſe to this ſource we muſt aſcribe it, that they have always ſet a higher value on their proviſions than on their tools, dreſſes, ornaments, and weapons, though many of theſe muſt have coſt them infinite time and application. They very juſtly conceive the articles of food to be their principal riches, of which the loſs is abſolutely not to be remedied. If we obſerved their bodies more ſlender and their muſcles harder than thoſe of the Taheitians, this ſeems to be the conſequence of a greater and more conſtant exertion of ſtrength. Thus, perhaps, they become induſtrious by force of habit, and when agriculture does not occupy them, they are actuated to employ their vacant hours in the fabrick of that variety of tools and inſtruments on which they beſtow ſo much time, patience, labour, and ingenuity. This induſtrious turn has alſo led them, in the cultivation of all their arts, to ſo much greater perfection than the

Taheitians.

Taheitians. By degrees they have hit upon new inventions, and introduced an active ſpirit and enlivening chearfulneſs even into their amuſements. Their happineſs of temper they preſerve under a political conſtitution, which does not appear to be very favourable to liberty; but we need not go ſo far from home to wonder at ſuch a phænomenon, when one of the moſt enſlaved people in all Europe, are characteriſed as the merrieſt and moſt facetious of mankind. Still there may be more ſincerity in the chearfulneſs of the natives of Tonga-Tabboo; for, excluſive of great and almoſt ſervile ſubmiſſion, their king does not ſeem to exact any thing from them, which, by depriving them of the means to ſatisfy the moſt indiſpenſible wants of nature, could make them miſerable. Be this as it may, ſo much ſeems to be certain, that their ſyſtems of politics and religion, from their ſimilarity with the Taheitian, as far as we could judge, muſt have had one common origin, perhaps in the mother country, from whence both theſe colonies iſſued. Single diſſonant cuſtoms, and opinions may have acceded to the primitive ideas, in proportion as various accidents, or human caprices have given riſe to them. The affinity of their languages is ſtill more deciſive. The greateſt part of the neceſſaries of life, common to both groups of iſlands, the parts of the body, in ſhort the moſt obvious and univerſal ideas, were expreſſed at the Society and Friendly Iſles nearly by the ſame words.

1773. OCTOBER.

We

1773. OCTOBER. We did not find that ſonorouſneſs in the Tonga-Tabboo dialect, which is prevalent in that of Taheitee, becauſe the inhabitants of the former have adopted the F, K, and S, ſo that their language is more replete with conſonants. This harſhneſs is compenſated however by the frequent uſe of the liquid letters, L, M, N; and of the ſofter vowels E and I, to which we muſt add that kind of ſinging tone, which they generally retain even in common converſation.——— But it is time to return from this digreſſion.

We did not part from our friends till ſun-ſet, promiſing to return to them once more the next morning. Our ſhips were well provided with bananas, yams, and coco-nuts; and, conſidering the ſmall ſize of the iſland, as well as our ſhort ſtay, ſixty or eighty hogs, beſides a vaſt number of large fowls, were a ſurpriſing acquiſition. During our ſtay we had ſearched the country in vain for water, and the maſter had been ſent to the eaſtward to ſurvey Maria Bay, and the low iſles which ſhelter that harbour. The ſituation of theſe iſlands he found very exactly repreſented in the charts of the ever accurate Taſman, and on one of them where he landed, he ſaw an aſtoniſhing number of ſpeckled water-ſnakes, with flat tails, which are harmleſs, and diſtinguiſhed in the ſyſtem of Linnæus, by the name of *colubri laticaudati*. In our branch we had not been unſucceſsful, this little iſland having afforded us ſeveral new plants, among which was a new ſpecies of jeſuit's bark, or *cinchona*,

of

of which the bitter bark may perhaps be equally efficacious with that of Peru. We alſo collected ſeveral birds unknown before, and purchaſed ſome live ſpecies, particularly of the parrot and pigeon tribe, of the natives, who ſeem to be very expert fowlers. But it did not appear to us, that the pigeons, which many carried perched on crooked ſticks, were marks of diſtinction, though Schouten at Horne Iſland where the ſame cuſtom prevails, is of that opinion *. In the laſt boat which had brought our people on board in the evening, the Latoo or king had ſent a great quantity of vegetables, together with a whole hog roaſted, or dreſſed under-ground, as a preſent to the captain. In the morning therefore, we embarked early in the pinnace, and rowed to the ſhore to make a preſent in return. We found the Latoo ſitting at a little diſtance from the beach; and captain Cook gave him a ſhirt, a ſaw, a hatchet, a braſs kettle, and ſeveral articles of leſs moment, all which he received with ſullen gravity; this deportment he never varied, except once, when he was ſeen to ſmile as he converſed with Attagha. Among the croud, we obſerved a ſingle man, who differed from all the reſt, by having ſuffered his hair to grow, and having twiſted it into ſeveral round bunches, which hung wildly about his ears. This man, and the young girl mentioned page 468. were the only perſons we met with, who had

1773. OCTOBER.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Hiſtorical Collection, vol. II. p. 46.

not

1773. OCTOBER. not conformed to the general cuſtom of cutting off the hair.

After a ſhort converſation with the natives, of whom we bought a variety of their tools, on account of their elegant carving, we returned on board to breakfaſt, and immediately after weighed the anchors and ſet ſail. The proviſions lying in confuſed heaps on the decks, prevented our going into the open ſea immediately. We therefore kept ſtanding off and on, under ſhelter of this iſland, and did not take our departure till towards evening, when we ſhaped our courſe ſoutherly.

Friday 8. The next morning, the weather being nearly calm, we caught a ſhark, eight feet long, conſequently bigger than any we had ſeen before. In the afternoon we ſaw the little iſle which Taſman calls Pylſtaerts Iſland. This name refers to the birds, which the Dutch navigators obſerved there, and which in all probability were tropic birds. Pylſtaert literally ſignifying arrow-tail, alludes to the two long feathers in the tail of this bird, from whence its French name of *paille-en-queue* is likewiſe derived *. Its latitude is 22° 26′ S. and its longitude 170° 59′ W. A contrary S. W. wind which ſprung up towards evening, obliged us to

Sunday 10. cruize about till the 10th in the morning, when we came

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Collection, vol. II. p. 75. where they are called *wild ducks*.

in

in ſight of this little iſlet again. It is of a moderate height, and has two hummocks, of which the ſouthernmoſt is the higheſt. We recovered the trade-wind by degrees, ſo that we were out of ſight of this iſland about two o'clock in the afternoon, and having bid adieu to the tropical iſlands of this ocean, directed our courſe a ſecond time towards New Zeeland. We had now made ſuch good uſe of the four months, after our departure from thence, as to have croſſed the South Sea in the middle latitudes, in the depth of winter, examined a ſpace of more than forty degrees of longitude between the tropics, and refreſhed our people at Taheitee, the Society Iſlands, and the Friendly Iſlands during one and thirty days. The ſeaſon for proſecuting our diſcoveries in high ſouthern latitudes advanced, and the ſavage rocks of New Zeeland were only to give us ſhelter, whilſt we changed our fair-weather rigging, for ſuch as might reſiſt the ſtorms and rigours of more inhoſpitable climates.

1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER.

CHAP. II.

Courſe from the Friendly Iſles to New Zeeland.—Separation from the Adventure.—Second ſtay in Queen Charlotte's Sound.

WE had no ſooner left the torrid zone, than flocks of ſea-fowls attended us on our courſe, and hovered lightly on the waves, which a favourable gale had raiſed.

Tueſday 12. On the 12th an albatroſs appeared, among the reſt of the inhabitants of the temperate zone, which never dare to croſs the tropic, but roam from thence even to the polar circle; ſo carefully has nature allotted to each animal its proper place of abode.

Saturday 16. The weather continued fair till the 16th in the morning, when we had a fall of rain. Some of the people who examined the pump-well, found there a dog, which they brought upon deck. This creature, which had been purchaſed at the iſland of Huahine, like many others of the ſame ſpecies, had obſtinately refuſed to take any nouriſhment, and in all probability had lived ever ſince in that hole without the leaſt ſupport of food, for a ſpace of thirty-nine or forty days. The whole body was reduced to a mere ſkeleton, the legs were contracted, and he voided blood

blood at the anus. The torments in which this poor animal muſt have lived, were a leſſon to our people, to purchaſe only young puppies of this race for the future, as the grown dogs conſtantly refuſed to eat on board. 1773. OCTOBER.

The next night ſeveral blubbers paſſed by the ſhip, which were viſible on account of their phoſphoric light. Their luminous quality was ſo great, that the boſom of the ſea, ſeemed to contain brighter ſtars than the æther.

Sea-weed, ſheer-waters, and albatroſſes daily appeared, as we advanced towards New Zeeland. On the 19th, the ſea was luminous, and on the 20th, the diving petrels arrived in flocks about us, and indicated the proximity of the land, which we ſaw the next morning at five o'clock. Tueſday 21. We ſtood in ſhore all the day, till four in the afternoon, when we were abreaſt of the Table Cape *, and Portland Iſland which adjoins to it by a ledge of rocks. The ſhores were white and ſteep towards the ſea, and we could perceive the huts and ſtrong holds of the natives, like eagles airies on the top of the cliffs. A great number of natives ran along the rocks, in order to gaze at us, as we paſſed by them, and many ſeated themſelves at the point which extends to the ſouthward, but did not care to come off to us in their canoes. We ſailed between the ſunken rock and the land, and continued our courſe acroſs Hawke's Bay, and then along ſhore, as it was growing dark.

* See the chart of New Zeeland, in vol. II. of Hawkeſworth's Compilation.

1774. OCTOBER. Friday 22.

In the morning we were to the ſouth of Cape Kidnappers, and advanced to the Black Cape. After breakfaſt three canoes put off from this part of the ſhore, where ſome level land appeared at the foot of the mountains. They ſoon came on board as we were not very far from the land, and in one of them was a chief, who came on deck without heſitation. He was a tall middle-aged man, clothed in two new and elegant dreſſes, made of the New Zeeland flag or flax-plant. His hair was dreſſed in the higheſt faſhion of the country, tied on the crown, oiled, and ſtuck with white feathers. In each ear he wore a piece of albatroſs-ſkin covered with its white down, and his face was punctured in ſpirals and curve lines. Mr. Hodges drew his portrait, and a print of it is inſerted in captain Cook's account of this voyage. His companions ſold us ſome fiſh, while he was entertained in the cabin. The captain preſented him with a piece of red baize, ſome garden-ſeeds, two young pigs of each ſex, and likewiſe three pairs of fowls. Our young Borabora man, Mahine, who did not underſtand the language of the New Zeelanders at the firſt interview like Tupaya, hearing from us that theſe people were not poſſeſſed of coco-nuts and yams, produced ſome of theſe nuts and roots with a view to offer them to the chief; but upon our aſſuring him the climate was unfavourable to the growth of palm-trees, he only preſented the yams, whilſt we made an effort to convince the chief of the value of the

preſents

preſents which he had received, and that it was his intereſt to keep the hogs and fowls for breeding, and to plant the roots. He ſeemed at laſt to comprehend our meaning, and in return for ſuch valuable preſents, parted with his *mahèe-peh* or battle-axe, which was perfectly new, its head well carved, and ornamented with red parrot's feathers and white dog's hair. After a ſhort ſtay he returned on deck, where captain Cook preſented him with ſeveral large nails. He received thoſe with ſo much eagerneſs that he ſeemed to value them above any other preſent; and having obſerved that the captain took them out of one of the holes in the capſtan, where his clerk had put them, he turned the capſtan all round, and examined every hole to ſee if there were not ſome more concealed. This circumſtance plainly ſhews how much the value of iron tools is advanced in the eſtimation of the New Zeelanders ſince the Endeavour's voyage, when they would hardly receive them in many places. Before their departure they gave us a heeva or warlike dance, which conſiſted of ſtamping with the feet, brandiſhing ſhort clubs, ſpears, &c. making frightful contorſions of the face, lolling out the tongue, and bellowing wildly, but in tune with each motion. From their manner of treating the fowls which we had given them, we had no great reaſon to expect ſucceſs in our plan of ſtocking this country with domeſtic animals, and we much feared whether the birds would reach the ſhore alive. We comforted ourſelves, how- 1773. OCTOBER.

ever,

1773. OCTOBER. ever, with the thoughts of having at leaſt attempted what we could not hope to ſee accompliſhed.

The wind, which had ſhifted during our interview with theſe ſavages, blew right off ſhore, and was very unfavourable. It encreaſed towards evening into a hard gale, during which we hauled our wind, and ſtood on different tacks for fear of being blown too far from the coaſt. Heavy rains attended this gale, and penetrated every cabin in the ſhip. Squalls were likewiſe frequent, and ſplit ſome old ſails, which were not fit to reſiſt the violence of the tempeſt. We had not expected ſuch a rough reception in the latitude of 40° ſouth, and felt the air from the bleak mountains of New Zeeland very cold and uncomfortable, the thermometer being at 50 degrees in the morning. A few hours of moderate and almoſt calm weather ſucceeded theſe boiſterous beginnings, after which the gale freſhened to the ſame height as the night before. By day it abated again, and permitted us to run in ſhore, but every night it encreaſed and blew in furious guſts, which demanded all our attention. On the 24th, in the evening, we had reached the entrance of Cook's Strait, and ſaw Cape Palliſer before us; but the next morning a gale ſprung up, which was already ſo violent, at nine o'clock, that we were forced to hand our ſails and lay to, under a ſingle one. Though we were ſituated under the lee of a high and mountainous coaſt, yet the waves roſe to a vaſt height, ran prodigiouſly long, and were

Saturday 23.

Monday 25.

were diſperſed into vapour as they broke by the violence of the ſtorm. The whole ſurface of the ſea was by this means rendered hazy, and as the ſun ſhone out in a cloudleſs ſky, the white foam was perfectly dazzling. The fury of the wind ſtill encreaſed ſo as to tear to pieces the only ſail which we had hitherto dared to ſhew, and we rolled about at the mercy of the waves, frequently ſhipping great quantities of water, which fell with prodigious force on the decks, and broke all that ſtood in the way. The continual ſtrain ſlackened all the rigging and ropes in the ſhip, and looſened every thing, in ſo much that it gradually gave way and preſented to our eyes a general ſcene of confuſion. In one of the deepeſt rolls the arm-cheſt on the quarter-deck was torn out of its place and overſet, leaning againſt the rails to leeward. A young gentleman, Mr. Hood, who happened to be juſt then to leeward of it, providentially eſcaped by bending down when he ſaw the cheſt falling, ſo as to remain unhurt in the angle which it formed with the rail. The confuſion of the elements did not ſcare every bird away from us: from time to time a black ſhear-water hovered over the ruffled ſurface of the ſea, and artfully withſtood the force of the tempeſt, by keeping under the lee of the high tops of the waves. The aſpect of the ocean was at once magnificent and terrific: now on the ſummit of a broad and heavy billow, we overlooked an unmeaſurable expanſe of ſea, furrowed into numberleſs deep channels; 1773. OCTOBER.

1773. OCTOBER. channels ; now on a ſudden the wave broke under us, and we plunged into a deep and dreary valley, whilſt a freſh mountain roſe to windward with a foaming creſt, and threatned to overwhelm us. The night coming on was not without new horrors, eſpecially for thoſe who had not been bred up to a ſeafaring life. In the captain's cabin the windows were taken out and replaced by the dead-lights, to guard againſt the intruſion of the waves in wearing the ſhip. This operation diſturbed from its retreat a ſcorpion, which had lain concealed in a chink, and was probably brought on board with fruit from the iſlands. Our friend Mahine aſſured us that it was harmleſs, but its appearance alone was horrid enough to fill the mind with apprehenſion*. In the other cabins the beds were perfectly ſoaked in water, whilſt the tremendous roar of the waves, the creaking of the timbers, and the rolling motion deprived us of all hopes of repoſe. To complete this catalogue of horrors, we heard the voices of ſailors from time to time louder than the bluſtering winds or the raging ocean itſelf, uttering horrible vollies of curſes and oaths. Without any provocation to ſerve as an excuſe, they execrated every limb in varied terms, piercing and complicated beyond the power of deſcription. Inured to danger from their infancy, they were inſenſible to its threats, and not a ſingle reflection bridled their blaſphemous tongues. I

* See Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. II,

know

know of nothing comparable to the dreadful energy of their curſes, than that diſgrace to chriſtianity the Anathema of Ernulphus *. In this comfortleſs ſituation we continued till two o'clock the next morning, when the wind died away ſuddenly, and was ſucceeded in an hour's time by another from a favourable quarter. In the calm interval between theſe two winds, the ſhip rolled more violently than ever, ſo that the main-chains were repeatedly dipped under water, with part of the quarter-deck. 1773. OCTOBER.

We ſailed all this day towards the land, having been driven off many leagues during the ſtorm. Pintadas, black ſhear-waters, and other petrels now ſurrounded us in great flocks, and we paſſed an albatroſs ſitting faſt aſleep in the water, perhaps fatigued by the violence of the preceding gale. Tueſday 26.

The next day we were diſappointed once more at the mouth of the ſtrait, and got a contrary wind, which blew a ſtorm before night. The ſame weather continued for two days following, almoſt without intermiſſion. On the 29th, early in the morning, ſeveral water-ſpouts were ſeen by the officer at watch; and ſoon after we had a ſlight ſhower and a favourable change of wind. In the evening we loſt ſight of the Adventure our conſort, whom we never rejoined again during this voyage. The foul wind which in the morning on the 30th certainly contributed to ſepa- Friday 29.

* See Triſtram Shandy.

1773. OCTOBER. rate her from us entirely, ſhe being ſo far aſtern that this wind muſt have had infinitely more effect upon her than upon our ſhip.

It would be uſeleſs and tedious to repeat the many changes from adverſe tempeſts to favourable gales which ſucceeded thoſe already mentioned, and which made us deſpair of ever coming to an anchor in New Zeeland again. We were buffetted about for nine nights together, during NOVEMBER. Monday 1. which ſleep ſcarce ever viſited our eyes. On the 1ſt of November we got into Cook's Strait, but the weather proved ſo inconſtant, that it became contrary to us as ſoon as we had approached Cape Tera-wittee upon the Northern Iſland. Our ſituation permitted us, however, the next day Tueſday 2. to come to an anchor in a new bay, which we diſcovered immediately under this promontory to the weſtward. The environs of this bay were dreary, blackiſh, barren mountains, of a great height, almoſt wholly deſtitute of woods and ſhrubs, and running out into long ſpits of ſharp columnar rocks into the ſea. The bay itſelf ſeemed to extend a conſiderable way up between the mountains, and by its direction left us in doubt, whether the land on which Cape Tera-wittee is ſituated, is not a ſeparate iſland from Eaheino-mauwe. This miſerable country was, however, inhabited, and we had not been half an hour at anchor, before ſeveral canoes full of natives came on board. They were very deſpicably habited in old ſhaggy cloaks, which

which they called *bòghee-bòggbee*. The ſmoke to which they are perpetually expoſed in their wretched habitations, and a load of impurities which they had probably never waſhed off ſince their birth, perfectly concealed their real colour, and made them look of a vile browniſh yellow. The ſeaſon of winter, which was juſt at an end, had in all likelihood forced them at times to make their meals on putrid fiſhes, which, together with the uſe of rancid oil for the hair, had ſo penetrated them with an inſufferable ſtench, that we could ſmell them at a diſtance. They brought a few of their fiſh-hooks and ſome dried tails of craw-fiſh to ſell, for which they eagerly received our iron-ware and Taheitee cloth. Captain Cook likewiſe preſented them with two pair of fowls, with ſtrong injunctions to keep them for breeding; but it is hardly to be expected that theſe wretched ſavages will attend to the domeſtication of animals. In their unthinking ſituation, the firſt moment they have nothing ready at hand to ſatisfy the cravings of appetite, our fowls muſt fall the victims to their voracity. If there are any hopes of ſucceeding in the introduction of domeſtic animals in this country, it muſt be in the populous bays to the northward, where the inhabitants ſeem to be more civilized, and are already accuſtomed to cultivate ſeveral roots for their ſubſiſtence. 1773. NOVEMBER.

About three o'clock in the afternoon the weather fell perfectly calm; but in a little time a ſoutherly wind came

1773. NOVEMBER. up the ſtrait, at ſight of which curling the water at a diſtance, we weighed anchor and got out of the bay. And very fortunate it was that we did ſo, for the gale encreaſed after a few minutes to ſuch a furious pitch, that we were hurried along with aſtoniſhing ſpeed, and after paſſing cloſe to the dangerous rocks of the Brothers, on which a moſt dreadful ſurf was breaking, we came to an anchor at night, under ſhelter of Cape Koa-maroo in Queen Charlotte's Sound.

Wedneſd. 3. The next day, about noon, we came ſafely into the Ship-Cove, from whence we ſailed on the 7th of June, near five months before. We were in great hopes of being rejoined here by the Adventure, becauſe captain Cook intended to make ſome ſtay at this place, though the early ſeaſon of the year did not promiſe ſuch abundance of refreſhments as we had enjoyed at our firſt viſit.

We had hardly dropped our anchor, before ſeveral of the inhabitants, who had been out fiſhing, came to ſee us in their canoes, and diſpoſed of the fiſh which they had caught. We recollected them as ſome of our old friends, and called them by their names, at which they expreſſed great ſatisfaction, doubtleſs becauſe it ſerved to perſuade them that we were particularly concerned for their welfare by retaining them in memory. The weather was fair and warm, conſidering the ſeaſon, but our New Zeelanders were all covered with ſhaggy cloaks, which are their winter dreſſes.

dreſſes. We queſtioned them concerning the health of their abſent countrymen, and received various anſwers; but among the reſt they acquainted us, that GOOBAÏA, one of their old chiefs, had chaced the two goats which we had left in the woods of Graſs-Cove, and had killed and eaten them. This news was moſt unwelcome to us, as it deſtroyed all our hopes of ſtocking the foreſts of this country with quadrupeds. 1773. NOVEMBER.

In the afternoon we viſited all the plantations which we had left on the beach in Ship-Cove, on the Hippah-Rock, and on motu-Aro. We found almoſt all the radiſhes and turneps ſhot into ſeed, the cabbages and carrots very fine, and abundance of onions and parſley in good order; the peas and beans were almoſt entirely loſt, and ſeemed to have been deſtroyed by rats. The potatoes were likewiſe all extirpated; but, from appearances, we gueſſed this to have been the work of the natives. The thriving ſtate of our European pot-herbs, gave us a ſtrong and convincing proof of the mildneſs of the winter in this part of New Zeeland, where it ſeems it had never frozen hard enough to kill theſe plants, which periſh in our winters. The indigenous plants of this country were not yet ſo forward; the deciduous trees and ſhrubs, in particular, were but juſt beginning to look green, and the vivid colour of their freſh leaves well contraſted with the dark wintery hue of the evergreens. The flag, of which the natives prepare their

hemp,

1773. NOVEMBER. hemp, was however in flower, together with ſome other early ſpecies. We collected all we could find, gathered a quantity of celery and ſcurvy-graſs, and ſhot ſome water-fowl, with all which we returned on board in the evening. We immediately made drawings and deſcriptions of all that was new to us, and particularly of the flag, *(phormium tenax.)* which, on account of the excellent flax that may be prepared from it, deſerves to be more univerſally known. Deſirous to promote every improvement which may turn out a real benefit to mankind, we did not heſitate a moment to permit an engraving to be made from our drawing, at the requeſt of the Earl of Sandwich, which is intended to ornament captain Cook's account of this voyage.

Thurſday 4. The natives returned the next morning in more canoes than the preceding day, and among them was Teiratu, the chief, who had made acquaintance with us on the fourth of June, and had pronounced a long harrangue that day. He was now in his old clothes, or what the polite world would call *deſhabillé* ; quite deſtitute of the finery of chequered mats edged with dog-ſkin, and his hair careleſsly tied in a bunch, inſtead of being combed ſmooth, and delectably greaſed with ſtinking oil. In ſhort, from being the orator and leader of a troop of warriors, he ſeemed to be degraded to a ſimple fiſhmonger. It was with ſome difficulty that we recognized his features under this diſguiſe, upon which he was taken into the cabin, and preſented with

with ſome nails. Our iron ware, and our proviſion of Taheitee cloth, were articles of ſuch importance to Teiratu and his people, that they reſolved to eſtabliſh themſelves near us, in order to be the firſt to profit by our commerce, and perhaps to loſe no opportunity of laying their hands on any thing which belonged to us. Our ſhip lay very near the beach where we intended to fill our empty caſks with freſh water. Here we had already ſet up a tent for the people who were employed in this branch of our preparations; another for our wood-cutters, and the aſtronomical obſervatory. We went on ſhore at this place, both before and after-noon, and made our way through a labyrinth of climbers which croſſed from one tree to another. Mahine (or Hedeedee) likewiſe came on ſhore with us, and roamed through its intricate foreſts, ſurpriſed at the number of different birds, their ſweet melody, and their beautiful plumage. One of our gardens where the radiſhes and turneps were in flower, was remarkably full of ſmall birds, which ſucked the nectareous juices of the bloſſoms, and not ſeldom plucked them from the ſtalk. We ſhot ſeveral of them, and Mahine, who had never made uſe of fire-arms in his life before, killed his bird at the firſt diſcharge. The ſenſes of all nations, not more poliſhed than his countrymen, are infinitely more acute than ours, which a thouſand accidents tend to impair. We never were more clearly convinced of this, than at Taheitee; it was very uſual for the natives there, to point out ſmall birds to us in the thickeſt trees,

1773. NOVEMBER.

1773. NOVEMBER. or ducks and other water-fowl between buſhes of reeds, where not one of us could ever perceive them.

The weather, which was warm and pleaſant, facilitated our zoological reſearches, ſo that we brought home a number of birds in the evening.

Friday 5. The firſt intelligence which we received from the ſhore the next day, was a complaint againſt the natives, who had ſtolen during the night, a watch-coat from the waterers tent, and a bag filled with linen. The captain immediately went into the cove, where the ſavages had taken up their quarters, which was only ſeparated by a ſingle hill from our watering-place, and to which he had given the name of Indian Cove. Here he addreſſed himſelf to their chief Teiratu, who ſent for the ſtolen goods, and returned them without heſitation, pretending that the theft was committed without his knowledge. Our people were politic enough to believe him on his word, becauſe the addreſs of his countrymen had hitherto ſupplied us with abundance of fiſh, for a very moderate compenſation of Taheitee cloth, whilſt we caught them but very ſparingly. In this place they found one of the ſows, which captain Furneaux had left in Canibal Cove; and Teiratu being queſtioned concerning its two companions, pointed to different quarters of the bay, whither he ſaid they had been carried. Thus by ſeparating the animals, and dividing them as a ſpoil, theſe barbarians effectually deſtroy the poſſibility of propagating the

the ſpecies. Too much occupied with the wants of the preſent moment, they overlook the only means of ſecuring a certain livelihood to themſelves, and reject every attempt to civilize them. 1773. NOVEMBER.

They were joined by a ſtrong party on the 6th in the afternoon, who came from various parts of the bay, with a great quantity of fiſh, and abundance of their clothes, arms, &c. which they exchanged for Taheitee cloth. In the evening they retired to a beach oppoſite the ſhip, where they hauled their canoes aſhore, made ſome temporary huts, lighted fires, and broiled ſome fiſh for their ſuppers. Early the next morning looking about us, we found they were all gone off, not excepting thoſe who had lived at the Indian Cove. We were at a loſs to gueſs the reaſon of their ſudden departure, till we perceived that they had taken away ſix ſmall caſks from our watering-place, probably for the ſake of the iron-hoops. It is certain, that by ſupplying us with fiſh for another day, they would have received three or four times the value of this iron, manufactured for their uſe; but we have already obſerved that they are not much troubled with reflections, and probably value a bird in hand more than two in a buſh. We were the greateſt ſufferers on this occaſion, being now reduced to catch fiſh for ourſelves, though we could not ſpare a ſufficient number of hands, and were not acquainted with the haunts of the fiſhes as well as the natives. Our people were occupied Saturday 6. Sunday 7.

1773. NOVEMBER. in cleaning, caulking, and breaming the ſhip, ſetting up and repairing the rigging, and, in ſhort, in fitting her for the next ſouthern cruize. A great party were on ſhore to fill our empty caſks with freſh-water, to make proviſion of fuel, and to reviſe the ſhip's biſcuit, which was in a very decayed condition. It had unfortunately been packed into new, or what are called green caſks, the ſtaves of which being damp, had communicated the moiſture to the bread, a conſiderable part of which was perfectly rotten, and all the reſt, more or leſs covered with mould. To prevent the fatal effects of this corruption, all the bread was carried aſhore, the bad carefully ſelected from that which was ſtill eatable, and this laſt put into an oven and baked over again, till it was thoroughly dried.

The weather during this time was as boiſterous and inconſtant, as that which had ſo long kept us out of this harbour. Scarce a day paſſed without heavy ſqualls of wind, which hurried down with redoubled velocity from the mountains, and ſtrong ſhowers of rain, which retarded all our occupations. The air was commonly cold and raw, vegetation made ſlow advances, and the birds were only found in vallies ſheltered from the chilling ſouthern blaſt. This kind of weather in all likelihood prevails throughout the winter, and likewiſe far into the midſt of ſummer, without a much greater degree of cold in the former, or of warmth in the latter ſeaſon. Iſlands far remote from any continent,

continent, or at leaſt not ſituated near a cold one, ſeem in general to have an uniform temperature of air, owing perhaps to the nature of the ocean which every where ſurrounds them. It appears from the meteorological journals kept at Port Egmont on the Falkland Iſlands *, that the extremes of the greateſt cold, and the greateſt heat obſerved there throughout the year, do not exceed thirty degrees on Fahrenheit's ſcale. The latitude of that port is 51° 25′ ſouth; and that of Ship Cove in Queen Charlotte's Sound, only 41° 5′. This conſiderable difference of ſite, will naturally make the climate of New Zeeland infinitely milder than that of Falkland's Iſlands, but cannot affect the general hypotheſis concerning the temperature of all iſlands; and the immenſe height of the mountains in New Zeeland, ſome of which are covered with ſnow throughout the year, doubtleſs contributes to refrigerate the air, ſo as to aſſimilate it to that of the Falkland's Iſles, which are not ſo high. 1773. NOVEMBER.

The inclemency of the ſeaſon did not prevent the natives from rambling about in this ſpacious ſound. Having been entirely forſaken by them for three days together, a party arrived near us on the 9th, in three canoes, one of which was elegantly carved in fretwork on the ſtern. They ſold

* See the Journal of the Winds and Weather, and Degrees of Heat and Cold by the thermometer at Falkland's Iſland, from February 1766, to January 1767. inſerted in Mr. Dalrymple's Collection of Voyages in the Southern Atlantic Ocean.

1773. NOVEMBER. us ſome curioſities, and then went on ſhore abreaſt of the ſhip; but we did not remember having ever ſeen them before. The next day two wretched canoes joined theſe, in which was our friend Towahanga with his family *. He came immediately on board, with his little boy Khoâa and his daughter Ko-parree, and diſpoſed of a great number of green nephritic ſtones wrought into chiſſels and blades of hatchets. He was introduced into the cabin, where captain Cook gave him many little preſents, and dreſſed his little boy in one of his own white ſhirts. The boy was ſo overjoyed at his finery, that we found it abſolutely impoſſible to keep him in the cabin by fair words. He was bent upon parading it before his countrymen on the deck, and perſiſted to importune us till we let him out. His little vanity, however, had the moſt diſaſtrous conſequences. An old he-goat, which went about our decks, to the great terror of all the New Zeelanders, took offence at the ludicrous figure of poor Khoâa, who was loſt in the ample turns and folds of his ſhirt, and awkwardly trotted along with ſelf-complacency. The ſturdy mountaineer ſtepped in his way, and raiſing himſelf on his hind-legs, butted with his head full againſt him, and laid him ſprawling on the deck in an inſtant. The unſucceſsful efforts which the boy made to riſe, together with his loud lamentations, ſo provoked the goat, that he prepared to repeat the compliment, and would

* See page 209.

probably

probably have ſilenced this knight of the rueful countenance, if ſome of our people had not interpoſed. His ſhirt was now ſullied, and his face and hands covered with dirt; and in this pitiful plight he returned into the cabin. His air was quite dejected, his eyes full of tears, and he ſeemed to be perfectly cured of his vanity. He told his misfortune, crying, to his father; but far from exciting pity, he provoked the ſavage's indignation, and received ſeveral blows as a puniſhment of his folly, before we could make his peace. We cleaned his ſhirt and waſhed him all over, which had perhaps never happened to him before during his life, and thus ſucceeded to reſtore him to his former tranquillity. However, his father, dreading a future misfortune, carefully rolled up the ſhirt, and taking off his own dreſs, made a bundle of it, in which he placed all the preſents which he and his ſon had received. 1773. NOVEMBER.

The natives continued to ſell their artificial curioſities and ſome fiſh to our people this day and the following, both which proved very rainy. On the 12th, in the morning, the weather being clear again, Dr. Sparrman, my father, and myſelf, went to the Indian Cove, which we found uninhabited. A path, made by the natives, led through the foreſt a conſiderable way up the ſteep mountain, which ſeparates this cove from Shag Cove *. The only motive which could induce the New Zeelanders to make this path, appeared to Friday 12.

* See the chart of Cook's Strait in Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. II.

be

1773. NOVEMBER. be the abundance of ferns towards the ſummit of the mountain, the roots of that plant being an article of their diet. The ſteepeſt part of the path was cut in ſteps paved with ſhingle or ſlate, but beyond that the climbers impeded our progreſs conſiderably. About half way up, the foreſt ended, and the reſt was covered with various ſhrubs and ferns, though it appeared to be naked and barren from the ſhip. At the ſummit we met with many plants which grow in the vallies and by the ſea-ſide at Duſky Bay, owing to the difference of climate, which is ſo much more rigorous in that ſouthern extremity of New Zeeland. The whole to the very top conſiſts of the ſame talcous clay which is univerſal all over the iſland, and of a talcous ſtone, which when expoſed to the ſun and air, crumbles in pieces and diſſolves into lamellæ. Its colour is whitiſh, greyiſh, and ſometimes tinged with a dirty yellowiſh-red, perhaps owing to irony particles. The ſouth ſide of the mountain is clad in foreſts almoſt to the ſummit. The view from hence was very extenſive and pleaſing; we looked into Eaſt Bay as into a fiſh-pond, and ſaw Cape Terà-wittee beyond the ſtrait. The mountains in the ſouth aroſe to a vaſt height, and were capt with ſnow; and the whole proſpect on that ſide was wild and chaotic. We made a fire as a memorial of our expedition, and then came down the ſame path by which we had aſcended. The next morning we made an excurſion to Long Iſland, where we found a number of plants

plants and ſome birds which were new to us. In the woods on the eaſt ſide we heard ſome petrels in holes under ground croaking like frogs and cackling like hens; and we ſuppoſed them to be of the little diving ſpecies, which I have noticed before. It ſeems to be a general cuſtom of the petrel tribe to make their neſt in ſubterraneous holes, as we found the blue or ſilvery ſort lodged in the ſame manner at Duſky Bay. 1773. NOVEMBER.

Ever ſince the 12th the weather was mild and very fair; the natives reſided abreaſt of the ſhip, and ſupplied us with plenty of fiſh, whilſt our ſailors carried on their former amours with the women, amongſt whom there was but one who had tolerable features, and ſomething ſoft and feminine in her looks. She was regularly given in marriage by her parents to one of our ſhipmates, who was particularly beloved by this nation, for devoting much of his time to them, and treating them with thoſe marks of affection which, even among a ſavage race, endear mankind to each other. Togheeree, for ſo the girl was called, proved as faithful to her huſband as if he had been a New Zeelander, and conſtantly rejected the addreſſes of other ſeamen, profeſſing herſelf a married woman, *(tirra-tàne.)* Whatever attachment the Engliſhman had to his New Zeeland wife, he never attempted to take her on board, foreſeeing that it would be highly inconvenient to lodge the numerous retinue which crawled in her garments and weighed down the hair of her head.

He

1773. NOVEMBER. He therefore viſited her on ſhore, and only by day, treating her with plenty of the rotten part of our biſcuit, which we rejected, but which ſhe and all her countrymen eagerly devoured. Mahine, the native of Borabora, whom we had on board, had been ſo much accuſtomed in his own country to obey every call of nature, that he did not heſitate to gratify his appetites in New Zeeland, though he was too clear-ſighted at the ſame time not to perceive the vaſt falling off from his own country-women. The force of inſtinct triumphed over his delicacy,—and can we wonder at it, when our civilized Europeans ſet him the example? His conduct towards the New Zeelanders in general deſerves to be commended. There needed not much penetration to diſcover that their preſent exiſtence was very wretched in compariſon of that of the tropical iſlanders; but he alſo frequently expreſſed his pity, whilſt he enumerated to us a variety of articles of which they were ignorant. He diſtributed the roots of yams to thoſe who viſited the ſhip at the Black Cape, and always accompanied the captain whenever he went to plant or ſow a piece of ground in this harbour. He was not, like Tupaya, ſo much a maſter of their language as to converſe freely with them, but he ſoon underſtood them much better than any one of us, from the great analogy of their language to his own. Our viſit to the tropical iſlands had, however, contributed to make the New Zeeland dialect more intelligible to us than before, and we plainly

plainly perceived that it had a great affinity to that of the Friendly Iſles, which we had juſt left. From ſuch little *data* we can only gueſs at the probable route by which a country, ſo far to the ſouth as New Zeeland, has been peopled. 1773. NOVEMBER.

The weather continuing fair on the 14th at night, the captain and my father went on ſhore to the obſervatory with teleſcopes, to obſerve the emerſion of one of Jupiter's ſatellites. The reſult of a great number of obſervations, made at different times by our accurate and indefatigable aſtronomer, Mr. William Wales, F. R. S. has aſcertained the longitude of Queen Charlotte's Sound to be 174° 25′ Eaſt from Greenwich. Sunday 14.

The next morning we accompanied the captain to Eaſt Bay, where we viſited ſeveral ſmall parties of the natives, in three different places. They received us very amicably, preſented us with fiſh, which was always the moſt valuable article they had to give, and ſold us ſeveral large hoop-nets * for our iron and Taheitee cloth. Towards the bottom of the bay we mounted on the ſame hill which captain Cook had aſcended in his firſt voyage †, intending to look out on the ſea if we could perceive the Adventure. But when we reached the ſummit, we found ſo thick a haze on the water, that we could ſee no farther than two or three Monday 15.

* Of the kind mentioned in Hawkeſworth's Compilation, vol. II. p. 392.

† See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 397.

1773. NOVEMBER. leagues. The monument which captain Cook had erected here formerly, conſiſting of a pile of looſe ſtones, under which ſome coins, bullets, &c. had been buried, was entirely demoliſhed at preſent; the natives having probably ſuſpected that a treaſure of European goods was depoſited there. At the foot of this hill ſome friendly people, like thoſe of which captain Cook took notice at this place in his firſt voyage, came to us, and diſpoſed of many of their arms, utenſils, and dreſſes. In the afternoon we tried the hoop-nets which we had bought of the natives, and had tolerable ſucceſs. Theſe nets are made of the ſplit leaves of the flag, ſo often mentioned, after they have been dried and beaten. No plant promiſes to become ſo uſeful to Europe by tranſplantation as this flag. The hemp or flax which the New Zeelanders make of it, with their coarſe materials, is exceſſively ſtrong, ſoft, gloſſy, and white; and that which has been prepared again in England, has almoſt equalled ſilk in luſtre. It grows on all kinds of ſoil, and, being perennial, may be cut down to the root every year, and requires ſcarce any attendance or care in the cultivation.

Wedneſd. 17. On the 17th, we ſpent the forenoon in cutting down a number of very tall trees, of which we wiſhed to gather the flowers, but all our efforts were in vain. We had no ſooner cut a tree, than it hung in a thouſand bindweeds and climbers from top to bottom, from which it was not in our power to diſengage it. The three following days

we

we had much rain, which confined us on board; nor did we receive any viſits from the natives during that time. 1773. NOVEMBER.

On the 21ſt in the morning, none but women came from the ſhore in two canoes, and ſeemed to be under great apprehenſions for their men, ſignifying to us that they were gone to fight with another party. From the direction in which they pointed, we concluded that their enemies dwelt ſomewhere in Admiralty Bay. Sunday 21.

On the 22d, the weather being mild and fair, the captain, accompanied by Dr. Sparrman, my father, and myſelf, went into Weſt Bay, and in its deepeſt receſs carried aſhore two ſows and a boar, with three cocks and two hens, which we ſet at liberty a good way up in the woods. We flattered ourſelves that having choſen a marſhy ſpot, which is not likely to be frequented by the inhabitants, the animals would be left to multiply their ſpecies without any moleſtation. A few natives only in a ſingle canoe had ſeen us in the entrance of the bay, and probably would not ſuſpect that we were come on ſo particular an errand. If therefore the ſouthern iſle of New Zeeland ſhould in courſe of time be ſtocked with hogs and fowls, we have great reaſon to hope that the care with which we concealed them in the woods, has been the only means of preſerving the race. Monday 22.

At our return ſeven or eight canoes arrived from the northward, ſome of which, without paying any attention

1773. NOVEMBER. to us, went directly into Indian Cove, whilſt the reſt came on board with a great variety of dreſſes and arms, which they ſold to our people. They were more dreſſed than we had commonly ſeen any, during this ſecond ſtay at Queen Charlotte's Sound, their hair was tied up, and their cheeks painted red. All theſe circumſtances conſpired to confirm the account which the women had given us the day before, that their huſbands were gone to fight, as it is uſual for them to put on their beſt apparel on thoſe occaſions. I am much afraid that their unhappy differences with other tribes, were revived on our account. Our people not ſatisfied with purchaſing all the hatchets of ſtone, patoo-patoos, battle-axes, clothes, green jaddes, fiſh-hooks, &c. of which the natives of our acquaintance were poſſeſſed, continually enquired for more, and ſhewed them ſuch large and valuable pieces of Taheitee cloth, as would not fail to excite their deſires. It is not improbable that as ſoon as this appetite prevailed among the New Zeelanders, they would reflect that the ſhorteſt way to gratify it, would be to rob their neighbours of ſuch goods, as the Europeans coveted. The great ſtore of arms, ornaments, and clothes which they produced at this time, ſeemed to prove that ſuch a daring and villainous deſign had really been put in execution; nor was it to be ſuppoſed that this could have been accompliſhed without bloodſhed.

In

In the morning, which was very foggy, the natives at our watering-place were ſeen to eat a root boiled or baked by means of hot ſtones; and Mr. Whitehouſe the firſt mate brought ſome of it on board, which taſted rather better than a turnep. My father returned on ſhore with him; for a few trifles obtained ſome large pieces of this root, and with ſome difficulty prevailed on two of the natives to accompany Mr. Whitehouſe and him into the woods, in order to point out to them the ſpecies of plant to which the root belonged. They walked up a conſiderable way without any arms whatſoever, truſting to the honeſty of their guides. Theſe men pointed out a ſpecies of fern-tree, which they called *mamaghoo*, as having the eatable root; and at the ſame time ſhewed the difference between this, and another kind of fern-tree, which they named *ponga*. The firſt is full of a tender pulp or pith, which when cut exſudes a reddiſh juice of a gelatinous nature, nearly related to ſago. This is ſo much the leſs ſingular, as the real ſago-tree is a ſpecies of fern. The good nutritive root of the mamaghoo muſt not, however, be confounded with that wretched article of New Zeeland diet, the common fern-root, or *acroſtichum furcatum* Linn. The latter conſiſts of nothing but inſipid ſticks, which after being broiled over the fire for ſome time, are beaten or bruiſed on a ſtone with a piece of wood much reſembling the Taheitian cloth-beater, but round inſtead of ſquare, and without

1773. NOVEMBER, Tueſday 23.

any

1773. NOVEMBER. any grooves. The bruiſed maſs is chewed, what little juice there may be in it ſucked out, and the reſt thrown aſide. The mamaghoo on the contrary is tolerably good eating, and the only fault ſeems to be, that it is not plentiful enough for a conſtant ſupply. At their return they were witneſſes of an inſtance of the ferocity of manners of this ſavage nation. A boy about ſix or ſeven years old demanded a piece of broiled pinguin, which his mother held in her hands. As ſhe did not immediately comply with his demand, he took up a large ſtone and threw it at her. The woman incenſed at this action ran to puniſh him, but ſhe had ſcarcely given him a ſingle blow, when her huſband came forward, beat her unmercifully, and daſhed her againſt the ground, for attempting to correct her unnatural child. Our people who were employed in filling water, told my father they had frequently ſeen ſimilar inſtances of cruelty among them, and particularly, that the boys had actually ſtruck their unhappy mother, whilſt the father looked on leſt ſhe ſhould attempt to retaliate. Among all ſavage nations the weaker ſex is ill-treated, and the law of the ſtrongeſt is put in force. Their women are mere drudges, who prepare raiment and provide dwellings, who cook and frequently collect their food, and are requited by blows and all kinds of ſeverity. At New Zeeland it ſeems they carry this tyranny to exceſs, and the males are taught from their earlieſt age, to hold their mothers in contempt,

contempt, contrary to all our principles of morality. I leave this barbarity without a comment, in order to relate the remaining occurrences of this day, which was pregnant in diſcoveries relative to the New Zeelanders. The captain, with Mr. Wales, and my father, went to Motu-Aro in the afternoon, where they looked after the plantations, collected greens for the ſhips, &c. In the mean while ſome of the lieutenants went to the Indian Cove, with a view to trade with the natives. The firſt objects which ſtruck them were the entrails of a human corſe lying on a heap a few ſteps from the water. They were hardly recovered from their firſt ſurprize, when the natives ſhewed them ſeveral limbs of the body, and expreſſed by words and geſtures that they had eaten the reſt. The head without the lower jaw-bone, was one of the parts which remained, and from which it plainly appeared, that the deceaſed was a youth about fifteen or ſixteen years old. The ſkull was fractured near one of the temples, as it ſeemed by the ſtroke of a pattoo-pattoo. This gave our officers an opportunity of enquiring how they came in poſſeſſion of the body. The natives anſwered, that they had fought with their enemies, and had killed ſeveral of them, without being able to bring away any of the dead beſides this youth. At the ſame time they acknowledged that they had loſt ſome of their friends, and pointed to ſeveral women who were ſeated apart, weeping and cutting their foreheads with ſharp ſtones, in commemoration of the dead. 1773. NOVEMBER.

Our

1773. NOVEMBER. Our former conjectures were now amply verified, our apprehenſions that we were the innocent cauſes of this diſaſter encreaſed, and the exiſtence of anthropophagi confirmed by another ſtrong proof. Mr. Pickerſgill propoſed to purchaſe the head, in order to preſerve it till his return to England, where it might ſerve as a memorial of this voyage. He offered a nail, and immediately obtained the head for this price †, after which he returned on board with his company, and placed it on the taffarel *. We were all occupied in examining it, when ſome New Zeelanders came on board from the watering-place. At ſight of the head they expreſſed an ardent deſire of poſſeſſing it, ſignifying by the moſt intelligible geſtures that it was delicious to the taſte. Mr. Pickerſgill refuſed to part with it, but agreed to cut off a ſmall piece from the cheek, with which they ſeemed to be well ſatisfied. He cut off the part he had promiſed, and offered it to them, but they would not eat it raw, and made ſigns to have it dreſſed. Therefore, in preſence of all the ſhip's company, it was broiled over the fire; after which they devoured it before our eyes with the greateſt avidity. The captain arriving the moment after with his company, the New Zeelanders repeated the experiment once more in his preſence. It operated very

† The head is now depoſited in the collection of Mr. John Hunter, F. R. S.

* The upper part of the ſtern.

ſtrangely

ſtrangely and differently on the beholders. Some there were who, in ſpite of the abhorrence which our education inſpires againſt the eating of human fleſh, did not ſeem greatly diſinclined to feaſt with them, and valued themſelves on the brilliancy of their wit, while they compared their battle to a hunting-match. On the contrary, others were ſo unreaſonably incenſed againſt the perpetrators of this action, that they declared they could be well pleaſed to ſhoot them all; they were ready to become the moſt deteſtable butchers, in order to puniſh the imaginary crime of a people whom they had no right to condemn. A few others ſuffered the ſame effects as from a doſe of ipecacuanha. The reſt lamented this action as a brutal depravation of human nature, agreeably to the principles which they had imbibed. But the ſenſibility of Mahine, the young native of the Society Iſlands, ſhone out with ſuperior luſtre among us. Born and bred in a country where the inhabitants have already emerged from the darkneſs of barbariſm, and are united by the bonds of ſociety, this ſcene filled his mind with horror. He turned his eyes from the unnatural object, and retired into the cabin, to give vent to the emotions of his heart. There we found him bathed in tears; his looks were a mixture of compaſſion and grief, and as ſoon as he ſaw us, he expreſſed his concern for the unhappy parents of the victim. This turn which his reflections had taken, gave us infinite pleaſure; it ſpoke a humane heart, filled with

1773. NOVEMBER.

1773. NOVEMBER. the warmeſt ſentiments of ſocial affection, and habituated to ſympathize with its fellow-creatures. He was ſo deeply affected, that it was ſeveral hours before he could compoſe himſelf, and ever after, when he ſpoke on this ſubject, it was not without emotion. Philoſophers, who have only contemplated mankind in their cloſets, have ſtrenuouſly maintained, that all the aſſertions of authors, ancient and modern, of the exiſtence of men-eaters are not to be credited; and there have not been wanting perſons amongſt ourſelves who were ſceptical enough to refuſe belief to the concurrent teſtimonies in the hiſtory of almoſt all nations in this particular. But captain Cook had already, in his former voyage, received ſtrong proof that the practice of eating human fleſh exiſted in New Zeeland; and as now we have with our own eyes ſeen the inhabitants devouring human fleſh, all controverſy on that point muſt be at an end. The opinions of authors on the origin of this cuſtom are infinitely various, and have lately been collected by the very learned canon PAUW, at Xanten, in his *Recherches Philoſophiques ſur les Americains*, vol. I. p. 207. He ſeems to think that men were firſt tempted to devour each other from real want of food and cruel neceſſity *. Many weighty objections, however, may be made againſt this hypotheſis; amongſt which the following is one of the greateſt. There

* His ſentiments are copied by Dr. Hawkeſworth, who has diſingenuouſly concealed their author. See his Compilation, vol. III. p. 447.

are

1773. NOVEMBER.

are very few countries in the world ſo miſerably barren as not to afford their inhabitants ſufficient nouriſhment, and thoſe, in particular, where anthropophagi ſtill exiſt, do not come under that deſcription. The northern iſle of New Zeeland, on a coaſt of near four hundred leagues, contains ſcarcely one hundred thouſand inhabitants, according to the moſt probable gueſs which can be made; a number inconſiderable for that vaſt ſpace of country, even allowing the ſettlements to be confined only to the ſea-ſhore. The great abundance of fiſh, and the beginnings of agriculture in the Bay of Plenty and other parts of the Northern Iſle, are more than ſufficient to maintain this number, becauſe they have always had enough to ſupply ſtrangers with what was deemed ſuperfluous. It is true, before the dawn of the arts among them, before the invention of nets, and before the cultivation of potatoes, the means of ſubſiſtence may have been more difficult; but then the number of inhabitants muſt likewiſe have been infinitely ſmaller. Single inſtances are not concluſive in this caſe, though they prove how far the wants of the body may ſtimulate mankind to extraordinary actions. In 1772, during a famine which happened throughout all Germany, a herdſman was taken on the manor of Baron Boineburg, in Heſſia, who had been urged by hunger to kill and devour a boy, and afterwards to make a practice of it for ſeveral months. From his confeſſion it appeared, that he looked upon the fleſh of young

1773. NOVEMBER. children as a very delicious food; and the geſtures of the New Zeelanders indicated exactly the ſame thing. An old woman in the province of Matogroſſo, in Braſil, declared to the Portugueſe governor *, that ſhe had eaten human fleſh ſeveral times, liked it very much, and ſhould be very glad to feaſt upon it again, eſpecially if it was part of a little boy. But it would be abſurd to ſuppoſe from ſuch circumſtances, that killing men for the ſake of feaſting upon them, has ever been the ſpirit of a whole nation; becauſe it is utterly incompatible with the exiſtence of ſociety. Slight cauſes have ever produced the moſt remarkable events among mankind, and the moſt trifling quarrels have fired their minds with incredible inveteracy againſt each other. Revenge has always been a ſtrong paſſion among barbarians, who are leſs ſubject to the ſway of reaſon than civilized people, and has ſtimulated them to a degree of madneſs which is capable of all kinds of exceſſes. The people who firſt conſumed the body of their enemies, ſeem to have been bent upon exterminating their very inanimate remains, from an exceſs of paſſion; but, by degrees, finding the meat wholeſome and palatable, it is not to be wondered that they ſhould make a practice of eating their enemies as often as they killed any, ſince the action of eating human fleſh, whatever our education may teach us to the contrary, is

* M. de Pinto, now ambaſſador from Portugal at the Britiſh court; a nobleman equally eminent for his extenſive knowledge and his excellent heart.

certainly

certainly neither unnatural nor criminal in itſelf. It can only become dangerous as far as it ſteels the mind againſt that compaſſionate fellow-feeling which is the great baſis of civil ſociety; and for this reaſon we find it naturally baniſhed from every people as ſoon as civilization has made any progreſs among them. But though we are too much poliſhed to be canibals, we do not find it unnaturally and ſavagely cruel to take the field, and to cut one another's throats by thouſands, without a ſingle motive, beſides the ambition of a prince, or the caprice of his miſtreſs! Is it not from prejudice that we are diſguſted with the idea of eating a dead man, when we feel no remorſe in depriving him of life? If the practice of eating human fleſh makes men unfeeling and brutal, we have inſtances that civilized people, who would perhaps, like ſome of our ſailors, have turned ſick at the thought of eating human fleſh, have committed barbarities without example amongſt canibals. A New Zeelander, who kills and eats his enemy, is a very different being from an European, who, for his amuſement, tears an infant from the mother's breaſt, in cool blood, and throws it on the earth to feed his hounds *

1773. NOVEMBER.

Neque hic lupis mos nec fuit leonibus.
Nunquam niſi in diſpar feris. HOR.

The New Zeelanders never eat their adverſaries, unleſs they are killed in battle; they never kill their relations for

* Biſhop Las Caſas ſays, he has ſeen this atrocious crime committed in America by Spaniſh ſoldiers.

The

1773. NOVEMBER. the purpoſe of eating them; they do not even eat them if they die of a natural death, and they take no priſoners with a view to fatten them for their repaſt*; though theſe circumſtances have been related, with more or leſs truth of the American Indians. It is therefore not improbable, that in proceſs of time they will entirely lay aſide this cuſtom; and the introduction of new domeſtic animals into their country might haſten that period, ſince greater affluence would tend to make them more ſociable. Their religion does not ſeem likely to be an obſtacle, becauſe from what we could judge, they are not remarkably ſuperſtitious, and it is only among very bigoted nations, that the cuſtom of offering human fleſh to the gods, has prevailed after civilization. Tupaya †, the only man who could freely converſe with the New Zeelanders, ſoon learnt that they acknowledged a ſupreme Being; and this ſpark of divine revelation probably remains amongſt all nations on the globe. To this they add the belief of ſome inferior divinities, ſo correſpondent to thoſe of the Taheitians, that their ſyſtem of polytheiſm muſt be of very ancient date, and ſeems to derive its origin from their common anceſtors. We never obſerved a ſingle ceremony in New Zeeland, which could be ſuppoſed to have a religious tendency; and I know of only two circumſtances which may be diſtantly conſtrued to

* See Hawkeſworth, vol. II. p. 389, 390.

† See Hawkeſworth, vol. III. p. 472.

ſavour

favour of ſuperſtition. The firſt is the name of *atuee*, " the bird of the divinity," which they ſometimes give to a ſpecies of creeper * *(certhia cincinnata.)* This name ſeems to indicate a veneration like that which is paid to herons, and king-fiſhers at Taheitee, and the Society Iſles; but I cannot ſay that they ever expreſſed the leaſt wiſh to preſerve the life of this bird in preference to the reſt. The ſecond, is the cuſtom of wearing an amulet of green jadde on the breaſt, from a ſtring round the neck. This piece of ſtone is of the ſize of two crown-pieces, and carved ſo as to bear a rude reſemblance to a human being. Theſe they call e-teeghee, a name which is doubtleſs equivalent to the Taheitian e-tee †. In that iſland, and the adjacent group, e-tee ſignifies a wooden image of the human figure, erected on a pole at their cemeteries, in memory of the dead, but to which no worſhip nor particular reſpect is paid. The New Zeeland teeghee ſeems to be worn with a ſimilar view, but not to be better reſpected; for though they did not part with it for a trifle, yet with half a yard of broad cloth or red kerſey, which were our beſt goods in Queen Charlotte's Sound, we never failed to purchaſe it. Beſides this, they often wear ſeveral rows of human teeth round the neck, but we underſtood that they were only the memorials of

1773. NOVEMBER.

* Our ſailors called this the poe-bird. Its common New Zeeland name is kogo.

† Better pronounced E-Tee-ee.

their

1773. NOVEMBER. their proweſs, ſince they had belonged to the enemies whom they had killed. It always appeared to us, that they have no prieſts or jugglers of any kind among them, which accounts for their having ſo little ſuperſtition. When the comforts of life are multiplied, it is poſſible that ſome individuals may be artful enough to improve upon their preſent ideas of religion, in order to enjoy excluſive advantages; for it has often been the fate of mankind, that the moſt ſacred, and moſt ineſtimable gift of heaven, has ſerved as a cloak under cover of which they have been deluded.

Having fitted the ſhip to encounter the rigorous climate of the ſouth, and received on board her proviſion of freſh water and wood, as well as the biſcuit which had been baked over again, we re-imbarked all the tents from the
Wedneſd. 24. ſhore, and on the 24th, early in the morning, unmoored and rode by a ſingle anchor. The natives immediately repaired to the beach which we had left, and finding there a heap of bread-duſt which had been rejected as unfit for uſe at the reviſal of our biſcuit, they fell to, and conſumed it all, though our hogs had before refuſed to touch it. We could not attribute this proceding to neceſſity, becauſe they had plenty of freſh fiſh, of which they daily ſold us enough for our conſumption. It was rather owing to the diverſity of their taſte from ours, or to the natural inclination for variety, which made them eat the worſt of vegetable food, becauſe

becauſe it was a rarity, in preference to fiſh, which is their conſtant diet. They had another motive for viſiting the place of our late eſtabliſhment; this was, to pick up any little trifles, ſuch as nails, rags, &c. which we might have left behind. Whilſt they were ſo employed, ſome others came from the interior parts of the bay, and offered a great quantity of their tools and weapons to ſell. 1773. NOVEMBER.

In the afternoon, a boat was ſent on ſhore to bury a bottle at the foot of a tree, with a letter for captain Furneaux, in caſe he ſhould come into the harbour after our departure. Another boat, with ſeveral officers, and my father, went to Indian Cove, where the entrails of the body ſtill lay on the ground. The war-canoe, in which the expedition had been made, had a carved head ornamented with bunches of brown feathers, and a double-forked prong projected from it, on which the heart of their ſlain enemy was transfixed. Our gentlemen purchaſed a quantity of their prepared hemp or flax, and many fiſh-hooks, armed with bone, which, according to the account of the natives, was taken from the human arm.

At four o'clock the next morning, a boat was ſent to the Motu-Aro, in order to take a few cabbages out of our plantations. My father took that opportunity of ſearching the ſhore for the laſt time, and was fortunate enough to find ſome plants which we had not ſeen before. In the mean while we hove the anchor, ſet ſail, and took up the Thurſday 25.

1773. NOVEMBER. boat on our way; but finding the current and wind againſt us, we were forced to come to again about ſeven o'clock, between Motu-Aro and Long Iſland. Here we lay an hour or two, and then ſet ſail with a more favourable breeze, which carried us into Cook's Strait.

We ſtood cloſe in ſhore under cape Tera-Wittee, and fired ſeveral guns to give the Adventure notice of our approach, in caſe ſhe had lain in one of the adjacent harbours. Between the Capes Tera-Wittee and Palliſer, we diſcovered a very deep bay, of which the ſhores had every where a gentle ſlope, and eſpecially towards the bottom, where the hills were removed to ſuch a diſtance, that we could but juſt diſcern them. If there is a ſufficient depth of water for ſhips in this bay, and of that we had no room to doubt, it appears to be a moſt convenient ſpot for an European ſettlement. There is a great ſtretch of land fit for cultivation, and eaſily defenſible; there is likewiſe plenty of wood, and almoſt certain indications of a conſiderable river; and laſtly, the country does not ſeem to be very populous, ſo that there would be little danger of quarrels with the natives; advantages which are not frequently to be met with jointly in many ſpots of New Zeeland. The flag (*phormium tenax*) of which the natives make all their clothes, mats, ropes, and nets, affords ſuch an excellent kind of flax, which is at once gloſſy, elaſtic, and ſtrong, that it might become an article of commerce in India, where cordage and canvas is wanted.

wanted. Perhaps in future ages, when the maritime powers of Europe loſe their American colonies, they may think of making new eſtabliſhments in more diſtant regions; and if it were ever poſſible for Europeans to have humanity enough to acknowledge the indigenous tribes of the South Sea as their brethren, we might have ſettlements which would not be defiled with the blood of innocent nations. 1773. NOVEMBER.

We continued firing guns as we ſtood paſt this bay, and the next morning having doubled Cape Palliſer, we ran along the coaſt to the northward till the evening, likewiſe firing guns from time to time. Our attempts to rejoin our conſort were to no purpoſe; we heard no anſwer to all our ſignals, though we hearkened with an attention, and an eagerneſs which plainly ſhewed how unwillingly we ventured on a ſecond cruize among numberleſs dangers without a companion. We were forced at laſt to give up the thought of ſeeing her again, and about ſix o'clock took our departure from Cape Palliſer, ſteering to the S. S. E. Friday 26.

The ſcurvy, which had afflicted ſome of our people after the firſt tedious cruize to the ſouth, between the Cape of Good Hope and Duſky Bay, had been entirely ſubdued by the wholeſome diet on fiſh, and the drinking of ſpruce-beer in that harbour; and afterwards by the excellent greens in Queen Charlotte's Sound. Our diſagreeable paſſage in winter from New Zeeland to Taheitee, had revived

1773. NOVEMBER. the ſymptoms of the diſeaſe in many perſons, and in ſome to a conſiderable degree; but the continual ſupply of freſh vegetables, which we received at that iſland, together with the proviſion of excellent pork at the Society and Friendly Iſles, had entirely re-eſtabliſhed them. Our ſecond ſtay at Queen's Charlotte's Sound had likewiſe furniſhed us, as before, with abundance of celery and ſcurvy-graſs, which counteracted the noxious effects of ſalted meat; ſo that we were, to appearance, in a good ſtate of health at our ſecond departure from thence. It may, however, juſtly be queſtioned, whether the continual hardſhips and labours which we had undergone, had not in reality made the ſhew of health deceitful, and impaired the body ſo much that it was not able to reſiſt ſo long as it had formerly done. The officers and paſſengers entered upon this ſecond cruize under ſeveral difficulties which did not exiſt before. They had now no live-ſtock to be compared to that which they took from the Cape of Good Hope; and the little ſtore of proviſions which had ſupplied their table with variety in preference to that of the common ſailor, was now ſo far conſumed, that they were nearly upon a level, eſpecially as the ſeamen were inured to that way of life by conſtant habit almoſt from their infancy; and the others had never experienced it before. The hope of meeting with new lands was vaniſhed, the topics of common converſation were exhauſted, the cruize to the ſouth could not preſent any thing new,

new, but appeared in all its chilling horrors before us, and the abſence of our conſort doubled every danger. We had enjoyed a few agreeable days between the tropics, we had feaſted as well as the produce of various iſlands would permit, and we had been entertained with the novelty of many objects among different nations; but, according to the common viciſſitudes of fortune, this agreeable moment was to be replaced by a long period of fogs and froſty weather, of faſting, and of tedious uniformity. The late Abbé Chappe, in his voyage to California, (or his compiler, M. Caſſini, in his name,) obſerves *, "that variety alone has charms for "the traveller, who goes in queſt of her from one country "to another." His philoſophy is at the ſame time of ſuch an exalted nature, that he pronounces † "the life which "is led at ſea to be tedious and uniform only to thoſe who "are not accuſtomed to look round them, and who be-"hold all nature with the eye of indifference." Had the good Abbé been unfortunate enough to make a viſit to the antarctic circle, without the company of ſeveral hundred fattened fowls, which kept him in good humour on his ſhort trip from Cadiz to Vera Cruz, his philoſophy would not have taken ſo high a flight. But though he found variety at ſea, he was not ſo fortunate in Mexico ‡. Here he croſſed great tracts of uncultivated country and extenſive foreſts, he ſaw nature in a ſavage ſtate, allowed that ſhe was rich and

1773. NOVEMBER.

* Pag 22. † Pag. 13. ‡ Pag. 22.

beautiful;

1773. NOVEMBER. beautiful; but, in the ſpace of a few days, her multiplicity of charms became inſipid and uniform in his eyes. And yet this traveller aſſures us, that he was aſtronomer, botaniſt, zoologiſt, mineralogiſt, chymiſt, and philoſopher!

We quitted the ſhores of New Zeeland with ideas very different from thoſe of Abbé Chappe; and if any thing alleviated the drearineſs of the proſpect with a great part of our ſhip-mates, it was the hope of completing the circle round the South-Pole in a high latitude during the next inhoſpitable ſummer, and of returning to England within the ſpace of eight months. This hope contributed to animate the ſpirits of our people during the greateſt part of our continuance in bad weather; but in the end it vaniſhed like a dream, and the only thought which could make them amends, was the certainty of paſſing another ſeaſon among the happy iſlands in the torrid zone.

CHAP.

1773. NOVEMBER.

CHAP. III.

The ſecond courſe towards the high ſouthern latitudes from New Zeeland to Eaſter Iſland.

THE morning after we had taken our departure, we had a N. N. W. wind, which raiſed the thermometer to 64 deg. The two next days it ſtood at 54 deg. then at 48; and when we were in about 49° of ſouth latitude, at 44½ deg. On the 28th of November, we obſerved a number of ſeals, or perhaps ſea-lions, paſſing by us at a diſtance towards the land which we had left. From that time to the 6th of December we daily ſaw great flocks of blue and other petrels, together with the different ſpecies of albatroſſes, the ſkuas or grey gulls, many pinguins, and abundance of ſea-weed. About ſeven in the evening, on that day, we were in the latitude of 51° 33′ ſouth, and long. 180°; conſequently juſt at the point of the antipodes of London. The remembrance of domeſtic felicity, and of the ſweets of ſociety, called forth a ſigh from every heart which felt the tender ties of filial or parental affection. We are the firſt Europeans, and I believe I may add, the firſt human beings, who have reached this point, where it is probable none will come after us. A common report prevails indeed in England concerning Sir Francis Drake, who

Saturday 27.

DECEMBER. Monday 6.

1773. DECEMBER. who is ſaid to have viſited the antipodes, which the legend expreſſes by "his having paſſed under the middle arch of "London-bridge:" but this is a miſtake, as his track lay along the coaſt of America, and probably originates from his having paſſed the *periæci*, or the point in 180° long. on the ſame circle of north latitude, on the coaſt of California.

In proportion as we advanced to the ſouthward the ther-
Friday 10. mometer fell; and on the 10th, in the morning, the wind coming more ahead, it deſcended to 37°. At noon we had reached the latitude of 59° ſouth, without having met with any ice, though we fell in with it the preceding year on the 10th of December, between the 50th and 51ſt deg. of ſouth latitude. It is difficult to account for this difference; perhaps a ſevere winter preceding our firſt courſe from the Cape of Good Hope, might accumulate more ice that year than the next, which is the more probable, as we learnt at the Cape that the winter had been ſharper there than uſual; perhaps a violent ſtorm might break the polar ice, and drive it ſo far to the northward as we found it; and perhaps both theſe cauſes might concur, with others, to produce this effect.

On the 11th, at night, the cold encreaſed, the thermometer ſtanding at 34 deg. and at four o'clock the next
Sunday 12. morning a large iſland of floating ice was ſeen ahead, which we paſſed an hour afterwards. At eight o'clock the thermometer was already at 31½ deg. the air being probably re-

frigerated

frigerated by the ice, though we did not ſee more than this one piece. At noon we found the latitude to be 61° 46′ ſouth. The next morning the thermometer ſtood at 31 deg. and we ran to the eaſtward with a freſh breeze, though we had a ſurpriſing fall of ſnow, which filled the air to ſuch a degree that we could not ſee ten yards before us. Our friend Mahine had already expreſſed his ſurprize at ſeveral little ſnow and hail ſhowers on the preceding days, this phænomenon being utterly unknown in his country. The appearance of "white ſtones," which melted in his hand, was altogether miraculous in his eyes, and though we endeavoured to explain to him that cold was the cauſe of their formation, yet I believe his ideas on that ſubject were never very clear. The heavy fall of ſnow this day ſurpriſed him more than what he had ſeen before, and after a long conſideration of its ſingular qualities, he told us he would call it the *white rain* when he came back to his country. He did not ſee the firſt ice on account of the early hour of the morning; but two days after, in about 65 deg. of ſouth latitude, he was ſtruck with aſtoniſhment upon ſeeing one of the largeſt pieces, and the day following preſented him with an extenſive field of ice, which blocked up our farther progreſs to the ſouth, and gave him great pleaſure, ſuppoſing it to be land. We told him that ſo far from being land, it was nothing but freſh water, which we found ſome difficulty to convince him off at firſt, till we

1773. DECEMBER.

1773. DECEMBER. ſhewed him the ice which was formed in the ſcuttled caſk on the deck. He aſſured us, however, that he would at all events call this the *white land*, by way of diſtinguiſhing it from all the reſt. Already, at New Zeeland, he had collected a number of little ſlender twigs, which he carefully tied in a bundle, and made uſe of inſtead of journals. For every iſland which he had ſeen and viſited, after his departure from the Society Iſles, he had ſelected a little twig; ſo that his collection amounted at preſent to nine or ten, of which he remembered the names perfectly well in the ſame order as we had ſeen them, and the white land, or *whennua tèatèa*, was the laſt. He enquired frequently how many other countries we ſhould meet with in our way to England, and formed a ſeparate bundle of them, which he ſtudied every day with equal care as the firſt. The tediouſneſs of this part of our voyage probably made him ſo eager to know how it would end; and the ſalt proviſions, together with the cold climate, contributed to diſguſt him. His uſual amuſement was to ſeparate the red feathers from the aprons, uſed in dancing, which he had purchaſed at Tonga-Tabboo, and to join eight or ten of them together into a little tuft, by means of coco-nut core. The reſt of his time he paſſed in walking on deck, viſiting the officers and petty officers, and warming himſelf by the fire in the captain's cabin. We took this opportunity to improve in the knowledge of his language, and, by degrees, reviſed the

the whole vocabulary which we had collected at the Society Iſles. By this method we became poſſeſſed of a fund of uſeful intelligence concerning his country and the adjacent iſles, which led us to make many enquiries at our ſubſequent return to thoſe iſlands. 1773. DECEMBER.

The ice-fields appeared, in different parts of the horizon, about us on the 15th in the morning, ſo that we were in a manner embayed; and, as we ſaw no poſſibility of advancing to the ſouth, we ran to the N. N. E. to get clear of them. The weather, which was already foggy, became thicker towards noon, and made our ſituation, amidſt a great number of floating rocks of ice, extremely dangerous. About one o'clock, whilſt the people were at dinner, we were alarmed by the ſudden appearance of a large iſland of ice juſt a head of us. It was abſolutely impoſſible either to wear or tack the ſhip*, on account of its proximity, and our only reſource was to keep as near the wind as poſſible, and to try to weather the danger. We were in the moſt dreadful ſuſpenſe for a few minutes, and though we fortunately ſucceeded, yet the ſhip paſſed within her own length to windward of it. Notwithſtanding the conſtant perils to which our courſe expoſed us in this unexplored ocean, our ſhip's company were far from being ſo uneaſy as might have been expected; and, as in battle the ſight of death becomes familiar and often unaffecting, ſo here, by daily experiencing

* *i. e.* To go round either with or againſt the wind.

1773. DECEMBER. ſuch hair-breadth eſcapes, we paſſed unconcernedly on, as if the waves, the winds, and rocks of ice had not the power to hurt us. The pieces of ice had a variety of ſhapes, in the ſame manner as thoſe which we had obſerved to the ſouthward of the Indian Ocean; and many pyramids, obeliſks, and church-ſpires appeared from time to time. Their height was not much inferior to that which we had obſerved among the firſt iſlands of ice in 1772; and many likewiſe reſembled them in being of a great extent and perfectly level at top.

The number of birds which we had hitherto met with on our paſſage, would have perſuaded any other voyagers but ourſelves of the approach of land. We were, however, ſo much uſed to their appearance on the ſea at preſent, as never once to form any expectation of diſcovering land from that circumſtance. Flocks of blue petrels and pintadas, many albatroſſes, with now and then a ſolitary ſkua had attended us every day; and to theſe, ſince our approach to the ice, we could join the ſnowy and antarctic petrels and the fulmars. However, pinguins, ſea-weed, or ſeals, had not been obſerved ſince the 10th.

The weather, which was extremely moiſt and diſagreeably cold, proved unfavourable to the doves and pigeons which many people had purchaſed at the Society and Friendly Iſlands, and to the ſinging-birds which they had been at great pains to catch alive at New Zeeland. We had five doves

at

at our departure from this country, all which died one after another before the 16th of December, being much more expoſed to the cold in our cabins, than in the ſailors births. The thermometer in our cabins was never more than 5 deg. higher than in the open air on deck, and their ſituation abreaſt of the main-maſt, where the ſtrain of the ſhip is greateſt, expoſed them to currents of air, and made them admit water like ſieves. 1773. DECEMBER.

On the 16th, in the afternoon, and on the 17th, we hoiſted out our boats and collected ſome looſe pieces of ice to fill our empty caſks with freſh water. The ice which we picked up was old and ſpungy, and impregnated with ſaline particles, from having long been in a ſtate of decay; therefore did not afford us very good water, but it was drinkable, particularly if we let the pieces of ice lie on deck for ſome time, by which means the ſalt-water was almoſt entirely drained off. From this time till the 20th we ſaw no birds about us, which diſappeared without any viſible cauſe; but on that day ſome albatroſſes appeared again. Friday 17.

Having left the ice behind which obſtructed our paſſage, we had gradually advanced to the ſouthward again, that being our principal object, and on the 20th in the afternoon, we croſſed the antarctic circle the ſecond time during our voyage. The weather was wet and foggy, ice iſlands were numerous around us, and the gale was very briſk. Many antarctic petrels, and a whale which ſpouted up the Monday 20.

water

1773. DECEMBER. water near us, ſeemed to indicate our entrance into the frigid zone. At night two ſeals appeared, which we had not ſeen for fourteen days paſt, and gave ſome faint hopes of ſeeing land to ſeveral of our ſhipmates; but our courſe diſappointed their expectations, by continuing within the circle as far as 67° 12′ S. lat. for ſeveral days following.

Thurſday 23. On the 23d in the afternoon, we were ſurrounded with iſlands of ice, and the ſea was in a manner covered with ſmall fragments. The ſhip was therefore brought to, the boats hoiſted out, and a great quantity of good ice taken on board. The birds were at preſent very numerous about us again, and ſome antarctic and other petrels were ſhot and taken up, which we had an opportunity of drawing and deſcribing. About this time many perſons were afflicted with violent rheumatic pains, head-aches, ſwelled glands, and catarrhal fevers, which ſome attributed to the uſe of ice-water. My father, who had complained of a cold for ſeveral days paſt, was obliged to keep his bed today, having a ſevere rheumatiſm with a fever. His complaint ſeemed rather to ariſe from the wretched accommodations which he had on board, every thing in his cabin rotting in the wet which it admitted, and being mouldy. The cold was ſo ſenſible there this day in particular, that he found only a difference of two degrees and a half between the thermometer there, and that upon the deck.

After

After hoiſting in our boats we made ſail to the northward, as much as a contrary wind permitted, during all the night and the next day. On the 25th, the weather was clear and fair, but the wind died away to a perfect calm, upwards of ninety large ice-iſlands being in ſight at noon. This being Chriſtmas-day, the captain according to cuſtom, invited the officers and mates to dinner, and one of the lieutenant's entertained the petty-officers. The ſailors feaſted on a double portion of pudding, regaling themſelves with the brandy of their allowance, which they had ſaved for this occaſion ſome months before-hand, being ſollicitous to get very drunk, though they are commonly ſollicitous about nothing elſe. The ſight of an immenſe number of icy maſſes, amongſt which we drifted at the mercy of the current, every moment in danger of being daſhed to pieces againſt them, could not deter the ſailors from indulging in their favourite amuſement. As long as they had brandy left, they would perſiſt to keep Chriſtmas "like Chriſtians," though the elements had conſpired together for their deſtruction. Their long acquaintance with a ſea-faring life had inured them to all kinds of perils, and their heavy labour, with the inclemencies of weather, and other hardſhips, making their muſcles rigid and their nerves obtuſe, had communicated inſenſibility to the mind. It will eaſily be conceived, that as they do not feel for themſelves ſufficiently to provide for their own ſafety, they

1773. DECEMBER. Saturday 25.

muſt

1773. DECEMBER. muſt be incapable of feeling for others. Subjected to a very ſtrict command, they alſo exerciſe a tyrannical ſway over thoſe whom fortune places in their power. Accuſtomed to face an enemy, they breathe nothing but war. By force of habit even killing is become ſo much their paſſion, that we have ſeen many inſtances during our voyage, where they have expreſſed a horrid eagerneſs to fire upon the natives on the ſlighteſt pretences. Their way of life in general prevents their enjoying domeſtic comforts; and groſs animal appetites fill the place of purer affections.

> At laſt, extinct each ſocial feeling, fell
> And joyleſs inhumanity pervades
> And petrifies the heart.—— THOMPSON.

Though they are members of a civilized ſociety, they may in ſome meaſure be looked upon as a body of uncivilized men, rough, paſſionate, revengeful, but likewiſe brave, ſincere, and true to each other.

At noon the obſervation of the ſun's altitude determined our latitude to be 66° 22' ſouth, ſo that we were juſt returned out of the antarctic circle. We had ſcarcely any night during our ſtay in the frigid zone, ſo that I find ſeveral articles in my father's journal, written by the light of the ſun, within a few minutes before the hour of midnight. The ſun's ſtay below the horizon was ſo very ſhort this night likewiſe, that we had a very ſtrong twilight all the time. Mahine was ſtruck with the greateſt aſtoniſhment

ment at this phænomenon, and would ſcarcely believe his ſenſes. All our endeavours to explain it to him miſcarried, and he aſſured us he deſpaired of finding belief among his countrymen, when he ſhould come back to recount the wonders of petrified rain, and of perpetual day. The firſt Venetians who explored the northern extremes of the European continent, were equally ſurpriſed at the continual appearance of the ſun above the horizon, and relate that they could only diſtinguiſh day from night, by the inſtinct of the ſea-fowl, which went to rooſt on ſhore, for the ſpace of four hours *. As we were in all likelihood far diſtant from any land, this indication failed us, and we have often obſerved numerous birds on the wing about us all the night, and particularly great flocks of different ſpecies, ſo late as eleven o'clock. 1773. DECEMBER.

At ſix in the evening, we counted one hundred and five large maſſes of ice around us from the deck, the weather continuing very clear, fair, and perfectly calm. Towards noon the next day we were ſtill in the ſame ſituation, with a very drunken crew, and from the maſt-head obſerved one hundred and ſixty-eight ice-iſlands, ſome of which were half a mile long, and none leſs than the hull of the ſhip. Sunday 26.

* Pietro Quirino ſailed in April 143', and was miſerably ſhipwrecked at the iſle of Roeſt or Ruſten, on the coaſt of Norway, under the polar circle, in January 1432.—See Navigazioni et Viaggi raccolti da G. B. Ramuſio. Venet. 1574. vol. II. p. 204, 210.

1773. DECEMBER. The whole ſcene looked like the wrecks of a ſhattered world, or as the poets deſcribe ſome regions of hell; an idea which ſtruck us the more forcibly, as execrations, oaths, and curſes re-echoed about us on all ſides.

Monday 27. A faint breeze ſprung up in the afternoon, with which we made ſlow advances to the northward, the number of ice iſlands decreaſing in proportion as we receded from the antarctic circle. About four the next morning, we hoiſted out our boats, and took in a freſh proviſion of ice. The weather changed ſoon after, the wind coming about to the north-eaſtward, which brought on much ſnow and ſleet. My father, and twelve other perſons were again much afflicted with rheumatic pains, and confined to their beds. The ſcurvy did not yet appear under any dangerous form in the ſhip, and all thoſe who had any ſlight ſymptoms of it, amongſt whom I was one, drank plentifully of the freſh wort, quite warm, twice a day, and abſtained as much as poſſible from ſalt-diet. A general languor and ſickly look however, manifeſted itſelf in almoſt every perſon's face, which threatened us with more dangerous conſequences. Captain Cook himſelf was likewiſe pale and lean, entirely loſt his appetite, and laboured under a perpetual coſtiveneſs.

1774. JANUARY. We advanced to the northward as much as the winds

Saturday 1. would permit us, and loſt ſight of the ice on the firſt of

Tueſday 4. January 1774, in 59° 7′ S. latitude. On the 4th, the wind

wind blowing from the weſtward was very boiſterous, and obliged us to keep all our ſails double-reefed; the ſea ran high, and the ſhip worked very heavily, rolling violently from ſide to ſide. This continued till the 6th at noon, when, having reached 51° of S. latitude, we bore away from the wind, to the N. N. E. We were now within a few degrees of the track which we had made in June and July laſt, in going from New Zeeland to Taheitee, and had directed our courſe towards it, in order to leave no conſiderable part of this great ocean unexplored. As far as we had hitherto advanced, we had found no land, not even indications of land; our firſt track had croſſed the South Sea in the middle latitudes, or between 40 and 50 degrees. In our courſe till Chriſtmas, we had explored the greateſt part of it between 60 degrees and the antarctic circle; and the preſent courſe to the northward had croſſed the ſpace between the two former runs. If any land has eſcaped us, it muſt be an iſland, whoſe diſtance from Europe, and ſituation in an uncouth climate cannot make it valuable to this country. It is obvious that to ſearch a ſea of ſuch extent as the South Sea, in order to be certain of the exiſtence, or non-exiſtence of a ſmall iſland, would require many voyages in numberleſs different tracks, and cannot be effected in a ſingle expedition. But it is ſufficient for us, to have proved that no large land or continent exiſts in the

1774. JANUARY.

Thurſday 6.

1774. JANUARY. South Sea within the temperate zone, and that if it exiſts at all, we have at leaſt confined it within the antarctic circle.

The long continuance in theſe cold climates began now to hang heavily on our crew, eſpecially as it baniſhed all hope of returning home this year, which had hitherto ſupported their ſpirits. At firſt a painful deſpondence, owing to the dreary proſpect of another year's cruize to the South, ſeemed painted in every countenance; till by degrees they reſigned themſelves to their fate, with a kind of ſullen indifference. It muſt be owned however, that nothing could be more dejecting than the entire ignorance of our future deſtination, which, without any apparent reaſon, was conſtantly kept a ſecret to every perſon in the ſhip.

We now ſtood to the north-eaſtward for a few days, till we came ſo far as 47° 52′ ſouth latitude, where the thermometer roſe to 52 degrees. On that day, which was the Monday 11. 11th, at noon, the courſe was directed to the S. E. again, though this frequent and ſudden change of climate could not fail of proving very hurtful to our health in general. Saturday 15. On the 15th the wind encreaſed very much, and in a ſhort time blew a tempeſtuous gale, which took

——— the ruffian billows by the top
Curling their monſtrous heads and hanging them
With deaf'ning clamours in the ſlippery ſhrouds. SHAKESPEARE.

At nine o'clock a huge mountainous wave ſtruck the ſhip on the beam, and filled the decks with a deluge of water.

It

It poured through the ſky-light over our heads, and extinguiſhed the candle, leaving us for a moment in doubt, whether we were not entirely overwhelmed and ſinking into the abyſs. Every thing was afloat in my father's cabin, and his bed was thoroughly ſoaked. His rheumatiſm, which had now afflicted him above a fortnight, was ſtill ſo violent as to have almoſt deprived him of the uſe of his legs, and his pains redoubled in the morning. Our ſituation at preſent was indeed very diſmal, even to thoſe who preſerved the bleſſing of health; to the ſick, whoſe crippled limbs were tortured with exceſſive pain, it was inſupportable. The ocean about us had a furious aſpect, and ſeemed incenſed at the preſumption of a few intruding mortals. A gloomy melancholy air loured on the brows of our ſhipmates, and a dreadful ſilence reigned amongſt us. Salt meat, our conſtant diet, was become loathſome to all, and even to thoſe who had been bred to a nautical life from their tender years: the hour of dinner was hateful to us, for the well known ſmell of the victuals had no ſooner reached our noſe, than we found it impoſſible to partake of them with a hearty appetite. 1774. JANUARY. Sunday 16.

It will appear from hence that this voyage was not to be compared to any preceding one, for the multitude of hardſhips and diſtreſſes which attended it. Our predeceſſors in the South Sea had always navigated within the tropic, or at leaſt in the beſt parts of the temperate zone; they had almoſt

1774. JANUARY. almoſt conſtantly enjoyed mild eaſy weather, and ſailed in ſight of lands, which were never ſo wretchedly deſtitute as not to afford them refreſhments from time to time. Such a voyage would have been merely a party of pleaſure to us; continually entertained with new and often agreeable objects, our minds would have been at eaſe, our converſation cheerful, our bodies healthy, and our whole ſituation deſirable and happy. Ours was juſt the reverſe of this; our ſouthern cruizes were uniform and tedious in the higheſt degree; the ice, the fogs, the ſtorms and ruffled ſurface of the ſea formed a diſagreeable ſcene, which was ſeldom cheered by the reviving beams of the ſun; the climate was rigorous and our food deteſtable. In ſhort, we rather vegetated than lived; we withered, and became indifferent to all that animates the ſoul at other times. We ſacrificed our health, our feelings, our enjoyments, to the honour of purſuing a track unattempted before. This was indeed as the poet ſays,

——— propter vitam vivendi perdere cauſas. JUVENAL.

The crew were as much diſtreſſed as the officers, from another cauſe. Their biſcuit, which had been ſorted at New Zeeland, baked over again, and then packed up, was now in the ſame decayed ſtate as before. This was owing partly to the reviſal, which had been ſo rigorous, that many a bad biſcuit was preſerved among thoſe that were eatable, and partly to the neglect of the caſks, which had

not

not been ſufficiently fumigated and dried. Of this rotten bread the people only received two thirds of their uſual allowance, from œconomical principles; but, as that portion is hardly ſufficient, ſuppoſing it to be all eatable, it was far from being ſo when nearly one half of it was rotten. However, they continued in that diſtreſsful ſituation till this day, when the firſt mate came to the captain and complained bitterly that he and the people had not wherewith to ſatisfy the cravings of the ſtomach, producing, at the ſame time, the rotten and ſtinking remains of his biſcuit. Upon this the crew were put to full allowance. The captain ſeemed to recover again as we advanced to the ſouthward, but all thoſe who were afflicted with rheumatiſms continued as much indiſpoſed as ever. 1773. JANUARY.

The firſt ice iſlands which we met with on this run were in 62° 30′ ſouth, on the 20th, but they did not accumulate in number in proportion to our progreſs, ſo that we croſſed the antarctic circle again on the 26th, without ſeeing more than a few ſolitary pieces. On that day we were amuſed with the appearance of land; for after ſtanding on towards it for ſome hours, it vaniſhed in clouds. The next day, at noon, we were in 67° 52′ ſouth; conſequently to the ſouthward of any of our former tracks, and met with no ice to ſtop us. The blue petrels, the little ſtorm petrels, and the pintadas ſtill accompanied us, but albatroſſes had left us ſome time ago. We were now once more in the Thurſday 20. Wedneſd. 26. Thurſday 27.

regions

1774. JANUARY. regions of perpetual day *, and had ſunſhine at the hour of midnight.

Friday 28. On the 28th, in the afternoon, we paſſed a large bed of broken ice, hoiſted out the boats, and took up a great quantity, which afforded a ſeaſonable ſupply of freſh water. At midnight the thermometer was not lower than 34°, and the next morning we enjoyed the mildeſt ſunſhine we had ever experienced in the frigid zone. My father therefore ventured upon deck for the firſt time after a month's confinement.

We now entertained hopes of penetrating to the ſouth as far as other navigators have done towards the north pole; but on the 30th, about ſeven o'clock in the morning, we diſcovered a ſolid ice-field of immenſe extent before us, which bore from E. to W. A bed of fragments floated all round this field, which ſeemed to be raiſed ſeveral feet high above the level of the water. A vaſt number of icy maſſes, ſome of a very great height, were irregularly piled up upon it, as far as the eye could reach. Our latitude was at this time 71° 10′ ſouth, conſequently leſs than 19 deg. from the pole; but as it was impoſſible to proceed farther, we put the ſhip about, well ſatisfied with our perilous expedition, and almoſt perſuaded that no navigator will care to come after, and much leſs attempt to paſs beyond us.

* In the frozen zone, where the ſun remains ſix months above and ſix months below the horizon, dividing the year into one long day and night.

Our

Our longitude at this time was nearly 106° W. The thermometer here was at 32°, and a great many pinguins were heard croaking round us, but could not be ſeen on account of the foggy weather which immediately ſucceeded. 1774. JANUARY.

As often as we had hitherto penetrated to the ſouthward, we had met with no land, but been ſtopped ſooner or later by a ſolid ice-field, which extended before us as far as we could ſee. At the ſame time we had always found the winds moderate and frequently eaſterly in theſe high latitudes, in the ſame manner as they are ſaid to be in the northern frozen zone. From theſe circumſtances my father has been led to ſuppoſe, that all the ſouth pole, to the diſtance of 20 degrees, more or leſs, is covered with ſolid ice, of which only the extremities are annually broken by ſtorms, conſumed by the action of the ſun, and regenerated in winter.

——— ſtat glacies iners
Menſes per omnes.——— HORAT.

This opinion is the leſs exceptionable, ſince there ſeems to be no abſolute neceſſity for the exiſtence of land towards the formation of ice *, and becauſe we have little reaſon to ſuppoſe that there actually is any land of conſiderable extent in the frigid zone.

We ran to the northward with moderate winds till the 5th of February, when we got a fine freſh breeze after a FEBRUARY. Saturday 5.

* See vol. I. page 95.

1774. FEBRUARY. ſhort calm. The day after it ſhifted to S. E. and freſhened ſo as to blow very hard at night, and ſplit ſeveral ſails. As it was favourable for the purpoſe of advancing to the northward, the only circumſtance that afforded us comfort, we were far from being concerned at its violence, and in Tueſday 8. the next twenty-four hours made upwards of three degrees of latitude. The ſame gale aſſiſted us till the 12th, when we obſerved the latitude to be 50° 15′ ſouth, our thermometer being once more returned to the milder temperature of 48 degrees. We were now told that we ſhould ſpend the winter ſeaſon, which was coming on apace, among the tropical iſlands of the Pacific Ocean, in the ſame manner as we had paſſed that immediately preceding. The proſpect of making new diſcoveries, and of enjoying the excellent refreſhments which thoſe iſlands afford, entirely revived our hopes, and made us look on our continuance on the weſtern ſide of Cape Horne with ſome degree of ſatisfaction.

A great number of our people were however afflicted with very ſevere rheumatic pains, which deprived them of the uſe of their limbs; but their ſpirits were ſo low, that they had no fever. Though the uſe of that excellent prophylactic the ſour krout, prevented the appearance of the ſcurvy during all the cold weather, yet being made of cabbage, it is not ſo nutritive that we could live upon it without the aſſiſtance of biſcuit and ſalt-beef. But the former

former of theſe being rotten, and the other almoſt conſumed by the ſalt, it is obvious that no wholeſome juices could be ſecreted from thence, which might have kept the body ſtrong and vigorous. Under theſe difficulties all our patients recovered very ſlowly, having nothing to reſtore their ſtrength; and my father, who had been in exquiſite torments during the greateſt part of our ſouthern cruize, was afflicted with tooth-aches, ſwelled cheeks, ſore-throat, and univerſal pain till the middle of February, when he ventured on deck perfectly emaciated. The warm weather which was beneficial to him, proved fatal to captain Cook's conſtitution. The diſappearance of his bilious complaint during our laſt puſh to the ſouth, had not been ſo ſincere, as to make him recover his appetite. The return to the north therefore brought on a dangerous obſtruction, which the captain very unfortunately ſlighted, and concealed from every perſon in the ſhip, at the ſame time endeavouring to get the better of it by taking hardly any ſuſtenance. This proceeding, inſtead of removing, encreaſed the evil, his ſtomach being already weak enough before. He was afflicted with violent pains, which in the ſpace of a few days confined him to his bed, and forced him to have recourſe to medicines. He took a purge, but inſtead of producing the deſired effect, it cauſed a violent vomiting, which was aſſiſted immediately by proper emetics. All attempts however to procure a paſſage through his bowels were ineffectual;

1774. FEBRUARY.

1774. FEBRUARY. fectual; his food and medicines were thrown up, and in a few days a moſt dreadful hiccough appeared, which laſted for upwards of twenty-four hours, with ſuch aſtoniſhing violence that his life was entirely deſpaired of. Opiates and glyſters had no effect, till repeated hot baths, and plaſters of theriaca applied on his ſtomach, had relaxed his body and inteſtines. This however, was not effected till he had lain above a week in the moſt imminent danger. Our ſervant fell ill about the ſame time with the captain, of the ſame diſorder, and narrowly eſcaped, but continued weak and unſerviceable the greateſt part of our cruize between the tropics.

During this time we advanced to the northward very
Tueſday 22. faſt, ſo that on the 22d we reached 36° 10 S. latitude, where the albatroſſes left us. Our longitude being about 94½ degrees weſt from Greenwich, we ſteered to the ſouth-weſtward, in queſt of a ſuppoſed diſcovery of Juan Fernandez, which, according to Juan Luis Arias, a Spaniſh author, is ſaid to lie in 40° ſouth latitude, and by Mr. Dalrymple's chart in 90° weſt from London*. We ſtood
Friday 25. on to the weſtward till the 25th at noon, where being in 37° 50′ S. and about 101° W. and ſeeing no ſigns of land, we altered our courſe ſomething to the northward. The dangerous ſituation of captain Cook, was perhaps the reaſon, why our track was not continued farther to the

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Hiſtorical Collection, vol. I. p. 53, and the Chart.

ſouth,

ſouth, ſo as to put this matter entirely out of doubt for the future. It was indeed of the utmoſt importance at preſent, to haſten to a place of refreſhment, that being the only chance to preſerve his life. 1774. FEBRUARY.

On the 26th, captain Cook felt ſome relief from the medicines which had been adminiſtered to him, and during the three following days, recovered ſo far as to be able to ſit up ſometimes, and take a little ſoup. Next to Providence it was chiefly owing to the ſkill of our ſurgeon, Mr. Patton, that he recovered to profecute the remaining part of our voyage, with the ſame ſpirit with which it had hitherto been carried on. The care and aſſiduity with which this worthy man, watched him during his whole illneſs, cannot be ſufficiently extolled, as all our hopes of future diſcoveries, as well as union in the ſhip, depended ſolely on the preſervation of the captain. The ſurgeon's extreme attention however, had nearly coſt him his own life. Having taken, no reſt for many nights together, and ſeldom venturing to ſleep an hour by day, he was ſo much exhauſted, that we trembled for his life, upon which that of almoſt every man in the ſhip in great meaſure depended. He was taken ill with a bilious diſorder, which was dangerous on account of the extreme weakneſs of his ſtomach, and it is more than probable, that if we had not ſpeedily fallen in with land, from whence we collected ſome ſlight refreſhments, he muſt have fallen a ſacrifice to that rigorous perſeverance and extreme

1774. FEBRUARY. extreme punctuality with which he diſcharged the ſeveral duties of his profeſſion.

We had eaſterly winds ever ſince the 22d of February, which was probably owing to the ſituation of the ſun, ſtill continuing in the ſouthern hemiſphere. The weather was warm and comfortable again, the thermometer being at 70 degrees; and ſome grey terns were ſeen from time to time, which according to our friend Mahine's account, never went to a great diſtance from land. On the firſt of March, ſome bonitos appeared ſwiftly ſwimming paſt the ſhip, and the next day, being in 30½ degrees of latitude, we ſaw tropic birds again.

MARCH. Tueſday 1.

The ſcurvy now appeared with very ſtrong ſymptoms in the ſhip, and I was particularly afflicted with it. Excruciating pains, livid blotches, rotten gums, and ſwelled legs, brought me extremely low in a few days, almoſt before I was aware of the diſorder; and my ſtomach being very weak, through abſtinence from an unwholeſome and loathed diet, I could not take the wort in ſufficient quantity to remove my complaint. The ſame caſe exiſted with regard to a number of other people, who crawled about the decks with the greateſt difficulty.

We had almoſt calm weather from the 3d to the 6th, the ſky was clear, and the warmth and ſerenity of the weather remarkably pleaſing; but we were impatient to proceed to a place

a place of refreſhment, and this delay ill ſuited with our wiſhes. 1774. MARCH.

On the 5th, at night, we ſaw ſome towering clouds and a haze on the horizon to the ſouthward, from whence we hoped for a fair wind. Already, during night, we had ſome ſmart ſhowers, and at eight o'clok the next morning we ſaw the ſurface of the ſea curled to the ſouth-eaſtward, upon which we trimmed our ſails, and advanced again with a fair wind. The next morning four large albecores were caught, the leaſt of which weighed twenty-three pounds. They afforded us a moſt delicious repaſt, it being now an hundred days ſince we had taſted any freſh fiſh. Shearwaters, terns, noddies, gannets, and men of war birds appeared numerous about us, hunting the ſhoals of flying-fiſh which our ſhip, the bonitos, albecores, and dolphins had frightened out of the water. Monday 7.

We reached the 27th degree of S. latitude on the 8th at noon, and then ſhaped our courſe due weſt in ſearch of EASTER ISLAND, diſcovered by Jacob Roggewein in 1722, and ſince viſited by the Spaniards in 1770 *, who gave it the name of St. Charles's Iſland. On the 10th, in the morning, the birds of the grey tern-kind were innumerable about us, whilſt we advanced at the rate of ſeven miles an hour. We lay to during night, being apprehen- Tueſday 8. Thurſday 10.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Hiſtorical Collection of Voyages, vol. II. pag. 85; alſo his letter to Dr. Hawkeſworth, 1773.

five

1774. MARCH. ſive of falling in with the land, which we actually diſcovered at five o'clock the next morning. The joy which this fortunate event ſpread on every countenance is ſcarcely to be deſcribed. We had been an hundred and three days out of ſight of land; and the rigorous weather to the ſouth, the fatigues of continual attendance during ſtorms, or amidſt dangerous maſſes of ice, the ſudden changes of climate, and the long continuance of a noxious diet, all together had emaciated and worn out our crew. The expectation of a ſpeedy end to their ſufferings, and the hope of finding the land ſtocked with abundance of fowls and planted with fruits, according to the accounts of the Dutch navigator, now filled them with uncommon alacrity and cheerfulneſs.

E l'uno a'l altro il moſtra, e in tanto oblia
La noia, e 'l mal de la paſſata via. TASSO.

We advanced but ſlowly towards the land by day, to the great diſappointment of all on board, who became more eager in proportion as new difficulties aroſe to prolong their diſtreſſes. The land appeared of a moderate height, and divided into ſeveral hills, which gently ſloped from their ſummits; its extent did not ſeem to be conſiderable, and we were at too great a diſtance to be able to form any
Saturday 12. conjecture as to its productions. The next morning we were becalmed within five leagues of the iſland, which had then a black and ſomewhat diſagreeable appearance. We amuſed

amuſed ourſelves with catching ſharks, ſeveral of which ſwam about the ſhip, and eagerly ſwallowed the hook, which was baited with ſalt pork or beef. In the afternoon a breeze ſprung up, with which we ſtood towards the ſhore, in great hopes of reaching an anchoring-place before night. The land did not look very promiſing as we advanced, there being little verdure, and ſcarcely any buſhes upon it; but to us who had lingered ſo long under all the diſtreſſes of a tedious cruize at ſea, the moſt barren rock would have been a welcome ſight. In our way we perceived a great number of black pillars ſtanding upright, near two hummocks, and in different groups. They ſeemed to be the ſame which Roggewein's people took for idols*; but we gueſſed already, at that time, that they were ſuch monuments, in memory of the dead, as the Taheitians and other people in the South Seas erect near their burying-places, and call E-TEE. 1774. MARCH.

The wind, which was contrary and very faint, the approach of night, and the want of an anchoring-place on the eaſt ſide of the iſland, diſappointed us once more, and forced us to paſs another night under ſail, during which we ſaw ſeveral fires in the neighbourhood of the pillars above-mentioned. The Dutch, who likewiſe obſerved them, called them ſacrifices to the idols; but it ſeems to be more probable that they were only lighted to dreſs the food of the natives.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Hiſtorical Collection of Voyages, &c. vol. II. p. 91.

1774. MARCH. We paſſed the night in making ſeveral trips, in order to keep to windward of the iſland and as near it as poſſible, reſolving to purſue our ſearch of anchorage the next day. In the mean time we reflected on the excellent means of aſcertaining the longitude, with which our ſhip had been furniſhed, and which had carried us exactly to this iſland, though ſeveral former navigators, ſuch as Byron, Carteret, and Bougainville had miſſed it, after taking their departure from iſlands at ſo ſhort a diſtance from it as thoſe of Juan Fernandez *. Captain Carteret it ſeems was only miſled by an erroneous latitude in the geographical tables which he conſulted; but this could not be the caſe with the reſt. We had the greateſt reaſon to admire the ingenious conſtruction of the two watches which we had on board, one executed by Mr. Kendal, exactly after the model of that made by Mr. Harriſon, and the other by Mr. Arnold on his own plan, both which went with great regularity. The laſt was unfortunately ſtopped immediately after our departure from New Zeeland in June 1773, but the other went till our return to England, and gave general ſatisfaction. It appears, however, that in a long run the obſervations of diſtances of the moon from the ſun or ſtars, are more to be depended upon, if they be made with good inſtruments, than the watches or time-keepers, which frequently change their rates of going. The method of deducing the longitude

* Juan Fernandez, properly ſo called or la de Tierra, and la Mas a fuera.

from

from the diſtances of the ſun and moon, or moon and ſtars, one of the moſt valuable acquiſitions to the art of navigation, muſt immortalize its firſt inventors. TOBIAS MAYER, a German, and profeſſor at Gottingen, was the firſt who undertook the laborious taſk of calculating tables for this purpoſe, for which his heirs received a parliamentary reward. Since his death the method was ſo much facilitated by additional calculations, that the longitude will perhaps never be determined with greater preciſion at ſea by any other means. 1774. MARCH.

The latitude of Eaſter Iſland correſponds within a minute or two with that which is marked in admiral Roggewein's own MS. journal *, and his longitude is only one degree erroneous, our obſervations having aſcertained it in 109° 46′ weſt from Greenwich. The Spaniſh accounts of the latitude are likewiſe exact, but they err in longitude about thirty leagues.

* See the Lives of the Governors of Batavia.—It is there expreſſed 27° 04′ S. latitude, and 265° 42′ E. from Tenerif, or 110° 45′ W. from London.

1774. MARCH.

CHAP. IV.

An Account of Eaſter Iſland, and our Stay there.

Sunday 13. ON the 13th, early in the morning, we ran cloſe to the ſouth point of the iſland, where the ſhore roſe perpendicularly, and conſiſted of broken rocks, whoſe cavernous appearance, and black or ferruginous colour, ſeemed to have been produced by ſubterraneous fire. Two detached rocks lay about a quarter of a miles off this point; one of them was ſingular on account of its ſhape, reſembling a huge column or obeliſk, and both were the habitations of numerous ſea-fowls, which ſtunned our ears with their diſcordant ſcreams. Soon after we opened another point about ten miles diſtant from this, and as we advanced we perceived the ground gently ſloping to the ſea. On the ſlope we diſcovered ſeveral plantations by the help of our glaſſes; but the ſurface of the iſle in general appeared to be extremely dreary and parched, and theſe plantations were ſo thinly ſcattered upon it, that they did not flatter our hopes of meeting with conſiderable refreſhments. However, our eyes, long unuſed to the enchanting proſpect of verdure, were conſtantly directed towards the ſhore, where we diſtinguiſhed a number of people nearly naked, haſtily running down from the hills towards the ſea-ſide.

We

We could not perceive that they had any arms, which we immediately interpreted into a ſign of a peaceable diſpoſition. In a few minutes we ſaw them launch a canoe, in which two men came off towards us. They were along ſide in a ſhort time, having paddled very briſkly, and immediately called out for a rope, naming it by the ſame word as the Taheitians. We had no ſooner thrown them the rope, than they tied a great cluſter of ripe bananas to it, making ſigns for us to haul it up. The ſudden emotions of joy in every countenance, at the ſight of this fruit, are ſcarcely to be deſcribed; they can only be felt in their full extent by people in the ſame wretched ſituation with ourſelves at that time. At leaſt fifty perſons endeavoured to begin a converſation with the people in the canoe, who being addreſſed by ſo many at once, could not anſwer one of them. Captain Cook ſent for ſome ribbands, to which he tied ſome medals and beads, and lowered them down in return for their preſent. They ſeemed to admire them much, but haſtened aſhore with them immediately. In dropping aſtern, they faſtened a ſmall piece of cloth to a fiſhing-line which we towed after us; it was immediately hauled up, and appeared to be made of the ſame bark as the Taheitian cloth, and coloured yellow. From a few words which they pronounced, we concluded their language to be a dialect of the Taheitian, which we had now found in both extremities of the South Sea. Their whole appear- 1774. MARCH.

ance

1774. MARCH. ance confirmed us in this opinion, and proved them iſſued from the ſame ſtock. They were of a middle ſtature, but rather thin; their features reſembled thoſe of the Taheitians, but were leſs agreeable: one of them had a beard, which was cut to the length of about half an inch; the other was a youth of about ſeventeen. They had punctures of the ſame nature with thoſe uſed by the natives of the Society and Friendly Iſlands and of New Zeeland; but their whole body, which was perfectly naked, was marked with them. The greateſt ſingularity which we obſerved about them was the ſize of their ears, of which the lap or extremity was ſtretched out ſo as almoſt to reſt on the ſhoulder, and pierced by a very large hole, through which four or five fingers might be thruſt with eaſe. This circumſtance entirely agreed with the deſcription which the ſerjeant-major of Roggewein's ſhip gives of theſe people*. Their canoe was another curioſity, being patched up of many pieces, each of which was not more than four or five inches wide, and two or three feet long. Its length might be about ten or twelve feet, its head and ſtern were raiſed conſiderably, but its middle was very low. It had an outrigger or balancer made of three ſlender poles, and each of the men had a paddle, of which the blade was likewiſe compoſed of ſeveral pieces. This deſcription alſo exactly correſponds with the

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Hiſtorical Collection, vol. II. p. 90, 94, or Hiſtoire de l'Expedition de Trois Vaiſſeaux, tome I. p. 133, a la Haye 1739.

Dutch

Dutch account of Roggewein's voyage, printed at Dort in 1728 *; and ſufficiently proved that the iſland is very deſtitute of wood, though the contrary is aſcertained in the ſerjeant-major's relation of that voyage †. 1774. MARCH.

Though we ſtruck ſoundings oppoſite the place from whence this canoe put off, yet in hopes of finding a better place of anchorage, we ran along the coaſt of the iſland, till we came in ſight of its northern extremity, which we had already ſeen the day before from the other ſide. But being diſappointed in our expectation, we put about with a view to return to the place which we had left. A great number of black pillars ſtood along the ſhore, many of which were elevated on platforms conſiſting of ſeveral ranges of ſtone. We could now diſtinguiſh ſomething reſembling a human head and ſhoulders towards their upper end; but the lower part appeared to be a rude ſtone, without being carved into a reſemblance of the human ſhape. Sometimes we perceived two, ſometimes four, and even five together in a row; but ſome were likewiſe placed by themſelves. We ſaw but few plantations towards the north end, the land being much more bluff or ſteep there, than about the middle of the iſland, and we could eaſily perceive that there was not a tree upon the whole iſland, which exceeded the height of ten feet.

* See Mr. Dalrymple's Collection, vol. II. pag. 111.

† Ibid. vol. II. p. 95; or Hiſtoire, &c. vol. I. p. 138.

In

1774. MARCH. In the afternoon we hoiſted out a boat, and the maſter went towards the ſhore to take ſoundings in the road, from whence the canoe had come off to us. As ſoon as the natives perceived our boat on the water, they aſſembled along ſhore, near the place to which our people ſeemed to direct their courſe. Among a croud of naked men, we ſaw ſome who ſeemed to be dreſſed in a bright cloth of a yellow, or rather orange colour, from whence we ſuſpected that they were their principal people. We now likewiſe began to diſcern their houſes, which ſeemed to be extremely low and long, higheſt in the middle, and ſloping down towards both extremities. They much reſembled a canoe turned with the keel or bottom upwards. In the middle there ſeemed to be a ſmall entrance or door, which was ſo low, that a man of a common ſize muſt ſtoop to get in. Towards evening we let go our anchor in about forty fathom, gravelly bottom off the S. W. part of the iſland. The maſter returned preſently after, and brought one of the natives in the boat with him. This bold fellow had jumped into the boat without any ceremony or invitation, while it was cloſe to the ſhore, and expreſsly deſired to be brought on board. He was of the middle ſize, about five feet eight inches high, and remarkably hairy on the breaſt and all over the body. His colour was a cheſnut brown, his beard ſtrong, but clipped ſhort, and of a black colour, as was alſo the hair of his head, which was likewiſe cut ſhort.

ſhort. His ears were very long, almoſt hanging on his ſhoulders, and his legs punctured in compartments after a taſte which we had obſerved no where elſe. He had only a belt round his middle, from whence a kind of net-work deſcended before, too thin to conceal any thing from the ſight. A ſtring was tied about his neck, and a flat bone, ſomething ſhaped like a tongue, and about five inches long, was faſtened to it, and hung down on the breaſt. This, he told us, was a porpoiſe's bone (eevee toharra), expreſſing it exactly by the ſame words which a Taheitian would have made uſe of. To explain himſelf better, he alſo called it eevee-eeka, which we well underſtood to ſignify the bone of a fiſh *. He was no ſooner ſeated in the boat, than he complained of being cold by ſhivering, and making various geſtures of a very intelligible nature. Mr. Gilbert, the maſter, therefore gave him a jacket, and put a hat on his head, and in that dreſs he appeared upon deck. The captain and paſſengers preſented him with nails, medals, and ſtrings of beads, the laſt of which, he deſired to have tied round his head. At the beginning he ſhewed ſome marks of fear or diffidence, aſking whether we ſhould kill him as an enemy *(matte-toa?)* but upon being aſſured of good treatment and friendſhip on our part, he ſeemed perfectly ſecure and unconcerned, and talked of nothing but dancing

1774. MARCH.

* Eeya at Taheitee, and eeka at New Zeeland and the Friendly Iſles mean a fiſh.

1774. MARCH. (*heeva*). It was with ſome difficulty that we underſtood him at firſt; but having enquired for the names by which he diſtinguiſhed the parts of the body, we ſoon found them to be nearly the ſame with thoſe which are uſed in the Society Iſles. If we mentioned a word which he did not comprehend, he repeated it ſeveral times with a look which ſtrongly expreſſed his ignorance of it. As night approached, he ſaid he wanted to go to ſleep, and complained of cold. My father gave him a large Taheitee cloth of the thickeſt ſort, in which he wrapped himſelf, ſaying he found it comfortably warm. He was afterwards conducted into the maſter's cabin, where he lay down on a table, and ſlept very quietly the whole night. Mahine, who had already expreſſed his impatience to go on ſhore, was much pleaſed to find that the inhabitants ſpoke a language ſo ſimilar to his own, and attempted to converſe with our new viſitor ſeveral times, but was interrupted by the queſtions which many other perſons in the ſhip put to him.

Monday 14. We dragged our anchor during night, and drove off the bank, ſo that we were obliged to ſet ſail again, in order to recover our ſituation. Immediately after breakfaſt, captain Cook went aſhore with the native, whoſe name was Maroowahai, together with Mahine, my father, Dr. Sparrman, and myſelf, though my feet and legs were ſtill ſwelled exceſſively, and I was hardly able to walk. We found a ſnug cove for boats, among a number of rocks which ſheltered

the

the landing-place from the mountainous ſwell that tumbled in upon the ſhore. About a hundred, or a hundred and fifty natives were aſſembled on the ſpot where we landed, almoſt all of them naked, ſome having only a belt round the middle, from whence a ſmall bit of cloth, ſix or eight inches long, or a little net, hung down before. A very few of them had a cloak which reached to the knees, made of cloth, reſembling that of Taheitee in the texture, and ſtitched or quilted with thread to make it the more laſting. Moſt of theſe cloaks were painted yellow with the turmeric-root. The people did not make the leaſt unfriendly motion at our landing, but expreſſed a prodigious dread of our fire-arms, of which they ſeemed to know the deadly effects. We ſaw but few arms among them; ſome however had lances or ſpears, made of thin ill-ſhapen ſticks, and pointed with a ſharp triangular piece of a black glaſſy lava (*pumex vitreus*, Linn.) commonly called Iceland agate. One of them had a fighting club, made of a thick piece of wood about three feet long, carved at one extremity; and a few others had ſhort wooden clubs, exactly reſembling ſome of the New Zeeland patoo-patoos, which are made of bone. We obſerved ſome who had European hats and caps, chequered cotton handkerchiefs, and ragged jackets of blue woollen-cloth, which were ſo many indubitable teſtimonies of the viſit which the Spaniards had made to this iſland in 1770. The general appearance of the natives ſeemed to argue a 1774. MARCH.

1774. MARCH. great ſterility of the country. They were inferior in ſtature to the natives of the Society and Friendly Iſles, and to thoſe of New Zeeland, there being not a ſingle perſon amongſt them, who might be reckoned tall. Their body was likewiſe lean, and their face thinner than that of any people we had hitherto ſeen in the South Sea. Their want of cloathing, and a great eagerneſs to obtain our goods without offering any thing in return, ſeemed altogether to be ſufficient marks of poverty. They were all prodigiouſly punctured on every part of the body, the face in particular; and their women, who were very ſmall and ſlender limbed, had likewiſe punctures on the face, which reſembled the patches ſometimes worn by our ladies. The number of women in the croud did not exceed ten or twelve; they were ſeldom ſatisfied with their natural clear brown colour, but painted the whole face with a reddiſh brown ruddle, over which they laid on the bright orange of the turmeric-root; or ornamented themſelves with elegant ſtreaks of white ſhell-lime. The art of painting is therefore not confined to thoſe ladies who have the happineſs to imitate French faſhions. The women were all dreſſed in pieces of cloth, which appeared ſcanty when compared to the Taheitian dreſſes. Both ſexes had thin, but not ſavage features, though the little ſhelter which their barren country offers againſt the ſun-beams, had contracted their brows ſometimes, and drawn the muſcles of the face up towards the

eye.

eye. Their noſes were not very broad, but rather flat between the eyes; their lips ſtrong, though not ſo thick as thoſe of negroes; and their hair black and curling, but always cut ſhort, ſo as not to exceed three inches. Their eyes were dark brown, and rather ſmall, the white being leſs clear than in other nations of the South Seas. Their ears were remarkable for the great length of the lap, which frequently hung on the ſhoulder, and was pierced with ſo large a hole, that the extremity could be tucked up through it. In order to bring it to this ſize, they wore a leaf of a ſugar cane, which is very elaſtic, rolled up in it like a ſcroll; by which means it was always on the ſtretch. The violent action of the ſun upon their heads has forced them to contrive various coverings for that part. Many of the men wore a ring about two inches thick, ſtrongly and curiouſly plaited of graſs, and fitting cloſe round the head. This was covered with great quantities of the long black feathers which decorate the neck of the man of war bird. Others had huge buſhy caps of brown gulls feathers, which were almoſt as large as the full-bottomed wigs of European lawyers; and ſtill others wore a ſimple hoop of wood, round which a number of the long white feathers of a gannet hung nodding, and waved in the wind. The women wore a great wide cap, made of very neat mat-work; it was pointed forwards, formed a ridge along the top, and two large lobes behind on each ſide, which we found extremely cooling;

1774. MARCH.

1774. MARCH. cooling for the head. Mr. Hodges drew the figure of a woman with this cap on, and of a man with one of the other head dreſſes; both are extremely characteriſtic of the nation, and have been engraved for captain Cook's account of this voyage. The only ornaments which we ſaw among them, were the flat pieces of bone in the ſhape of a tongue, or like a laurel leaf, which both ſexes wore hanging on their breaſt, together with ſome necklaces and ear-jewels made of ſhells.

After ſtaying among the natives for ſome time on the beach, we began to walk into the country. The whole ground was covered with rocks and ſtones of all ſizes, which ſeemed to have been expoſed to a great fire, where they had acquired a black colour and porous appearance. Two or three ſhrivelled ſpecies of graſſes grew up among theſe ſtones, and in a ſlight degree ſoftened the deſolate appearance of the country. About fifteen yards from the landing-place we ſaw a perpendicular wall of ſquare hewn ſtones, about a foot and a half or two feet long, and one foot broad. Its greateſt height was about ſeven or eight feet, but it gradually ſloped on both ſides, and its length might be about twenty yards. A remarkable circumſtance was the junction of theſe ſtones, which were laid after the moſt excellent rules of art, fitting in ſuch a manner as to make a durable piece of architecture. The ſtone itſelf of which they are cut is not of great hardneſs, being a black-

iſh

iſh brown cavernous and brittle ſtony lava. The ground roſe from the water's ſide upwards; ſo that another wall, parallel to the firſt, about twelve yards from it and facing the country, was not above two or three feet high. The whole area between the two walls was filled up with ſoil and covered with graſs. About fifty yards farther to the ſouth there was another elevated area, of which the ſurface was paved with ſquare ſtones exactly ſimilar to thoſe which formed the walls. In the midſt of this area, there was a pillar conſiſting of a ſingle ſtone, which repreſented a human figure to the waiſt, about twenty feet high, and upwards of five feet wide. The workmanſhip of this figure was rude, and ſpoke the arts in their infancy. The eyes, noſe, and mouth were ſcarcely marked on a lumpiſh ill-ſhaped head; and the ears, which were exceſſively long, quite in the faſhion of the country, were better executed than any other part, though a European artiſt would have been aſhamed of them. The neck was clumſy and ſhort, and the ſhoulders and arms very ſlightly repreſented. On the top of the head a huge round cylinder of ſtone was placed upright, being above five feet in diameter and in height. This cap, which reſembled the head-dreſs of ſome Egyptian divinity, conſiſted of a different ſtone from the reſt of the pillar, being of a more reddiſh colour; and had a hole on each ſide, as if it had been made round by turning. The cap together with the head, made one half of the whole

1774. MARCH.

pillar

1774. MARCH. pillar which appeared above ground. We did not obſerve that the natives paid any worſhip to theſe pillars, yet they ſeemed to hold them in ſome kind of veneration, as they ſometimes expreſſed a diſlike when we walked over the paved area or pedeſtals, or examined the ſtones of which it conſiſted.

A few of the natives accompanied us farther on into the country, where we had ſeen ſome buſhes at a diſtance, which we hoped would afford us ſomething new. Our road was intolerably rugged, over heaps of volcanic ſtones, which rolled away under our feet, and againſt which we continually hurt ourſelves. The natives, who were accuſtomed to this deſolate ground, ſkipped nimbly from ſtone to ſtone without the leaſt difficulty. In our way we ſaw ſeveral black rats running about, which it ſeems are common to every iſland in the South Sea. Being arrived at the ſhrubbery which we had in view, we found it was nothing but a ſmall plantation of the paper mulberry, of which here, as well as at Taheitee, they make their cloth. Its ſtems were from two to four feet high, and planted in rows, among very large rocks, where the rains had waſhed a little ſoil together. In the neighbourhood of theſe we ſaw ſome buſhes of the *hibiſcus populneus*, Linn. which is common alſo in the Society Iſles, where it is one of the numerous plants made uſe of to dye yellow; and likewiſe a *mimoſa*, which is the only ſhrub that affords the natives ſticks for

their

their clubs and pattoo-pattoos, and wood ſufficient to patch up a canoe. 1774. MARCH.

We found the face of the country more barren and ruinous the farther we advanced. The ſmall number of inhabitants, who met us at the landing-place, ſeemed to have been the bulk of the nation, ſince we met no other people on our walk; and yet for theſe few we did not ſee above ten or twelve huts, though the view commanded a great part of the iſland. One of the ſightlieſt of theſe was ſituated on a little hillock, about half a mile from the ſea, which we aſcended. Its conſtruction was ſuch as evinced the poverty and wretched condition of its owners. The foundation conſiſted of ſtones about a foot long, laid level with the ſurface in two curve lines, converging at the extremities. Theſe lines were about ſix feet aſunder in the middle, but not above one foot at the ends. In every ſtone of this foundation we obſerved one or two holes, in each of which a ſtake was inſerted. The middlemoſt ſtakes were ſix feet high, but the others gradually diminiſhed to two feet. On the top the ſtakes all converged, and were tied by ſtrings to tranſverſe ſticks, by which they were kept together. A kind of thatch, made of ſmall ſticks, and covered with a neat mat-work of ſugar-cane leaves, leaned on each row of ſtakes, forming a very ſharp ridge or angle at the top, and reſting firmly on the ground at the bottom. A hole was left on one ſide, about eighteen inches or two

1774. MARCH. feet high, over which the people had built a round projecting funnel to keep off the wet. We crept on all fours into this opening, and found the inſide of the hut perfectly naked and empty, there being not ſo much as a wiſp of ſtraw to lie down upon. We could not ſtand upright in any part except juſt in the middle, and the whole place appeared dark and diſmal. The natives told us they paſſed the night in theſe huts, and we eaſily conceived their ſituation to be uncomfortable, eſpecially as we ſaw ſo very few of them, that they muſt be crammed full, unleſs the generality of the people lie in the open air, and leave theſe wretched dwellings to their chiefs, or make uſe of them only in bad weather.

Beſides theſe huts, we obſerved ſome heaps of ſtones piled up into little hillocks, which had one ſteep perpendicular ſide, where a hole went under ground. The ſpace within could be but very ſmall, and yet it is probable that theſe cavities likewiſe ſerved to give ſhelter to the people during night. They may, however, communicate with natural caverns, which are very common in the lava currents of volcanic countries. Such caverns are very frequent in Iceland, famous for having been the dwelling-places of the ancient inhabitants. Mr. Ferber, the firſt mineralogical hiſtorian of Veſuvius, has noticed ſuch a ſubterraneous hole in one of the modern lavas of that mountain. We ſhould have

have been glad to have aſcertained this circumſtance, but the natives always denied us admittance into theſe places. 1774. MARCH.

A plantation of ſugar-canes and one of bananas adjoined to the houſe we had viſited, and both were in excellent order, conſidering the ſtony quality of the ground. The bananas were all growing in holes one foot deep, which we ſuppoſed to be contrived for collecting the rain, and preſerving it for a longer time about the plant. The ſugar-canes were about nine or ten feet high, even in this parched country, and contained a very ſweet juice, which the inhabitants preſented to us very frequently, and particularly whenever we aſked for ſomething to drink. We concluded from thence that they had no water on the iſland; but coming back to the landing-place we met captain Cook, whom the natives had conducted to a well very cloſe to the ſea, which was cut deep into the rock, but full of impurities. When our people had cleared it, they found the water in it rather brackiſh, but the natives drank of it with much ſeeming ſatisfaction.

Captain Cook had not been very fortunate in trading with the people. They ſeemed indeed to be ſo deſtitute as to have no proviſions to ſpare. A few matted baſkets full of ſweet potatoes, ſome ſugar-canes, bunches of bananas, and two or three ſmall fowls ready dreſſed, were the whole purchaſe which he had made for a few iron tools, and ſome Taheitee cloth. He had preſented the people with

1774. MARCH. beads, but they always threw them away with contempt, as far as ever they could. Whatever elſe they ſaw about us, they were deſirous of poſſeſſing, though they had nothing to give in return. Their number was now decreaſed nearly to one half, many of them having probably gone home to their dinners; however, the number of women was always remarkably ſmall in proportion to the men, there being not above twelve or fifteen at our firſt landing, and about ſix or ſeven when we embarked again. They were neither reſerved nor chaſte, and for the trifling conſideration of a ſmall piece of cloth, ſome of our ſailors obtained the gratification of their deſires. Their features were mild enough, and the large pointed cap gave them the air of profeſſed wantons.

We returned on board the ſhip before noon, and found it at anchor, though we had left it under ſail. The freſh fruits and roots which we brought on board, were immediately diſtributed as far as they would go, and proved a moſt ſeaſonable refreſhment to our ſick. We taſted the fowls, which ſeemed to have been dreſſed under-ground, by means of hot ſtones being wrapped up in green leaves, in the manner practiſed amongſt all the nations of the South Sea, whom we had hitherto viſited. The potatoes were of a gold-yellow colour, and as ſweet as carrots, therefore not equally palatable to us all; however they were extremely nouriſhing, and very antiſcorbutic. The juices of this,

this, and all the other vegetables on this iſland, ſeemed to have been concentrated by the dryneſs of the ſoil. Their bananas were reckoned very delicious in their kind, by thoſe who were fond of this fruit, and their ſugar-canes were ſweeter than any we had taſted at Taheitee. 1774. MARCH.

In the afternoon we returned on ſhore again, and an officer went with another boat to fill water at the well. We found but few natives near the landing-place, and among them was one, who appeared to have ſome little authority, and readily accompanied the captain wherever he went. He was not ſo timorous as the reſt of his countrymen, but walked boldly along with us, whilſt the others were alarmed at the leaſt motion which appeared unuſual to them. This diſpoſition, however, did not prevent them from picking our pockets, or ſtealing any thing which ſuited them. We had not been half an hour on ſhore, when one of them came behind Mahine, and very nimbly ſnatching a black cap from his head, ran off with the greateſt velocity over the heaps of rugged ſtones, where it was impoſſible to follow him. Mahine was ſo ſurpriſed, that it was ſome time before he could find words to complain to the captain; and when he did it, the thief was already at a great diſtance. About the ſame time, as Mr. Hodges was ſitting on a little eminence, and ſketching a view of the country, one of the natives ran off with his hat in the ſame manner. Mr. Wales was ſtanding by him

with

1774. MARCH. with a muſket in his hand, but very juſtly reflected, that ſo ſlight a crime did not deſerve the puniſhment of a leaden bullet.

In our walk along the ſea-ſhore, we diſcovered a few ſtalks of the ſame ſpecies of celery which is plentiful on the beaches of New Zeeland, and we alſo found two other little plants common to that country. Whether theſe plants originally exiſted on the iſland, or ſprung up from ſeeds, which the current of the ſea, or birds by their plumage might tranſport from the oppoſite ſide of the ocean, I cannot venture to determine. We likewiſe met with a plantation of yams *(dioſcorea alata*, Linn.*)* which in ſo poor a *flora* as that of Eaſter Iſland was a great addition. The great correſpondence in the features, cuſtoms, and languages of theſe people, to thoſe of other natives of the South Sea iſlands, gave us ſome room to hope for ſuch domeſtic animals among them, as we had obſerved at Taheitee or New Zeeland. But notwithſtanding the moſt diligent ſearch, we never met with any other than common fowls, which were of a very ſmall breed, and had a dull plumage. It is true we obſerved alſo two or three noddies, which were ſo tame as to ſettle on the ſhoulders of the natives, but from theſe individuals we could not conclude, that they kept a regular breed of them.

About ſun-ſet we left the watering-place, and walked to the cove where our boat lay at a grapnel. In our way we paſſed

paſſed over the area on which the ſingle pillar before-mentioned was placed. A few natives who ſtill accompanied us, made ſigns that we ſhould deſcend, and walk in the graſs at the foot of the pedeſtal; but ſeeing that we did not care to underſtand their geſtures, they made no other attempt to oppoſe our progreſs. We put ſome queſtions to the moſt intelligent perſons among them, concerning the nature of theſe ſtones, and from what we could underſtand, we concluded that they were monuments erected to the memory of ſome of their areekees, or kings. This led us to believe that the pedeſtal was perhaps to be conſidered as a burying-place, and on looking carefully round it, we found a number of human bones, which confirmed our conjecture. The length of theſe bones was exactly ſuch as might be expected in perſons of a middle ſtature, and a thigh-bone which we meaſured, exactly correſponded with that of a perſon about five feet nine inches high. To the weſtward of the cove, there was a range of three pillars, ſtanding on a very large elevated area or pedeſtal. This range the natives diſtinguiſhed by the name of *hanga-roa*, and the ſingle pillar they called *obeena*. About ten or twelve people were ſeated at a little diſtance from the laſt, round a ſmall fire, over which they had roaſted a few potatoes. Theſe ſerved for their ſupper, and they offered us ſome of them as we paſſed by. We were much ſurpriſed with this inſtance of hoſpitality in ſo poor a country, eſpecially when

1774. MARCH.

1774. MARCH. we compared it to the cuſtoms of civilized nations, who have almoſt entirely laid aſide all tender feelings for the wants of their fellow-creatures. At the ſame time we were very glad to be convinced, that the conjectures of the Dutch concerning the fires which they ſaw on this iſland, were ill-founded, as we did not ſee the leaſt reaſon to ſuppoſe, that they were lighted for religious purpoſes. We now embarked with a ſmall quantity of potatoes, and with about ſix or ſeven common plants which we had gathered, and returned on board. Thoſe only who were ill of the ſcurvy, reaped ſome benefit from their viſit to the ſhore. I who went out in the morning with my legs exceſſively ſwelled, and ſo tender that I could hardly ſtand upon them, returned on board much better; the ſwelling was ſomething reduced, and my pains at leaſt were gone. I could not attribute this ſudden change to any thing elſe, than the exerciſe I had taken on ſhore, and perhaps to thoſe ſalutary antiſcorbutic effluvia of the land, which it is ſaid, are alone ſufficient to recover thoſe, who have contracted the ſcurvy on a long cruize at ſea.

Tueſday 15. Early the next morning, captain Cook appointed a party of marines and ſailors, under the command of lieutenants Pickerſgill and Edgecumbe, to reconnoitre the interior parts of the country, in order to be convinced if poſſible, whether any other part was better cultivated, or more cloſely inhabited than that which we had hitherto ſeen. Mr. Wales,

Mr.

Mr. Hodges, Dr. Sparrman, and my father aſſociated with them, ſo that the whole party conſiſted of twenty-ſeven men. 1774. MARCH.

After breakfaſt I accompanied captain Cook and ſeveral officers aſhore, where we found about two hundred inhabitants aſſembled, amongſt whom were fourteen or fifteen women, and very few children. It was impoſſible for us to gueſs at the cauſe of this diſproportion in the number of the different ſexes; but as all the women we ſaw were very liberal of their favours, I conjectured at that time, that the married and the modeſt, who might be ſuppoſed to form the greater part, did not care to come near us, or were forced by the men to ſtay at their dwellings in the remote parts of the iſland. Thoſe few who appeared were the moſt laſcivious of their ſex, that perhaps have ever been noticed in any country, and ſhame ſeemed to be entirely unknown to them; our ſailors likewiſe diſclaimed all acquaintance with modeſty, for nothing but the ſhadow of the gigantic monument ſcreened them from the ſun.

Mr. Patton, lieutenant Clerke, and myſelf left the ſea-ſide, where the concourſe was greateſt, and took a walk into the country. The heat of the ſun was very violent, the beams being reverberated from the broken ground, and there was not a ſingle tree to give us ſhelter. My companions had taken their fowling-pieces in hopes of meeting with ſome birds; but they were greatly diſappointed, there

1774. MARCH. being probably no other land-birds on the iſland than the common fowl, which were tame and extremely ſcarce. We followed one of the paths which the natives had made, till we came to a cultivated ſpot, conſiſting of ſeveral fields planted with ſweet potatoes, yams, and eddoes, together with a ſpecies of night-ſhade, which is made uſe of at Taheitee and the neighbouring iſlands as a vulnerary remedy, *(ſolanum nigrum?)* and may, for ought I know, be cultivated here for the ſame purpoſe. The graſs, which commonly ſprings up among the ſtones on the uncultivated ſoil, was here carefully plucked up, and ſpread over the whole plantation as a manure, or perhaps to preſerve it in ſome meaſure from the parching beams of the ſun. It ſhould ſeem from theſe circumſtances that the natives are not altogether ignorant of rural œconomy, and till the ground at a great expence of time and labour. At a little diſtance from theſe fields we met with two huts, conſtructed exactly like that which I have mentioned page 569, but much ſmaller. The entrance was ſtopped up with a great quantity of ſmall bruſhwood, and we at firſt imagined that we heard the voices of women within, but after liſtening for ſome time we heard nothing farther to confirm us in this belief. We rambled from thence to the top of a hillock covered with ſhrubberies, which we found to conſiſt of nothing but a ſpecies of *mimoſa*, that ſcarcely attained the height of eight feet, and afforded us very little ſhelter from the

the ſun. Here we reſted a while, and then deſcended by a different route into another ſet of fields, which were treated in the ſame manner as the reſt. None of them had any ſort of encloſures, though the hiſtorians of Roggewein's voyage, who ſeem to have conſulted fancy more than truth, make mention of them. The encreaſing heat of the day had entirely exhauſted us, when we had ſtill a conſiderable way to make down to the ſea-ſide. Fortunately we paſſed by a native who was at work, gathering potatoes in one of the fields. We complained of great thirſt to him, upon which, though he was on old man, he immediately ran to a large plantation of ſugar-canes, and brought us a great load of the beſt and juicieſt on his back. We made him ſome preſents in return for them, cut them into walking-ſticks, and, as we went along, gradually peeled and ſucked them, finding their juice extremely refreſhing. 1774. MARCH.

At our return to the landing-place we found captain Cook ſtill occupied in trading with the inhabitants, who brought him ſome fowls ready dreſſed, and ſome matted baſkets full of ſweet potatoes, but ſometimes deceived him by filling the baſket with ſtones, and only laying a few potatoes at the top. The moſt valuable article of trade on our part were empty coco-nut ſhells, which we had received at the Society and Friendly Iſlands; but they were not current, unleſs the hole in them was very ſmall, or unleſs they had a cover. The Taheitian and European cloths

1774. MARCH. were valued in the next degree according to the ſize of the pieces; and iron-ware bore an inferior price. The greateſt part of the natives who traded with us inſtantly ran off with the cloth, nut-ſhell, or the nail which had been given in exchange for their potatoes, as if they were apprehenſive that we might repent of our bargain, even though they dealt honeſtly with us. Some among them were bold enough to run off with what they had received, as the price of their proviſions, before they had delivered up the goods for which we had bargained. From ſuch circumſtances the deplorable condition of the natives became more and more conſpicuous. The ſcarcity of cloth among them was extremely great, moſt of the people being forced to go naked; but this did not prevent their ſelling what little cloth they had in exchange for that of Taheitee. The deſire of poſſeſſing this cloth prompted them to expoſe to ſale ſeveral articles which perhaps they would not have parted with ſo eaſily under other circumſtances. Among theſe were their different caps or head-dreſſes, their necklaces, ornaments for the ear, and ſeveral human figures, made of narrow pieces of wood about eighteen inches or two feet long, and wrought in a much neater and more proportionate manner than we could have expected, after ſeeing the rude ſculpture of the ſtatues. They were made to repreſent perſons of both ſexes; the features were not very pleaſing, and the whole figure was much too long to be natural; however, there was ſomething cha-

racteriſtic

racteriſtic in them, which ſhewed a taſte for the arts. The wood of which they were made was finely poliſhed, cloſe-grained, and of a dark-brown, like that of the caſuarina. But as we had not yet ſeen this tree growing here, we eagerly expected the return of our party, hoping they would make ſome diſcoveries to explain this circumſtance. Mahine was moſt pleaſed with theſe carved human figures, the workman of which much excelled thoſe of the *e Tees* in his country, and he purchaſed ſeveral of them, aſſuring us they would be greatly valued at Taheitee. As he took great pains to collect theſe curioſities, he once met with a figure of a woman's hand, carved of a yellowiſh wood, nearly of the natural ſize. Upon examination, its fingers were all bent upwards, as they are in the action of dancing at Taheitee, and its nails were repreſented very long, extending at leaſt three fourths of an inch beyond the fingers' end. The wood of which it was made was the rare perfume-wood of Taheitee, with the chips of which they communicate fragrance to their oils. We had neither ſeen this wood growing, nor obſerved the cuſtom of wearing long nails at this iſland, and therefore were at a loſs to conceive how this piece of well-executed carving could be met with there; we hoped, however, to unravel this circumſtance alſo at the return of our party. Mahine afterwards preſented this piece to my father, who has in his turn made a preſent of it to the Britiſh Muſeum. Mahine was likewiſe very eager

1774. MARCH.

to

1774. MARCH. to collect as many feathered caps as he could meet with, eſpecially thoſe which had the feathers of a man of war bird, that bird being very ſcarce about Taheitee, and much valued on account of its gloſſy black colour.

Whilſt captain Cook continued in the cove, another trade for potatoes was carried on at the watering-place. Here the deſire of poſſeſſing our goods, made ſome of the natives guilty of a crime againſt their own countryman. A field of ſweet potatoes was ſituated cloſe to the well, and a conſiderable number of people of different ages and ſizes, buſied themſelves in digging them up, and bringing them for ſale to our people. They had carried on this occupation for ſome hours, when another native arrived, who was in a vehement paſſion with them, and drove them all away, remaining alone to dig the roots up himſelf. He was the owner of the field, whom the reſt had robbed of the fruits of his labour, finding an eaſy method to diſpoſe of their ſtolen goods. It is not to be doubted that theſe offences againſt the laws of civil ſociety, are ſometimes committed even at the Society Iſles, becauſe the inhabitants have often told us, that they inflicted a capital puniſhment upon ſuch offenders; but we never ſaw any inſtances of it there. On this occaſion at Eaſter Iſland, we did not obſerve that they annexed any penalty to the crime, though we ſaw it committed. Perhaps this is owing to the different degree of civilization of thoſe two cogeneric tribes.

We

We went on board at noon, where we dined on ſome fowls and potatoes, which we found delicious after the fatigues of the morning. We obſerved a few natives on board, who had ventured to ſwim off, though the ſhip lay about three quarters of a mile from the ſhore. They expreſſed the moſt unbounded admiration at every thing they ſaw, and every one of them meaſured the whole length of the veſſel from head to ſtern, with his extended arms; ſuch a great quantity of timber of ſo ſtupendous a ſize, being altogether incomprehenſible to people whoſe canoes were patched of many ſmall bits of wood. Among them was one woman, who had arrived on board in the ſame manner, and carried on a particular traffic of her own. She viſited ſeveral of the inferior officers, and then addreſſed herſelf to the ſailors, emulating the famous exploits of Meſſalina *. A few Engliſh rags, and ſome pieces of Taheitee cloth, were the ſpoils which ſhe carried away with her, being fetched off by a man in the patched canoe, which was perhaps the only one in the iſland. Another of her country-women had viſited our ſhip the day before, and been equally unbounded in her revels. It remained a doubt with us, whether we ſhould moſt admire their ſucceſs among a ſickly crew, exhauſted by the long continuance of a noxious diet, or their own ſpirit and inſatiate temper. 1774. MARCH.

* See Plin. Hiſt. Nat. lib. x. c. 63. Tacit. Annal. lib. xi. Juvenal. Sat. vi. 129.

——laſſata viris, nec ſatiata receſſit.

In

1774. MARCH. In the afternoon we returned to the ſhore again, and I walked on the hills to the ſouthward, which roſe with a very eaſy ſlope. Here I met with a large plantation of bananas, beyond which I found ſome remains of a ſtone wall, which was perhaps once the baſe of a ſtatue. From thence I croſſed ſome fields, where I ſaw a family of the natives at work, taking potatoes out of the ground. I walked up to their hut, which was one of the ſmalleſt I had yet ſeen, and as they came about me, I ſat down among them. Their whole number amounted to ſix or ſeven perſons, one of whom was a woman, and two were young boys. They preſented me with ſome ſugar-canes, and in return, I made them a preſent of a ſmall piece of Taheitee cloth, which they immediately wrapped about the head. They did not expreſs that great curioſity which we had obſerved among the people of the Society Iſles, but ſoon returned to their former occupation, in which all were employed without exception. Some of them had head-dreſſes made of feathers, which they readily offered to exchange for pieces of cloth no bigger than a handkerchief. About the hut I perceived a few fowls, the only ones which I had ſeen alive on the iſland. Their behaviour towards me was wholly inoffenſive, agreeably to the general character of the nations in the South Sea. From the expreſſions of the hiſtorians of Roggewein's voyage, it ſhould ſeem, that the Dutch very wantonly fired upon the natives, who gave

no

no provocation, and killed a conſiderable number of them, intimidating the reſt to a great degree. It is probable, that the terror with which they looked upon the deſtructive arms of Europeans at that time, and during the late viſit of the Spaniards, was revived among them at our appearance, and had an influence on their general timid behaviour towards us; but it is not to be doubted, at the ſame time, that there is a mildneſs, fellow-feeling, and good-nature in their diſpoſition, which naturally prompts them to treat their viſitors kindly, and even hoſpitably, as far as their wretched country will permit. 1774. MARCH.

I returned the ſame way by which I came, and ſoon after went on board the ſhip with captain Cook. About nine o'clock a muſket was fired on ſhore, as a ſignal for a boat, and the pinnace being ſent off, returned ſoon after with our party, who had been to examine the iſland. My father being more fatigued than any body elſe, on account of his long rheumatic complaint, was obliged to go to bed immediately; but the other gentlemen ſupped with us, on a few fowls which we had purchaſed on ſhore, and gave us ſome account of their travels. As it will be moſt agreeable to ſee it in connection, I ſhall here inſert that which I have extracted from my father's journal.

"Immediately after landing, we walked directly inland or acroſs the country, under the higheſt hill which lies towards the ſouth, till we came to the other ſide of the iſland.

1774. MARCH. About an hundred natives, and among them four or five women, accompanied us on our march, and ſold us a quantity of potatoes and a few fowls, which we added to our ſtock of proviſions. We found the whole country ſtrewed with ſtones of various ſizes, of a cavernous or ſpongy texture, and of a black, brown, or reddiſh colour, which had indubitable marks of having been in a volcanic fire. The paths through this rugged ground are in ſome meaſure cleared of the ſtones, but ſo very narrow, that we were obliged to turn our toes inwards, at which the natives are perfectly expert, and to ſet one foot exactly before the other. This mode of walking was exceſſively fatiguing to us who were not uſed to it, ſo that we continually hurt our feet or ſtumbled. On both ſides the ground was covered with a thin perennial Jamaica-graſs, *(paſpalum,)* which grew in bunches or tufts, and was ſo ſlippery that we could not walk on it. We reached the eaſt ſide of the iſland, near a range of ſeven pillars or ſtatues, of which only four remained ſtanding, and one of them had loſt its cap. They ſtood on a common pedeſtal, like thoſe which we had ſeen on the other ſide, and its ſtones were ſquare and fitted exactly in the ſame manner. Though the ſtone of which the ſtatue itſelf is formed ſeems to be ſoft enough, being nothing but the red *tufa* which covers the whole iſland, yet it was incomprehenſible to me how ſuch great maſſes could be formed by a ſet of people among whom we

we ſaw no tools; or raiſed and erected by them without machinery. The general appellation of this range was *Hanga* TEBÒW; hanga being the word which they prefix to every range. The names of the ſtatues were *Ko*-Tomoaï*, *Ko-Tomoèeree*, *Ko-Hòo-oo*, *Morahèena*, *Oomarèeva*, *Weenâboo*, *Weenapè*. 1774. MARCH.

"From hence we continued our march to the northward along the ſea, having a precipice on our right. The ground was the ſame ferrugineous *tufa* for a conſiderable way, covered with ſmall fragments; but after ſome time we came to a ſpot which was a ſingle coherent rock or lump of black melted lava, which appeared to contain ſome iron. There was no ſoil, graſs, or plant whatſoever upon it. Beyond it we paſſed through a number of plantations of bananas, potatoes, and yams, and one of eddoes. The graſs between the ſtones was plucked up and ſpread on the land, to ſcreen it from the ſun, to keep the moiſture of the rain in it, and at laſt to manure it.

"The natives continued to offer ſome potatoes for ſale ready dreſſed, and, at a hut where we halted, they ſold us ſome fiſh. Some of them carried arms, which were no other than the thin ſticks we had ſeen before, and which were headed with a black vitreous lava, carefully wrapped in a ſmall piece of cloth. Only one of them had a battle-axe, reſembling that of the New Zeelanders, though much ſhorter. It had a head carved on each ſide, and a ſmall

* *Ko* is the article, as at New Zeeland and in the Friendly Iſles.

1774. MARCH. round portion of the black glaſs above-mentioned inſtead of eyes. They had likewiſe ſome ſmall crooked human figures made of wood, of which we could not learn the uſe or ſignification; we did not, however, think that our ignorance on this ſubject intitled us to call them idols, which is too commonly the judgment paſſed upon the works of art of unknown nations.

"After leaving this hut we ſtill advanced to the northward, without ſeeing any new objects. A man and a woman met us from ſome neighbouring houſes, each with a large matted bag, of very neat workmanſhip, filled with hot potatoes, and placed themſelves by the ſide of the path where we were to paſs. As we came on, the man preſented each of us with ſome of the roots, and having diſtributed a portion to the whole party, he ran with amazing ſwiftneſs to the head of our file to ſhare out the reſt, till he had given away the whole. He received a large piece of cloth from me, which was the only requital for an inſtance of hoſpitality, of which I never ſaw the like even at Taheitee. Soon after the natives told us their *aree*, or *hareekee*, or king was coming towards us. Several men came on before him, and diſtributed ſugar-canes to us all in ſign of friendſhip, at the ſame time pronouncing the word *heeo* *, which ſignifies friend. We now ſaw the king ſtanding on a hill, and walked up to him, Mr. Pickerſgill and myſelf making him

* *Hòa* at the Society Iſles; *Wòa* at the Friendly Iſles.

ſome

ſome preſents. We aſked for his name, which he told us was KO-TOHEETAI, adding that he was *aree* or king. We were deſirous of knowing whether he was only the chief of a diſtrict, or of the whole iſland; upon which he ſpread out his arms, as it were to include the whole iſland, and ſaid *Waihu*. To ſhew that we underſtood him, we laid our hands on his breaſt, and, calling him by name, added his title, king of Waihu, at which he expreſſed very great ſatisfaction, and converſed a great deal with his people on that ſubject. He was a middle-aged man, rather tall; his face and whole body ſtrongly punctured. He wore a piece of cloth made of the mulberry bark, quilted with threads of graſs, and ſtained yellow with turmerick; and on his head he had a cap of long ſhining black feathers, which might be called a diadem. We did not perceive any great degree of homage or attention paid to him by the people; and indeed in ſo poor a country there ſeems to be nothing which he could have reſerved for himſelf, without a manifeſt incroachment on the natural rights of mankind, which might have produced dangerous effects. When we wanted to continue our march he ſeemed to diſlike it, and deſired us to return, offering to accompany us; but ſeeing our officer determined to proceed at all events he deſiſted, and went with us. 1774. MARCH.

"We marched to an elevated ſpot, and ſtopped a little while to take ſome refreſhments, and to give Mr. Hodges time to draw ſome of the monuments, near one of which we

1774. MARCH. we found an entire ſkeleton of a man. A good view of ſome of theſe monuments is inſerted in captain Cook's account of this voyage. Our people ſat down on the ground, and laid their bundles of proviſion before them, whilſt the offiers, and other gentlemen with myſelf, converſed with the natives. One of our ſailors, who carried my plant-bag, in which were a few nails, &c. being leſs careful of his bundle than the reſt, a native ſnatched it up and ran off with it. None of us ſaw it, except lieutenant Edgecumb, who immediately fired his muſket, loaded with ſmall ſhot, at the thief, and thus gave the alarm to us all. The native being wounded threw down the bag, which our people recovered, but he fell ſoon after; his countrymen took him up, and fled to a little diſtance, till we beckoned to them to return, which almoſt all of them did. Though this was the only inſtance of firing at a native during our ſtay at Eaſter Iſland, yet it is to be lamented that Europeans too often aſſume the power of inflicting puniſhments on people who are utterly unacquainted with their laws.

"From this ſpot we continued our march a good way inland, and were conducted to a deep well, which appeared to have been formed by art, and contained good freſh water, though ſomewhat troubled. We all drank heartily of it, and then went on, paſſing by ſeveral large ſtatues, which had been overturned, till we came in ſight of the two hummocks, near which we had perceived the greateſt number of pillars

pillars or ſtatues, from the ſhip, on the 12th. We mounted on an eminence in the neighbourhood, from whence we beheld the ſea on both ſides of the iſland, acroſs a plain which we had likewiſe diſcovered from the ſhip at that time. We viewed the whole eaſtern coaſt, and its numerous pillars, and were convinced that there was no bay or harbour on that ſide of the iſland. With this information we returned back to a large ſtatue, which the natives called *Mangototo*, and in the ſhade of which we dined. In its neighbourhood we met with another huge ſtatue, which lay overturned; it was twenty-ſeven feet long, and nine feet in diameter, exceeding in magnitude every other pillar which we had ſeen on the iſland. 1774. MARCH.

"In returning, we ſtopped once more at the well, and quenched our thirſt, which the raging heat of the ſun, reverberated from barren rocks, had excited. From thence we directed our march ſomething nearer the ridge of hills which run along the middle of the iſland, but found the path more rugged and fatiguing than ever, the country being ſtrewed with volcanic cinders, and deſolate all round us, though we found many remaining proofs of its having been formerly cultivated. I now felt how much I had been weakened by the long continuance of the rheumatiſm, which had crippled all my limbs, and was hardly able to keep up with the reſt, though I had formerly, upon ſimilar occaſions, been indefatigable. The natives ſeeing us ſtrike into

1774. MARCH. into a difficult path had all left us, except one man and a little boy. Finding that our officers with their party, went too much out of their way, by miſtaking the direction of our ſhip, I left them; and with Dr. Sparrman, a ſailor, and the two natives, purſued the neareſt path, which the latter had plainly pointed out. The man ſeeing me very faint, offered me his hand, and walking on the looſe ſtones by the ſide of the path, with amazing dexterity ſupported me for a conſiderable way; the little boy going before, and picking up the ſtones which obſtructed the path. By reſting ſeveral times, we were at laſt enabled to reach the ſummit of the hill, from whence we ſaw the ſea to the weſt, and the ſhip at anchor. The hill was covered with a ſhrubbery of the *mimoſa*, which grew here to the height of eight or nine feet, and ſome of whoſe ſtems near the root, were about the thickneſs of a man's thigh. We found another well hereabouts, of which the water was infected with a putrid taſte, and the ſmell of *hepar ſulphuris*, but of which we drank, notwithſtanding its nauſeouſneſs. The ſun ſet very ſoon after we had left this well; ſo that we continued our walk downwards, for more than two hours entirely in the dark, during which my Indian's aſſiſtance was particularly valuable to me. I waited for Mr. Pickerſgill and the reſt of the party, having gained near three miles upon them, and arrived ſafely at the ſea-ſide with them, after walking at the loweſt computation, at leaſt five and twenty miles on the moſt

deteſtable

deteſtable roads, where not a ſingle tree appeared to give us ſhelter from the ſcorching ſun. I rewarded my friendly conductors with all the Taheitee cloth, and iron ware, which I had about me, and arrived ſafely on board with the party." 1774. MARCH.

From this narrative it is evident, that the moſt diligent enquiries on our part, have not been ſufficient to throw a clear light on the ſurpriſing objects which ſtruck our eyes in this iſland. We may however, attempt to account for thoſe gigantic monuments, of which great numbers exiſt in every part; for as they are ſo diſproportionate to the preſent ſtrength of the nation, it is moſt reaſonable to look upon them as the remains of better times. The niceſt calculations which we could make, never brought the number of inhabitants in this iſland beyond ſeven hundred *, who, deſtitute of tools, of ſhelter, and clothing, are obliged to ſpend all their time in providing food to ſupport their precarious exiſtence. It is obvious that they are too much occupied with their wants, to think of forming ſtatues, which would coſt them ages to finiſh, and require their united ſtrength to erect. Accordingly, we did not ſee a ſingle inſtrument among them on all our excurſions, which

* The Spaniards in the S. Lorenzo, and frigate Roſalia, make the population of Eaſter Iſland amount to between two and three thouſand; but it may be doubted whether they examined the interior country, as well as our people. See Mr. Dalrymple's Letter to Dr. Hawkeſworth.

1774. MARCH. could have been of the leaſt uſe in maſonry or ſculpture. We neither met with any quarries, where they had recently dug the materials, nor with unfiniſhed ſtatues which we might have conſidered as the work of the preſent race. It is therefore probable, that theſe people were formerly more numerous, more opulent and happy, when they could ſpare ſufficient time to flatter the vanity of their princes, by perpetuating their name by laſting monuments. The remains of plantations found on the ſummits of the hills, give ſtrength and ſupport to this conjecture. It is not in our power to determine by what various accidents a nation ſo flouriſhing, could be reduced in number, and degraded to its preſent indigence. But we are well convinced that many cauſes may produce this effect, and that the devaſtation which a volcano might make, is alone ſufficient to heap a load of miſeries on a people confined to ſo ſmall a ſpace. In fact, this iſland, which may perhaps, in remote ages, have been produced by a volcano, ſince all its minerals are merely volcanic, has at leaſt in all likelihood been deſtroyed by its fire. All kinds of trees and plants, all domeſtic animals, nay a great part of the nation itſelf may have periſhed in the dreadful convulſion of nature: hunger and miſery muſt have been but too powerful enemies to thoſe who eſcaped the fire. We cannot well account for thoſe little carved images which we ſaw among the natives, and the repreſentation of a dancing woman's hand,

hand, which, as I have mentioned above, are made of wood, at preſent not to be met with upon the iſland. The only idea which offers itſelf, is that they were made long ago, and have been ſaved by accident or predilection, at the general cataſtrophe which ſeems to have happened. All the women whom we ſaw in different parts of the iſland, did not amount to thirty, though our people croſſed it almoſt from one end to the other, without ſeeing the leaſt probability that the women had retired to any ſecluded part. If there are really no more than thirty or forty women, among ſix or ſeven hundred men, the whole nation is in a fair way of becoming entirely extinct in a ſhort ſpace of time, unleſs all our phyſical principles on the plurality of huſbands are erroneous. The greater part of the women whom we ſaw gave us no reaſon to ſuppoſe that they were accuſtomed to a ſingle partner; on the contrary, they ſeemed habitually to have arrived at the ſpirit of Meſſalina, or of Cleopatra. But this diſproportion is ſuch a ſingular phænomenon in human nature, that we cannot without difficulty give credit to it, and would willingly lay hold of any argument which, though incumbered with difficulties, might reſtore the proportion between the ſexes. It is true our party did not ſee any valley or ſecluded glen, to which the women might have confined themſelves during our ſtay; but I muſt remind the 1774. MARCH.

1774. MARCH. reader of thoſe caverns mentioned before, to which the natives always refuſed to admit us. The caverns of Iceland are ſpacious enough to contain ſeveral thouſand inhabitants; and nothing is more probable than that, in a ſimilar volcanic country, ſuch caverns may afford room for a few hundreds. What reaſons the Eaſter Iſlanders may have to be more jealous of their women than the Taheitians, we know not; but we are acquainted with the outrageous and wanton behaviour of the ſailor, wherever he has ſo great a ſuperiority over the Indian, as the Dutch and Spaniards muſt have had over the people of Eaſter Iſland. The principal objection againſt this ſuppoſition is, however, the ſmall number of children which we ſaw, there being no reaſon to ſeclude them from our eyes, whatever might be thought neceſſary with regard to the women. In ſhort, this matter muſt remain unaſcertained, and if, in fact, the number of women is inconſiderable, it muſt have been diminiſhed by ſome extraordinary accident, which none but the natives could have explained; but, in all our doubts, our ignorance of their language prevented us from acquiring any information.

The next morning we ſent a boat aſhore to take in ſome water, and the weather continuing calm, another went off to trade with the natives in order to encreaſe our little ſtock of potatoes. One of the natives likewiſe plied between the

ſhip

ſhip and the ſhore, bringing off potatoes and bananas in the patched canoe. In the mean while a ſmart ſhower falling on board the ſhip, enabled our people to collect a quantity of freſh water in the awnings and ſails of the ſhip, which were ſpread to catch it. Another boat went off to the ſhore in the afternoon, but towards evening a faint breeze ſpringing up, the ſhip fired a gun, in conſequence of which the boat came on board, and we ſailed N. W. by W. from Eaſter Iſland. 1774. MARCH.

We had been greatly diſappointed in the expectation which we had formed of this iſland, as a place of refreſhment. The only article of any importance was their ſweet potatoes; but after we had regularly ſhared out all we had purchaſed, the common people had only a few ſcanty meals of them. As to the bananas, yams, and ſugar-canes which we had bought, they were in ſuch inconſiderable quantities, that they ſcarce deſerve to be mentioned. All the fowls which we had obtained, and which, in general, were of a very ſmall breed, did not amount to fifty; and even the quantity of water which we had filled was inconſiderable and ill taſted. However, this ſmall ſupply was ſo ſeaſonable, that it preſerved us from the too violent attacks of the ſcurvy and bilious diſorders, till we could reach a better place of refreſhment. Indeed, when I conſider the wretched ſituation of the inhabitants, I am ſurpriſed that they

parted

1774. MARCH. parted with a quantity of proviſions to us, of which the cultivation muſt have coſt them great pains and labour. The barren refractory ſoil of their iſland, the ſcarcity of domeſtic animals, and the want of boats and proper materials for fiſhing, all concur to render their means of ſubſiſtence extremely difficult and precarious. Yet the deſire of poſſeſſing the new toys and curioſities which ſtrangers bring among them, hurried them away, and prevented their reflecting on the urgency of their own moſt natural and unavoidable wants. In this, as in numberleſs other circumſtances, they agree with the tribes who inhabit New Zeeland, the Friendly and the Society Iſlands, and who ſeem to have had one common origin with them. Their features are very ſimilar, ſo that the general character may eaſily be diſtinguiſhed. Their colour, a yellowiſh brown, moſt like the hue of the New Zeelanders; their art of puncturing, the uſe of the mulberry-bark for clothing, the predilection for red paint and red dreſſes, the ſhape and workmanſhip of their clubs, the mode of dreſſing their victuals, all form a ſtrong reſemblance to the natives of the iſlands above mentioned. We may add to theſe, the ſimplicity of their languages, that of Eaſter Iſland being a dialect which, in many reſpects, reſembles that of New Zeeland, eſpecially in the harſhneſs of pronunciation and the uſe of gutturals, and yet, in other inſtances, partakes of that

of

of Taheitee. The monarchical government likewiſe ſtrengthens the affinity between the Eaſter Iſlanders and the tropical tribes, its prerogatives being only varied according to the different degrees of fertility of the iſlands, and the opulence or luxury of the people. Eaſter Iſland, or, as the natives call it, WAIHU, is ſo very barren, that the whole number of plants growing upon it does not exceed twenty ſpecies, of which far the greater part is cultivated*; though the ſpace which the plantations occupy is inconſiderable, compared with that which lies waſte. The ſoil is altogether ſtoney, and parched by the ſun, and water is ſo ſcarce, that the inhabitants drink it out of wells which have a ſtrong admixture of brine; nay, ſome of our people really ſaw them drink of the ſea-water when they were thirſty. Their habit of body muſt, in ſome meaſure, be influenced by theſe circumſtances; they are meagre, and their muſcles hard and rigid; they live very frugally, and, in general, go almoſt wholly naked, only covering the head, which is the moſt ſenſible of heat, with feathered caps, and puncturing or daubing the reſt with colours. Their ideas of decency are, of courſe, very different from thoſe of nations who are accuſtomed to clothing. They cut ſhort their hair and beards 1774. MARCH.

* The Spaniards mention white calabaſhes, *(pompions,)* among the vegetable productions of this iſland; but we did not ſee any.—See Mr. Dalrymple's judicious letter to Dr. Hawkeſworth.

from

1774. MARCH. from motives of cleanlineſs, like the people of Tonga-Tabboo, but fortunately ſeemed to be leſs ſubject to leprous complaints. It is eaſy to conclude that the king of ſuch a people cannot have great and conſpicuous advantages over the commonalty, nor did our party obſerve any thing of that kind. The religion of the Eaſter Iſlanders is ſtill wholly unknown to us, becauſe abſtract ideas are not to be acquired in ſo ſhort a time as our ſtay. The ſtatues, which are erected in honour of their kings, have a great affinity to the wooden figures, called TEE, on the chief's maraïs or burying-places at Taheitee; but we could not poſſibly conſider them as idols, though Roggewein's people would paſs them for ſuch upon us. The fires which the Dutch interpret as ſacrifices, were only made uſe of by the natives to dreſs their meals; and though the Spaniards ſuſpected them to be a kind of ſuperſtition, they were, perhaps, equally miſtaken, becauſe the ſcarcity of fuel obliged the inhabitants to be careful of it, and to prevent their proviſions being uncovered after they had once been put under ground with heated ſtones.

We are unacquainted with the amuſements of the people of Eaſter Iſland, having never ſeen them engaged in any kind of diverſion, nor taken notice of a ſingle muſical inſtrument among them. They cannot, however, be entire ſtrangers to amuſements, ſince Maròo-wahai, who ſlept on board,

board, talked a great deal of dancing, as ſoon as we had quieted his fears with reſpect to the ſafety of his perſon. The diſpoſition of theſe people is far from being warlike; their numbers are too inconſiderable, and their poverty too general, to create civil diſturbances amongſt them. It is equally improbable that they have foreign wars, ſince hitherto we know of no iſland near enough to admit of an intercourſe between the inhabitants; neither could we obtain any intelligence from thoſe of Eaſter Iſland upon the ſubject. This being premiſed, it is extraordinary that they ſhould have different kinds of offenſive weapons, and eſpecially ſuch as reſemble thoſe of the New Zeelanders; and we muſt add this circumſtance to ſeveral others, which are inexplicable to us in their kind. 1774. MARCH.

Upon the whole, ſuppoſing Eaſter Iſland to have undergone a late misfortune from volcanic fires, its inhabitants are more to be pitied than any leſs civilized ſociety, being acquainted with a number of conveniencies, comforts, and luxuries of life, which they formerly poſſeſſed, and of which the remembrance muſt embitter the loſs. Mahine frequently lamented their unhappy ſituation, and ſeemed to feel for them more than he had done for the New Zeelanders, becauſe he found them much more deſtitute. He added another ſtick to the bundle which compoſed his journal, and remembered Eaſter Iſland with this obſervation, *tàta maïtaï, whennùa èeno*, that the people were good, but the iſland very

1774. MARCH. bad; whereas at New Zeeland he had found more fault with the natives than the country. His feelings were always warm from the heart, which education had filled with real philanthropy; they were likewiſe juſt, in general, becauſe his ſenſes were ſound and acute, and his underſtanding, though uncultivated, was free from many prejudices.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

ERRATA in VOL. I.

P. 13. l. laſt,	*for*	Ribiera,	*read*	Ribeira.
32. l. 1. [margin]		1778,		1772.
48. l. 4.		drying,		dying.
57. l. 16.		vacaneum,		ſupervacaneum.
88. l. 10.		at the ſame,		at the ſame time.
90. l. antepenult,		as was,		as it was.
119. l. 9.		Ferro,		Faroe.
171. l. 21.		ſamily,		family.
174. l. 4. and 10.		muſquets,		muſkets.
176. l. laſt,		multipliciamini,		multiplicamini.
178. l. 7.		quales,		qualis.
207. l. 20.		geens,		greens.
215. l. 8.		ſcoop-net,		hoop-net.
253. l. 10.		O-Taheite,		O-Taheitee.
308. l. 11.		Juan de Langara y Huarte,		Domingo Buenechea.